

The Bible For Dummies

A Final Testament

BOOK 1

THE BIBLE

The Greek word **biblion** means "book" or "collection of writings".

The **biblion** called the "Bible" is a collection of scrolls.

They say the scrolls were written between **1400 BC** and **100 AD**.

They say the scrolls were written in the main by scribes and seers of the Jewish nation, but four scrolls were written by non-Jews.

The Jew's nation is said to have come from Abraham and Sarah.

They were a couple of Chaldean drop-outs.

They lived a couple of thousand years before the birth of their most famous descendant, the man from Nazareth, Jesus Christ.

Remove the first eleven chapters of the Bible, and what's left is the two thousand years of Hebrew history from Abraham to the ruin of the nation peopled by his offspring in **70 AD**.

Hebrews who survived were scattered into all nations.

It's possible, though not certain, the writings began somewhere near the five hundredth anniversary of Abraham's death.

It's also possible that written reports of Hebrew history didn't show up until one hundred or more years later, but what's a century to people living in the 21st century, four thousand years after Abraham died?

If written reports did begin five hundred years after Abraham died, it would've been about the time Jews were released from their bondage to Egypt. Once four hundred years of slaving for the Egyptians passed, Abraham's people were free again as their God had promised.

While in Egypt, Abraham's offspring swelled from seventy souls into the mini-multitude liberated by Moses about **1500 BC**.

The Israelites were removed from Egypt and resettled in their very own conquered land, formerly known as Canaan.

Abraham's God ruled this land.

Abraham's children were his subjects.

It was the first manifestation of the Kingdom of God on Earth.

It's claimed the same kingdom will be seen again.

It's claimed the next time it shows up it'll have the authority, power, and will to take the whole planet.

The first promise in the Bible was sealed by animal sacrifice.

The promise is found in a covenant God made with Adam and Eve.

Adam and Eve were the first humans inserted into this creation.

Adam and Eve were also this creation's first rebels.

God's covenant provided Adam and Eve with the means to break away from the pitiful state their rebellion had brought on themselves, as well as all their future sons and daughters.

Before the redemption was achieved, however, humankind would know the rigors of illness, aging, and death.

Cain, their first son, gave his parents nothing but sorrow, a foretaste of the anguish many parents would feel throughout time.

Time, as found in the first chapters of **Genesis**, isn't much more than a downward march, the passing record of the failure of the descendants of Adam and Eve. Here and there an exception is encountered, but until Abraham showed up, things weren't looking good.

The Bible really starts with Abraham's appearance, for it's here that readers come face to face with true religion, redemption, and reward.

The first eleven chapters of **Genesis** are introduction, a path leading to the true genesis of our race, to its true beginning and its relationship to its God. The rest of the Bible yields an history of the Hebrew nation from Abraham's years and on to the glorification of Abraham's promised son, Jesus, the Christ. It was the life, death, resurrection, and glory of this "seed of the woman" God used to accomplish the promise to reverse the effects of the first human rebellion.

He's the Christ, an anointed one.
He's the Great King.
He's the son of God.
He's the son of Abraham.
He's the son covenanted to David and all humankind.
He's the second Adam, firstborn of humanity's chosen children.
He's the number one son to be born from the dead.
He's the beginning.
He's the end.
He's the fulfillment of prophecy after prophecy.
He's all this and more.
He's a key God turned to unlock a door through which a promise made to Abraham could also become available to all humans.

The twenty seven books known as the "new testament" paint pictures of the birth, life, death, resurrection and glorification of God's anointed one, his Christ, the son promised to Abraham.

These books also portray the lives of Christ's apostles (messengers).

The apostles became witnesses, having seen the fulfillment of certain significant events in God's plan and purpose with humanity.

They wrote of a rebirth of the knowledge of truth.

They also wrote of opposition, ridicule, and death while in the custody of Jewish authorities and their political cronies.

The apostles witnessed that Israel's God really did accomplish a most crucial part of his plan: manifestation of the promised son.

They witnessed that Israel's God really did put in play a way by which non-Hebrews could also become partakers in his divine purpose, a way by which non-Hebrews could also share in Abraham's covenant.

The new testament scrolls were acted out in less than a century, but there are prophecies in the new testament, along with those still waiting to be fulfilled from the old, which peer two thousand years forward to a day when life on Earth becomes so gross that the only thing able to stop corruption of all the globe is the intervention of Israel's God. The prime feature of this intervention is the return of the promised son. Assisted by his raised and revived brothers and sisters, the son of God will fulfill all the remaining stipulations of his Father's covenant.

The returned Christ will establish a kingdom that will govern until the end of the Great Age, until all who lived under the reign of his realm are judged and given their due.

The royal family ruling Earth will be brothers and sisters of Christ.

They'll be sons and daughters of God.

They'll own divine natures.

They'll be immortal.

They'll display divine power.

They'll proceed in accord with divine will.
They'll be elemental members of a new race.
They'll be in all ways involved with the energy and force that created
and sustains their new world order, their new Earth.

The population of the kingdom will be the fortunate few who survived
the bloodshed and chaos that erupted at the return of Christ.

They'll also be chosen ones, since it'll only be certain members of the
human race who'll experience the new Eden.

The ones who champion the rule of the kingdom will eventually inherit
divine natures.

The ones who rebel will eventually go to be with the remainder of the
human race in eternal oblivion.

Some may say, "That's not what the Bible is about at all!"
Are they sure?
Have they looked for themselves?

This book is for people who do look before claiming to know.
Those having evidence the Bible concerns something other than what
was mentioned above are invited to step up and show their stuff.
If not, perhaps they'll do everyone a favor and zip their lips.

What the Bible is all about.

There are only six questions that can be asked about the Bible.
There are only six questions that can be asked about anything.
These questions are . . .

What? When? Where? Who? How? Why?

Ask a question that can't also be asked by one of these six.
Give up yet?

What?

Most people know the Bible came from Hebrew and Greek scrolls.
Most people are unaware this is important to keep in mind.
Most people don't retain it in their brains, and they forget the books
they think of as Bibles are only translations, not originals.
Good translations are few, and many are very, very bad.
It's left to readers to do what they can to predetermine the value of
translations they read. Bad translations, especially those imagined to be
reliable and user-friendly, may generate results worse than if no version
of the Bible was read at all.

There's one thing that must be understood about the Bible.
The old and new testaments aren't two different books.
They're the first and second parts of a single book.

Groundwork is laid in the old testament.
It's the foundation on which disciples are urged to build their faith.
It also predicted specific things would happen at specific times.
Many predictions came to pass before old testament days were done.
Predictions which didn't occur were left on hold.

In new testament days, many of the predictions on hold from the old were fulfilled. Additional predictions found in the new testament, along with a few still not accomplished from the old, could happen any time.

That, folks, is the Bible.
There's no great mystery about it.
There's no good reason for two groups of fanatics (one called "Jews", the other "Christians") to pledge allegiance to one part of the book over the next.
There's no good reason for them to concoct two completely different beliefs, each based on one part of the book only.
There's no good reason for them to worship two completely different gods, both of which are unlike the true God of the Bible.
Anyone who believes either cult is believing in fantasies formed from half-truths. Fantasies formed from the whole truth are bad enough!

Many old testament books were written in Hebrew.
Books written just before, during, and after the Jews returned from Babylon to their homeland are more Aramaic than Hebrew.
How unusual would it be for a language to drop some of its uniqueness if the people who spoke it were ripped from their roots like radishes?
And if they were forced to watch their whole world being wasted?
And if they were herded away as cattle, and their children and grand-children languished for years in the land of their heathen captors?
The Jews suffered it all.
There was something about these Hebrews, though.
They possessed an inner strength of purpose.
They were fiercely loyal to their own.
They knew how to survive, quickly seeing ways to make a buck.
They did well in high-speed, cutting-edge, state-of-the-art Babylon.
Their descendants still do well in present-day Babylons.

This shouldn't be a surprise.
Their God promised to do what was needed to assure their survival.
Their God said they'd survive no matter what befell them.

The downside of the deal was that everyone else on Earth would hate them. While claiming to support the Jews, the people of Earth would (in reality) make Abraham's offspring the target of racial jokes, insults and violent attacks.

What's more, every time gentiles needed handy scapegoats, the Jews would always be there for them.

Want some popularity points with the folks back home?

Want to impress that new group of thugs you love so much?

Would you just like to beat on someone?

How about a Jew?

You can always find Heebie-jeebies around to hammer on.

"Hey, there's an old one. Let's nail her, guys!"

The deal isn't much on the surface, but don't overlook its depth.

The Hebrew God promises to bring back a remnant of faithful ones in the last days before he restores his kingdom.

The Hebrew God also swears he'll do whatever is needed to keep them there until his son returns to usher in the end of gentile times.

Today's nation of Israel is as close as can be to a "presence" of Jews in the promised land, Jews who aren't likely to leave on their own.

While occasional morons can still be heard jabbering about how sweet it must be to hammer on Hebrews, what's mostly heard out of those who can't let Jews live in peace are whispers, whimpers, and whines.

Israel has survived numerous assaults against overwhelming odds.

Does this have anything to do with the promise to return Hebrews to the land and keep them there until gentile times have ended?

It would seem so.

Or maybe it's just some crazy coincidence.

As always, time will tell.

A dodge employed by the ignorant, the lazy, or those having too much fun to care is to say the Bible can only be understood by Scholars.

Scholars agree that uneducated people can't grasp the Bible.

It's a daydream of the Scholars.

It's a lie, since it says God's revelations don't reveal.

It's a lie, since it says God can't get through to common people.

Who else would God want to get through to but common people?

It certainly wouldn't be the bloated and bigotted boobs that attempt to pass themselves off as Bible Scholars and Religious Authorities.

No schooling is necessary to understand the origin and history of the Hebrews and their language.

It goes like this . . .

Abraham was the first Hebrew, the father of the Jews.
Abraham lived in Ur, capital of the Chaldean empire.
Abraham was called to leave Ur, which he did.
Abraham probably spoke a form of the Chaldean language.
It's likely early Hebrew contained a lot of the Chaldean.
There's not much doubt Hebrew words developed their own shade and meaning as those who used them became more aware of their God.
And finally, new Hebrew is different than old Hebrew.
Congratulations, you now know as much as any Scholar.

Hebrews contributed greatly to both books of the Bible.
Really, the only meaningful contribution by early Hebrews is the body of knowledge they left in the scrolls of the Bible.

What Jews thought or presently think about any scroll, though, has a similar value to what Eskimos think about their kayaks: zip.

What past or present pseudo-christian Reverends, Medicine Men and Scholars think weighs the same as opinions of Rabbis and Eskimos: zero.

All people have opinions, but everyone knows opinions mean little.

Bible facts can be found on Bible pages.

People on Earth should be joyful about this, indebted that the God of Israel made it possible to interpret the Hebrew language and appreciate the Hebrew belief-system.

Additionally, gratefulness should be expressed by people on Earth to Abraham's God that they can interpret scrolls written in Greek, for this provides answers to old testament questions.

It's no big surprise, for Israel's God has always assured people who'll listen that the door to immortality, with the opportunity to acquire rank in his kingdom, is open to both gentiles and Jews.

There'd have been few takers if invitations were sent out in Hebrew. Hebrew has always been known as "*Who-brew?*". Rather, the invitations were issued in Greek, a language spoken throughout the world.

Scholars have dreamed up many stories of the genesis and history of Greece. Some think the Greeks came from a fellow named Javan (John) a supposed great-great-great-great grandson of Japheth, one of Noah's sons lucky enough to book a bunk on the ark.

Japheth's seed was wafted hither and thither by the winds of Time.

Japheth's seed blew into the land of the fearsome Pelasgi people.

Japheth's seed sprouted weeds that outgrew the Pelasgi.

"How could they?"

The answer: because three more waves of Javers followed that first wave onto the beach and Greece belonged to the Greeks.

Remember, none of this has a thing to do with the Bible.

Greek history is a maybe-kind-of-could-be-true type of deal.

It'll remain that way, too, until Bone-diggers unearth astounding new evidence the *Greeks* really evolved from some guy named Guido.

Even then, it won't make a bit of difference, except to Bone-diggers.

The gods of the *Greeks* (in **2000 BC**) reached all the way back to the time of Babel's tower, where they stood helplessly by while the real God took over and put the skids to humanity's latest attempt to make a name for itself instead of adopting the name of its God.

How did the real God thwart humanity's attempt to make a name?

Quite simply: the one language spoken by all humans was befused and confuddled, which meant one group couldn't grasp what any of the other groups were saying. (**Gen 11:1-9**)

Lack of understanding begat lack of trust.

Lack of trust begat lack of tolerance.

Lack of tolerance begat downright hostility.

Look around, here we are in the wonderful world of the present.

A reversal of that confuddlement was demonstrated in Jerusalem on the festival of Pentecost, somewhere around fifty days after the death and resurrection of Christ (**34 AD**) when the ears of Jews from all over the planet were opened and each Jew heard the words uttered by Peter and others in the language he or she grew up speaking. (**Acts 2:5**)

Scholars believe Babel's tower was a temple.

They believe it was built to honor pagan deities.

They're probably right.

Then the temple toppled and the big-god and his mate departed.

The whole gang was hauled away to surface as new gods in new lands.

The big-gods of the day were the king and queen of heaven.

They weren't just wife and husband, they were sister and brother.

They were the primeval all-in-the-family routine.

The other gods had their own god-thing going.

They shared the tweaks and values of people who loved them.

They hated everything hated by their worshippers.

The gods of one nation were the gods of the others, however.

They just took different strokes.

The king went by names like Jupiter or Zeus or Jove.

The queen was the lovely Juno or Hera.

The names come from the same source, from the root-word signifying "god" or "origin". Jupiter's name is a great example, since it's formed out of those very same words: **jovi** or **diovi**, meaning "god" and **pater**, meaning "father", "source" or "origin".

A prominent member of the royal family was Neptune or Poseidon.

A brother of Jupiter and Juno, Poseidon policed Earth's oceans.

Another big-god was Vulcan, a son of the royal pair.
Vulcan was in charge of enforcing divine law on Earth.

Down and down it went from there, a pile of petty-gods involved with
the petty dealings of all humankind.

One god, for example, was charged with ensuring safe journeys.
Another was superb at locating lost things.

Everybody understood the services were rendered only after certain
pre-specified love-offerings crossed the palms of priests that purveyed
each god's business interests on Earth.

Aesculapius turned out to be a notable petty-god.

He was top-dog of the new and upcoming swindle called Medicinius.

He swiftly scaled the ladder to the loftiest level of all.

Before long, he held a big-god position in (gulp!) Rome.

It's been said it was about **300 BC** when Scully's scoots first started
to scuff, scuttle, and scurry around, claiming the ability to heal all types
of malady, mania, and misalignment.

Healing was done in Aesculapius' name.

Healing commenced after love-offerings changed hands.

When patients couldn't be cured or if earlier healings came unhinged,
priests would strike a pathetic pose, avert the eyes, drywash the hands,
shuffle the feet, and in hummed and reverent tones they would murmur,
"Closure must come from Jupiter now. We've done all we can."

Love-offerings weren't refunded, of course.

Look around again, here we are back in the present.

Any day now, some Bone-digger whiskering away in the sand of a long-
forgotten settlement will discover amid the scattered remains of a long-
forgotten temple of Aesculapius, a plaque that reads . . .

We Heal For Love The Money Is Only For Souvenirs

Greeks knew nothing about the revelations received by the Jews.

Greeks had so few ways of knowing.

Late-breaking news took a long time getting from here to there.

On-scene reporters were heard to say, "Film in eleven years . . ."

People attempting to marry Hebrew and Greek concepts to their own
alien beliefs caused confusion, but it was nothing compared to the chaos
seen after pseudo-christian publishers printed translations of the Bible
in English. They scraped the bottoms of their barrels and affirmed the
scum they came up with was God's word. And they offered to sell it for
the cost of a book.

When?

There's no good clue to the exact date any scroll was written.
Truthfully, it doesn't matter.
The big thing is what was said, not when someone first said it.

Genesis is seen at the beginning of the Bible because that's the best spot to put a record of the beginning ("genesis") of this present chapter of Earth's history, not because it was without doubt written first.

Genesis is where readers are introduced to the first humans.

Genesis says humans are the highest form of animal life on Earth.

Genesis does not state humans are Earth's highest life-form because they were made in the image and likeness of God or angels.

Genesis says humanity is highest because it's the only life-form given a chance for release from its present pitiful condition.

Genesis says humanity is highest because it's the only life-form given a chance to ascend the ladder of life.

Genesis says humans can inherit a share in God's nature and kingdom.

Does this remarkable news produce higher levels of thinking?

Does it produce a burning need to know more?

Don't bet on it, for in truth the news produces only problems.

Humans find no reason to rejoice.

Humans become peevish if anybody even hints they don't already have a spark of the divine in them.

Persons who feel that way ask, "Do you mean there are goofballs that still believe we're mortal?! C'mon, get real!"

The feeling is natural to humanity.

The feeling is produced by human nature.

The other kind of feeling is found in those who understand, love, and obey the truth despite their own natural needs and appetites.

These two views reveal potential winners and the absolutely lost.

You decide which is which.

People are at odds over whether what was written is true or false.

People debate meanings and definitions.

People question whether terms are literal or figurative.

People say the Bible is nothing but past-due ditties and tall tales.

People say the Bible is filled with old fables, fables just like the ones sent floating down the River of Time by every culture and clan.

People say the Bible is filled with ancient yarns and tottery myths.

People say the only good thing about the Bible is that it exposes just how far from reality were the low-life liars who made it up.

This book is concerned with what the Bible says, not with what those who never read it say it says.

Judgment won't be made on the worth or rank of opinions before the Bible's true content has been examined.

As mentioned in the Preface, humans can become quite agitated when asked to defend what they're saying before they've said it.

Again, is it fair to treat the Bible the same way?

We'd best not . . . not if we want to know what it says.

Another thing: it helps if people really do believe they can learn what the Bible says. Believe it. It's not a problem.

Genesis' second chapter reveals humanity's first Big Screw-Up.

Whether it's pleasing or not, there it is.

The humans weren't able to obey the one rule given them.

Therefore, they were told they'd become miserable and mortal.

They were told the process of death would come upon them.

They were told it could lead to their utter extinction.

That new and lower manner in which they'd live out the rest of their lives began when they were evicted from their home in the garden.

Along with the curse came an oath: the humans were promised one of their own future descendants (their seed) would establish the means by which they might be released from the effects of their crime.

Eve surely believed, since when she bore her first son, she called him Cain (gotten).

She said she did it because she was given "a seed from the Lord."

In this way, Eve also made the first Bible Verse Blunder.

After Cain slaughtered his younger brother and brought denunciation upon himself instead of glory, Eve switched allegiance to another child, a child she named Seth (preferred). She said she did it because God gave her "another seed in place of Abel, who was slain by Cain."

Eve had faith, this is obvious.

It's still possible Eve's faith will save her in the end.

Genesis continues down the line of Seth's descendants to the days of a man named Noah.

The length of time between Adam and Noah is given as follows . . .

Adam lived **130** years until the birth of Seth.

Seth lived **105** years until the birth of Enos.

Enos lived **90** years until the birth of Cainan.

Cainan lived **70** years until the birth of Mahalaleel.

Mahalaleel lived **65** years until the birth of Jared.

Jared lived **162** years until the birth of Enoch.

Enoch lived **65** years until the birth of Methuselah.

Methuselah lived **187** years until the birth of Lamech.

Lamech lived **182** years until the birth of Noah.

Add it up as much as you like, it always comes out the same.

If Adam's "birth" dates from the time the process of death came on him and he was barred from Eden, one thousand fifty six years sailed by from Adam to Noah.

Because nothing is written revealing how long Adam and his wife lived before they broke the edict, numeric accounts in the Bible have to begin on the day the pair became mortal and began to die.

Noah was six hundred years old when a flood thinned the human herd and created necessity for a new line to yield God's special seed.

Shem's line was favored.

Shem was born around Noah's five hundredth year.

Japheth and Ham, his brothers, were also born then.

Two years after the flood, when Shem was almost one hundred years old, he fathered a son and called him Arphaxad. God smiled on the little fellow, saying it was Arphaxad who'd sire all his future children.

Assuming the math is correct, Arphaxad's birth was sixteen hundred and fifty eight years after the fiasco in Eden.

It's revealed that Noah's father died five years before the flood.

As a result, the line selected by God really did start anew with Noah and the fortunate few aboard the ark.

It doesn't matter if the waters covered all the planet, almost all the planet, or a teensy bit of Tibet. What matters is the geological balance was upset and Earth underwent an extreme alteration.

Genesis also says the relationship between the humans and their God was going to shift even more radically.

Genesis says the shift took place with the appearance of Abraham.

Special attention must be paid to Abraham.

Genesis says Abraham is a vital link in God's work with humankind.

The report in **Genesis** claims Abraham was born about three hundred years after the flood, meaning he was sixty years old at Noah's death.

The record contends he was born some two thousand years after the ejection of Adam and Eve from the garden in Eden.

Finally, the record says Jesus, the promised seed, walked upon Earth two thousand years after Abraham died, meaning he lived four thousand years after his original forebears were run out of Eden.

It's apparent Jesus lived near the zero-year of the current estimate regarding time.

Also, it's apparent people who live in **2002 AD** are living six thousand years after Adam lived - four thousand years after Abraham lived - and two thousand years after the life of Christ.

The information above is readily retrieved out of **Genesis**, but almost all humans would rather ignore it.

Humans would rather believe they're sprung off from monkeys which have inhabited Earth for gazillions of years. The idea isn't easily placed aside, for if the way humans behave is contemplated, it isn't possible to suppose they came from anything but brute beasts.

It should also be mentioned that Scientists imagine bones and hunks of pottery paint a more reliable picture than the one painted in **Genesis**. But wait - opinion wasn't going to be considered before the full content of the Bible was examined. That is especially so if contending with the daydreams of Scientists, for Scientists will often amend their thinking at the drop of a meteor or jut of a jaw.

Where?

With **When** out of the way, attention is now turned to **Where**.

Since the exact date a scroll was produced means little, it shouldn't be a massive surprise to appreciate that the particular place in which a scroll was produced doesn't mean much, either.

Most will agree the Bible was written between **1400 BC** and **100 AD**. Because the records of history during that time are plump, geographical locations are a cinch to identify. They were real and actual areas on the Earth that sheltered real and actual people who were really and actually put upon when Abraham's God really and actually performed the promise he made to his real and actual people, the Hebrews.

The general location of Eden isn't a mystery.

The zip code was probably 00001.

The exact street address of Adam's family is much harder to reveal, but why care? It was someplace on the planet. Isn't that enough?

People who want to know where must accept as a "best guess" one of the countries presently called Turkey, Syria, or Iraq.

The Bible says Eden (the country) was around as late as **600-500 BC**.

The Bible says it was a nation of traders.

There's no reason to locate the original garden in Eden, though, since the flood obliterated the old world, leaving only eight survivors high and dry atop mount Ararat.

There's no reason to locate the original Ararat at all, for the humans who were still alive, like seedlets falling from Noah's family tree, finally came down the mountain and repopulated much of the planet.

Genesis 11 speaks of a time humans worked together in one spirit.

It talks about their first attempt to build a stairway to the stars.

It says God's demolition squad came and tore the thing down.

It says the stairway wasn't meant to be.

"Why?"

The answer: if humankind is allowed to labor at one task in one spirit, humans will soon see there's nothing they can't do.

There are those who'd ask, "But isn't that why we're here?"

They'd ask, "Aren't we on Earth to live in peace and build and grow?"

They'd ask, "Didn't God reveal his will to see if we will do it?"

Apparently not, for after their tongues were befused, the offshoots of Noah were shot off into the ends of the Earth.

If the **Genesis** scroll is true (actually, there's no reason to contend it isn't) why be surprised that tales of a great flood are seen in the lore of every ancient culture?

Wouldn't they all be tied to the scattering at Shinar?

Wouldn't they all possess the same cloudy memory of how they came to and left Shinar?

Isn't it absolute insanity to believe because each tribe on Earth tells the same basic story they must all be wrong?

The Bible records events that happened in areas on Earth now known as Africa, Arabia, Asia, and Europe.

Not much is said about people and places outside these regions.

Writers of the scrolls lived in the lands of the Egyptians, Chaldeans, Phoenecians, Assyrians, Babylonians, Medes, and Persians.

They also lived in Greek and Roman lands.

There's no point knowing exactly where the writers lived, however.

"Why?"

The answer: because many of the nations mentioned by the Bible are gone now, the prophecies concerning them having all been fulfilled.

And that's it for **What**, **When**, and **Where**.

Now it's time to deal with **Who**, **How**, and **Why**.

It was mentioned earlier that much of the Bible was penned by seers and scribes of the Hebrew nation. Studies of the Bible reveal no reason to think any scrolls came from non-Jews, although Tradition, acting with the consent of its old friend Higher Education, will tell you at least four scrolls were written by gentiles.

Tradition and Higher Education have been wrong before, though.

Who?

Since so few scrolls appear in the first person, with a writer saying, "I, son of So-and-so, penned this scroll", it's a challenge to uncover the identities of many authors.

Writers who reveal their identities say they're Hebrews.

Since **Job's** author took no bows, his or her identity isn't known.

What's known is **Job** was favored by God. (1:1 / 42:9)

What's postulated is **Job** lived in Uz, a region of Chaldea, somewhere between 1800 and 1500 BC.

It's said **Job** possibly lived a life parallel to the life of Abraham in Ur, but **Job** might even have lived in Moses' time.

The same as it didn't matter when **Job** existed, it also doesn't matter who authored the scroll bearing **Job's** name.

"Why doesn't it matter?"

The answer: because nothing **Job** contains contradicts other writings. If that's true, why care what or if **Job** wrote the thing? It's apparent a member of the Big Guy's gang of go-betweens scribed the scroll.

In addition to four appearances as the name of a person, Uz may also be seen in the three following places.

Job 1:1 - His name was Job and he lived in the land of Uz.
He was unblemished and upright, a man who feared God.

Jer 25:20 - A verse concerning the kings of the land of Uz. (600 BC)

Lam 4:21 - Oh daughter of Edom, living in the land of Uz. (600 BC)

Emotions in **Job** aren't easy to get into if one's limited to reading.

Job needs acting out, a clutch of close friends taking on the roles of the six main characters. Those without a group of dear friends need to stick with reading, the second best way to go.

Reading reveals a think-piece, a lively debate, a cerebral tussle.

Reading recounts the interplay of four seemingly dear friends.

Reading raises questions such as . . .

How come good things happen to bad people?

How much is too much?

Job's book assures readers that everything which ends well is well.

Perhaps it's more realistic to say **Job's** scroll teaches two significant lessons not presented so clearly elsewhere . . .

Self isn't at the heart of true religion.

Right and wrong don't always directly relate to good and bad.

Another thing discovered by reading is that **Job**, living in Uz, with no visible connection to the Hebrews, knew an whole lot about the business and mentality of Abraham's God.

A great awareness of the plan of Abraham's God is visible in **Job**.

And three words that Hebrews used to represent their God are also seen in **Job's** scroll.

These Hebrew words are: **YHWH**, **El**, and **Elohim**.

Though similar words were chosen by others in the area to represent their own gods, the Hebrew God was the only one who declared he was a real and living Deity.

The Hebrew God was the only one to mention a plan and purpose.

The Hebrew God was the only one to demonstrate a desire and power to bring that plan into reality.

The Hebrew God was the only one to say a thing because the gods of other nations were trees, rocks, and natural occurrences and concepts.

The ideas and intents of the Hebrew's God were well-known to people living along the coast of the Mediterranean sea far before Abraham was urged to get out of Ur, about **1800 BC**. Awareness of God's plan by then was so watered down there was little choice but to shuffle the deck and redeal. The new beginning permitted God's plan to rise to a significantly higher level: to the offering of a covenant concerning Earth's future.

Included in the covenant was assurance that those who had the same faith and hope as Abraham would be considered righteous.

Individuals tangled in the jungle of twisted theories that ooze out of minds ignorant of the truth aren't able to turn around and launch off in a new direction. No matter which time-frame they're in, people who get bitter and nasty, the ones who hate laws and regulations, aren't likely to accept or even recognize truth. They aren't likely because they're much too busy buying into beliefs like: many gods exist; or no gods; or humans have to wait and see what's coming after. They'll swallow anything at all, no matter how asinine, to avoid dealing with the truth.

Consider this, though: is a person who adores trees, rocks, or animals any more removed from the truth than a person who believes the hodge-podge of human opinion polluting his mind is a god?

Is a person who bows to a totem-pole more deluded than people that bow to the god of No-god? Belief in nothing is still belief.

And reflect on the flub of fantasies taught by people who claim they follow the Christ. The beliefs of these false-christians are as far from Christ's teachings as flat broke is from just having hit the lottery.

Gone is gone, though, and you can't be more gone than gone.

As mentioned earlier, for somebody with no recorded ties to Hebrew culture, a person who reveals little of the origin of his hopes, **Job** knows a bunch about the covenant God made with Abraham and his children.

And **Job** talks like he is ever ready and always willing, unconditionally involved in the realization of his goal.

Job on life, death, and human nature . . .

3:11 - Why did I not die when I came out of the womb?
Why did I not die when I erupted from my mother's belly?
Now I would be still.
Now I would be as those who sleep.
Now I would be at rest.
Like a secret and untimely birth, I would not be.
I would be like an infant that never saw the light. **(16)**

7:7 - Remember my life is nothing but wind.

13 - If I imagine going to bed might comfort me, or resting on my couch might ease my suffering, you scare me with dreams, and terrify me with visions. I would rather be strangled and die than go on living. I hate my life. I do not want to live on forever, not like it is. Let me alone, for my days are nothing but vanity.

10:18 - If only I had died before eyes had seen me, it would now be like I had never been, like I was taken from the womb to the grave.
My days are few enough as is. Will you ever stop abusing me? Leave me alone and let me be. Maybe I will run across a crumb of comfort before I go to the place from which there is no return, to a land of darkness, a land beneath the shadow of death.

14:1 - A man born of a woman lives but a few days.
His life is full of trouble.
He comes forth like a flower, then he withers away.
He fades like a shadow and that is the end of him.

17:13 - If I wait, the grave will be my new home.
I will spread out my bed in darkness.
I will say to disintegration, You are my father.
I will say to the worms, You are my mother and my sisters.
And what will become of my hope?
As for my hope, will I see it?
All of us will go down together to the bars of the pit.
All of us will lie down together in the dust.

21:7 - Why do wicked ones live to become old and powerful?
They spend their days in wealth, yet in a moment they go to the grave.
They are stubble, blown by the wind.
They are chaff, carried away by the storm. **(18)**

27:8 - What good is the hope of the hypocrite?
He may have much now, but God will only require his life in the end.
And God will not even hear his cry when trouble comes on him.

19 - Those who trust in wealth lie down, but they are not harvested.
Even if they opened their eyes, they would only see that they are not.

30:23 - I am persuaded you will bring me to death.
I am persuaded you will bring me to the place appointed for all the living.

Job's hope . . .

14:10 - Human beings die and waste away.
Yes, humans die, and then where are they?
As water evaporates from the sea, and as floods recede, then dry up, so
is it to humans, since they lie down and do not rise. Even if there was no
more heaven, they would never wake or be aroused from their sleep.

If you will only hide me in the grave . . .
If you will only cover me until your wrath has passed . . .
If you will only appoint a set time to remember me, I will be so glad.
If a man dies, can he live again?
I will wait all the days of my appointed time.
I will wait until my change comes.
You will call and I will answer.
You will have a desire for me, the work of your hand.

19:25 - I know my redeemer lives.
I know I will see him standing on Earth in the last days.
I know I will see him in my own flesh, even if worms devour this body.
I know I will see him for myself.
I know I will see him with my own eyes.
I know I will see him, and not through the eyes of another.
I know I will see him, even if the very essence inside me is destroyed.

Three other scrolls are said to have been written by gentiles.
The scrolls are **Mark**, **Luke**, and **Acts of the Apostles**.

Luke and **Acts** are thought to have been composed by a doctor; not a
Jewish doctor, but Greek. The only thing clear from reading both books
is this: they were written by the same person.

Compare the opening lines of each . . .

Lk 1:1 - Because many others are attempting to communicate the things
we fervently believe in an orderly manner, I think it is only proper, since
I have been a part of this from the start, that I also write you, oh most
excellent Theophilus, in the hope you may obtain a further knowledge of
the truth.

You will find things you already know in this letter, things that were laid out before us by people who have spoken them from the start. And also, you will find things taught by us, the ones who speak the gospel today.

Acts 1:1 - The first letter I sent you, Theophilus, contained things that Jesus did and said until the day he was taken up. This was after he gave orders through the holy spirit to witnesses he had chosen. They are the same ones to whom he showed himself alive when he was raised from the dead, using many infallible proofs to do it. And they stayed with him for forty days as he taught them about God's kingdom.

These books seem like letters written to someone called Theophilus, unless Theophilus was a name representing loyal believers. If so, it's up for grabs. This is truthful, however: the letters were written from the eyewitness point of view, in a "take it or leave it" way.

Who knows who wrote **Luke** and **Acts**? Maybe it *was* a Doctor Luke.

The book of **Mark**? Maybe it came from someone named Mark.

The book could also have come from Edward, Hymie, or Milton.

The writing is more important than the writer's identity.

As the others, **Mark's** scroll was written by an eyewitness, somebody who hints he may even have taken part in the action.

The preceding is of great importance, for if the new testament were missing from human history, the world would have no eyewitness account introducing Abraham's promised son.

There'd be no enlightened analysis of old testament scrolls.

The door to the covenants of promise, the door opened for Jews and gentiles alike by God, would still be barred.

The world would have nothing but what was written after the fact by those who could only put down what they'd heard or read.

Eyewitness accounts are the real deal, though.

Eyewitness accounts are used to determine guilt or innocence.

Eyewitness accounts draw a line between credible and incredible.

Eyewitness accounts are much more stimulating because the straight scoop is coming from someone who was there.

So why do so many find it so easy to dismiss the eyewitness accounts of those who wrote the Bible?

Who knows how many scrolls were written by gentiles?

Will it make a difference?

Will God hold humans liable for unrevealed knowledge?

Why would humans think it?

Will God hold humans liable for revealed knowledge?

What else can humans do but hope God will?

What other means could God use to measure basic responsibility?

Did a guy love his mom and dad?
Did a gal hang on to her virginity until she married?
Did a guy come up with little jobs so people could work for food?
Did a gal go to church on Sundays, except on Sundays there were far more uplifting things to do, such as attending a family picnic or spending a weekend with some really neat friends?

Don't count on any of the above.
God states it's a knowledge of his plan and purpose concerning Earth that brings responsibility.
God claims awareness brings an invitation to the party.
Whether or not invited ones get a dance with the guest of honor has a lot to do with how they used the knowledge given them.

The identities of the authors of the seventeen scrolls that begin the Bible are simply not given. Subject matter is the twine that binds them, and it's obvious this twine all comes off the same spool.

If the first eleven chapters of **Genesis** were left out, this scroll and the sixteen after it would only deal with a record of Abraham's seed.

The balance of old testament books (**Job** through **Malachi**) are from or about people living during the years of this record.

Writers are identified for the most part.

Writings of the prophets were of highest consequence.

Prophets appeared during key periods in Hebrew history.

Prophets seen below were alive just prior to the desolation of Israel, the northern ten-tribed division of the Hebrew kingdom.

Amos, one of these prophets, wrote, "Really, the Lord God will not do a thing until he first reveals it to his servants, the prophets."

The coming destruction of Israel was revealed to God's servants.

The servants of God faithfully revealed it to God's people.

Those who believed, those trying to live by God's will, gave ear.

They were ready.

Those who had their heads crammed somewhere between their knees and their nipples didn't do so well.

Amos appears to have been a shepherd.

After a short foreword, **Amos** got right to the meat of his message.

He was just a single thread in the knot of prophets who rose to plead with the Jews to get their act together before God called in Sargon and his Assyrian troopers to trample them.

Israel didn't.

God did.

Amos and the others were eyewitnesses.

All were personally involved, God's men-on-the-scene in **800 BC**.

Amos 1:1 - This is the prophecy of Amos, shepherd from Tekoa, relating to the words he was given about Israel during the rule of Uzziah, king of Judah, and the rule of Jeroboam, son of Joash, king of Israel, two years before the earthquake.

Amos said, The Lord God will roar out of Zion.

Amos said, The Lord God will send out his word from Jerusalem.

Hosea 1:1 - The word God sent to Hosea, the son of Beerai, in the reigns of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, who were kings of Judah, and in the reign of Jeroboam, king of Israel.

Isaiah 1:1 - This is a vision from Isaiah, son of Amoz.

It is a vision Isaiah was given during the reigns of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz and Hezekiah, all kings of Judah.

It is a vision concerning Judah and Jerusalem.

Micah 1:1 - This is the prophecy God gave Micah, the Morashite, during the reigns of Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, all kings of Judah.

It is a prophecy Micah received about Samaria and Jerusalem.

Then came a century of silence.

There are no books in the Bible dealing with the hundred years which followed, but there are books claiming the hundred years following them witnessed an emergence of another knot of prophets, the ones who lived around **640 BC** in the reign of Josiah, king of Judah.

2 Kng 22:1 - Josiah was eight years old when he became king.

Josiah reigned for thirty-one years in Jerusalem.

God remained with Josiah, for he walked in the way of his father, David, never turning to the right hand or left.

14 - Hilkiah, the priest, and Ahikam, Achbor, Shaphan, and Asahiah went to see Huldah, the prophetess, Shallum's wife.

Zeph 1:1 - This is the word of the Lord. It was given to Zephaniah, son of Cushi, during the reign of Josiah, son of Amon, king of Judah.

Judah, the southern two-tribed part of the Jewish kingdom, refused to obey God's will and it quickly followed Israel into captivity.

God continued to speak to the faithful through prophets like **Ezekiel**, **Daniel** and **Jeremiah** despite the fact prophets and people alike were all "guests" of Nebuchadnezzar, the Babylonian.

Exile of Israel's children didn't delay or derail God's plan.
Actually, exile moved things to the next level.

Ezekiel spoke God's word to the exiles in Babylon, being very specific about his identity, as well as the time and place he met God.

Ezk 1:1 - In the thirtieth year, in the fourth month, on the fifth day of the month, while I stayed with the exiles beside the Kebar river, heaven opened and I received visions from God.

On the fifth day of the month, five years after our dispersion began, in the reign of king Jehoiachin, God's word came to me, Ezekiel, a priest, a son of Buzi, in the land of Chaldea, by the Kebar river.

God's hand touched me.

And when I turned to look, I saw . . .

Jeremiah was another priest specific about specifics.

Jer 1:1 - This is the prophecy of Jeremiah, the son of Hilkiah, a priest living in Anathoth, in the land of Benjamin.

God's word came upon me during the thirteenth year of Josiah's regime, and during the days of Jehoiakim, son of Josiah, king of Judah, up until the eleventh year of Zedekiah, son of Josiah, king of Judah, had ended, the year Jerusalem was carried away captive in the fifth month.

God's word came to me during that period of time.

Daniel doesn't claim to be a priest, but he was well educated and may have been from the royal line of Judah. As the others, **Daniel** was very precise when expressing his thoughts.

Dan 1:1 - Three years after Jehoiachim started to rule as Judah's king, Nebuchadnezzar, Babylon's ruler, came and laid siege to Jerusalem.

God turned Jehoiachim, the king of Judah, over to him.

Nebuchadnezzar was given all the valuables in the house of God, too.

He took the vessels to the land of Shinar.

He put them in his god's treasure-house and in his god's safe-keeping.

The king asked Ashpenaz, head of his eunuchs, to bring him some of the children of Israel, seed from its king and princes, the unblemished ones who were pleasant to look on, those skilled in different types of wisdom and cunning, those educated in science, those who possessed the ability in them to stand in the king's presence, young ones who could be trained in the knowledge and language of the Chaldeans.

Each was given a daily serving by the king from the royal table.

Each drank from the king's own wine stock, the wine he drank himself.

Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah were with these young Judeans.

Daniel decided in his heart he would not foul himself with handouts from the king's table. He also decided not to drink the king's wine.

Daniel was born during the period Nebuchadnezzar was taking over in Babylon. By **600 BC**, when **Daniel** reached adulthood, **Jeremiah** had been predicting the collapse of Israel for twenty years.

Daniel, Ezekiel, and Jeremiah all survived to witness the destruction of Jerusalem and its temple.

Daniel and **Ezekiel** both saw Nebuchadnezzar's fall and the growth of the Medo-Persian empire.

Daniel alone saw Babylon fall, and the ascent of Cyrus' Persian empire. He witnessed the exiles returning to Jerusalem, as well as a start of the rebuilding of the temple. He was present when most prophecies given by himself and others were fulfilled. He was one more eyewitness, just one more man of God, one ready, willing, and qualified to say, "Wait a minute! What do you mean you were never told?"

Esther was a Jewish girl who did well. She put her lovely neck on the line uttering God's word in the reign of the Persian king, Artaxerses.

Esther did well enough to become the queen of her world. She might have done well enough to become a queen in the world of the future.

Esther had a principal part in foiling another plot to exterminate the Jews, and she also helped Jewish exiles return and rebuild Jerusalem.

Ezra, Nehemiah, Haggai, Zechariah and **Malachi** were all speakers of God's word about **500 BC**. They were all components in a third and final cluster of prophets to appear during old testament times.

Neh 8:1 - All the people assembled as one on the street from the water gate. They begged Ezra, the scribe, to bring out the book of laws which came from God, the laws given to Israel by Moses.

Ezra brought the book of laws out to the congregation.

He did it for both men and women, for everyone able to understand.

On the first day of the seventh month, he began to read . . .

9 - Nehemiah, Ezra, and the Levites that were instructing the people all said, Today is holy to the Lord, your God. Do not mourn or weep.

All of them spoke like that because the people started crying when they heard the words of the law being read to them.

Hag 1:1 - In the second year Darius was king, in the sixth month, on the first day of the month, God's word came to Haggai.

Zech 1:1 - In the eighth month of the second year of Darius' rule, God's word came to Zechariah.

Mal 1:1 - This is the burden of God's word to Israel through Malachi.

Then came four hundred years of silence.

Then came the century of the new testament.

Then came silence again, and it's now two thousand years later.

The old testament states a four hundred year silence slipped by from the end of **Genesis** to the start of **Exodus**. It's the same as claiming God wasn't manifest during the four hundred years Israel spent in Egypt.

Appearance of Moses, liberty, giving of the law, and establishment of the kingdom changed everything.

Few cared when Moses said he'd been ordered to free Israel.

Few listened until things started heating up.

By then, though, it was impossible not to notice something way out of the ordinary was taking place. The same will happen when God's current seed-people inherit their new kingdom.

Old testament prophets not seen above appear below.

Jonah 1:1 - The Lord's word came to Jonah, son of Amittai, saying, Rise now and go to that great city of Nineveh. Protest against it because its evil has risen up before me. (800 BC)

Joel 1:1 - The word of God to Joel, son of Pethuel. (780 BC)

Nahum 1:1 - This is Nineveh's burden, which can be seen in the scroll of visions God gave Nahum, the Elkoshite. (700 BC)

Hab 1:1 - This is the vision seen by Habakkuk, the prophet. (600 BC)

Obad 1:1 - This is the vision given to Obadiah, communicating just what the Lord God has to say about Edom. (580 BC)

There are other books . . . **Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, Ruth**, the first and second scrolls of **Samuel, Kings**, and **Chronicles**, as well as the **Song of Solomon**, the **Psalms, Ecclesiastes**, the **Proverbs**, and **Lamentations**.

The authors of these scrolls aren't identified.

That's the old testament.

The new testament can be covered quickly.

The author of **Matthew** doesn't mention his or her name.

Truly, the name "Matthew" can only be found five times in the entire new testament: **Mt 9:9, 10:3, Mk 3:18, Lk 6:15 and Acts 1:13**.

The same person may be called "Levi" in **Mk 2:14**, **Lk 5:27** and **29**.

The name of the writer of **Mark** isn't mentioned.

There's a Mark who appears nine times in the new testament.

This Mark is seen eight times as a companion of **Paul**.

The same Mark is seen once as a "son" of **Peter**.

John's book was written by a guy called John, one who said he was an original apostle of Christ (**Jn 21:24**).

John also gets credit for three short letters and the **Revelation**.

Luke and **Acts** have already been covered.

Paul, the apostle, formerly a Jewish Pharisee, Saul (of Tarsus) is said to have penned letters to the **Romans**, **Corinthians**, **Galatians**, **Ephesians**, **Philippians**, **Collossians** and **Thessalonians**. **Paul** is credited for letters to **Timothy**, **Titus**, and the slave, **Philemon**, also.

The identity of the writer of **Hebrews** isn't revealed.

False-christians presume this letter was written by **Paul**.

That would be the same as having **Moses** dash off a note to the gang back in Egypt, reading: "We Sure Do Miss You!".

Peter is recognized for the two letters bearing his name.

People say **James** and **Jude** wrote the letters bearing their names.

And that's the Bible, old testament and new.

Israel ceased to exist independently when Nebuchadnezzar brought devastation to their land around **588 BC**, carrying the majority of those who survived off to lands governed by Babylonian supporters.

The scrolls of **Ezra**, **Esther**, **Nehemiah**, **Obadiah**, **Daniel**, **Haggai**, and **Malachi**, as well as all the new testament, witness to a presence of Jews in the promised land after **588 BC**, but always squished under the thumb of one heathen entity or another. Some really bad thumbs people might be squished under were the thumbs of Egypt, Syria, and Rome.

There are reports a clan of rebel Jews, the **Maccabees**, took control of the land around **200 BC**, but the stories come from non-Bible sources so they have no place in this study.

There's no doubt about the state of Jews today. Over two thousand and five hundred years after their dominion was destroyed, the children of Abraham are once again lodged in the land of promise; and once again, they're led by a powerful and fiercely independent government.

Does this have anything to do with covenants and prophecies found in the scrolls of the Bible?

As always, only time will tell.

How?

Attention can now be turned to how the Bible came to be.

And how writings spanning fifteen hundred years of history can blend together so well.

And how they can be so dead-center when predicting the future.

And how it's like a miracle or something.

People question the reliability of Bible scrolls.

People question the honesty of Bible writers.

People wonder if their stuff came straight from God.

People presume they were only spiritually-gifted, and that's how they got past reality's veil to see and hear things unavailable to others.

People wonder if Bible writers were worse.

People wonder if Bible writers were just power-crazed demons, out to brainwash as many as possible with junk they made up themselves.

People figure they just got lucky on the predictions.

How can we get to know these men and women?

How can we find out what they thought?

How can we be sure they spoke God's true word?

Where else can we start but with the scrolls?

What else can we do but let Bible writers speak for themselves?

David

2 Sam 23:1 - These are the last words of David, the son of Jesse, a man raised on high, a man Jacob's God anointed, Israel's sweet psalmist.

David said, God's spirit spoke through me.

David said, God's word came from my mouth.

Isaiah

Is 6:1 - During the year king Uzziah died, I saw the Lord.

I saw the Lord seated on a throne, a throne high and exalted.

I cried, Woe is me, for I am going to die. (5)

I am going to die, for my eyes have seen the King, the Lord of Hosts.

I am going to die, for I am a man with unclean lips.

I am going to die, for I live among a people with unclean lips.

I saw a seraphim (a symbolic being in the vision) approaching me.

When the seraphim got closer, I saw he had a live coal in his hands.

He touched the coal to my lips.
He said, You must truly believe this coal has touched your lips.
You must truly believe your depravity has been taken away.
You must truly believe your sinfulness has been taken away, too.
I heard the voice of God say, Who will we send?
I also heard the voice of God say, Who will go for us?
I said, Here am I . . . send me.

8:20 - (We believe) the law and the testimony. If their teachings do not agree with these words it is because they have no light in them.

Jeremiah

Jer 1:1 - The prophecy of Jeremiah, son of Hilkiah.

4 - The word of the Lord came to me, saying, I knew you long before you were formed in your mother's belly.
I anointed you before you came from your mother's womb.
I also appointed you as my prophet to the nations.
I said, Ah, Lord! Think of it. I am just a child to them and they will pay no attention to what I say.
Do not say you are just a child, the Lord told me. You will go to the ones I send you to and repeat everything I ordered you to say.
Show no fear of them and I will be with you and keep you safe.
Reaching out his hand to touch my mouth, the Lord said, Look, I just put my words in your mouth.
You will be set above nations and kingdoms.
You will tear up and throw down.
You will destroy and overturn.
You will build and plant.

17 - You must prepare yourself to stand before them.
You must be ready to repeat all that I told you.
Show no fear of them, since if you do, I will be forced to confound you in front of their very faces.
Reflect on this: I have made you like a defended city today, like a pillar of iron and like brass walls against the whole land, against the rulers of Judah, its princes, its priests and everybody else in the land. They will attack you, but they will not win, for I will be with you to protect you.

20:7 - Oh my Lord, you have tested me. I have suffered severely and I admit you are stronger. You are the winner. I am challenged every day. All of them mock me, for the only words I have uttered since I started speaking to them are words of violence and destruction, and because of it, the Lord's word is now why they insult me and hate me all day.

And I began saying to myself, I will not mention him or speak in his name again, even though his word is alive in my heart, and even though it roars as a fire in my bones, and even though I have gotten so weary fighting it, and even though I know I cannot hold out much longer.

Ezekiel

Ezk 1:3 - This is the Lord's word to Ezekiel, the priest.
I looked, and I saw a whirlwind approaching out of the north.
It appeared to be a large cloud.
It was like a fire enfolding itself.
It was surrounded by a radiance that seemed to come from within.
It was the color of amber, like something seen in the midst of a flame.

28 - It was bright like a rainbow.
I thought it might be another symbolic display of the Lord's glory.
I rapidly became convinced, and I fell on my face, then I heard the voice of the Lord say, *Get to your feet, son of man, I have words for you.*

The spirit came to me when the voice stopped speaking.
The spirit jerked me to my feet.
Then the voice I had heard earlier said to me, Son of man, I am going to send you to the children of Israel, a rebellious people who always refuse to obey me. They and their fathers have dishonored me to this day, and they are cheekish children, very willful of heart. I will send you to them and you will tell them what their God says. They will either listen to you or not, but if they will not hear this time they will at least have to admit a prophet walked among them.
You, oh son of man, must not fear them or anything they say.
You just speak my words and do not rebel like them.
I heard the voice say, Open your mouth now and eat what I give you.
I saw an hand come toward me, an hand that held a scroll.
I saw the scroll rolled out before me.
I saw writing on the inside and out.
I saw words of lamentation, mourning, and woe.

3:1 - The voice said, Son of man, eat what you see.
Eat this roll and go speak to the house of Israel.
When I opened my mouth to protest, he forced me to eat the roll.
He said, Son of man, let it go down into your belly.
He said, Let the scroll you have been given fill you.
When I swallowed, it was sweet as honey in my mouth.
He said, Go now, son of man.
Go and present yourself to the house of Israel.
Go and repeat everything I told you.

Daniel

2:46 - When Daniel was done interpreting Nebuchadnezzar's dream, the king fell on his face, and he honored Daniel, ordering that sacrifices and sweet incense be offered to him.

Addressing Daniel, the king said, Without doubt, your god is God of gods and Lord of lords. Your God is one that reveals secrets, too, for he gave you the meaning of this great mystery.

Nebuchadnezzar made Daniel a great man and gave him many gifts.

He put Daniel in charge of every province in Babylon.

He also put Daniel in charge of all Babylon's wise men.

5:29 - Belshazzar, Nebuchadnezzar's son by way of blood, issued orders to outfit Daniel in vermilion. He commanded them to hang a golden chain around Daniel's neck, and that a proclamation be sent out concerning him and how he would be one of the three highest leaders in the kingdom.

On that very night, Belshazzar, king of the Chaldeans, was slain.

And Darius, the Mede, had the kingdom by dawn.

Then Darius decided to put an hundred twenty princes over the kingdom.

They were to be leaders throughout his whole empire.

Three presidents were above them, of whom Daniel was highest.

That way, princes could communicate their concerns to the presidents.

That way, the king would not be bothered.

The king preferred Daniel over all the presidents and princes.

The king preferred Daniel because of the excellent spirit in him.

The king even considered putting Daniel in charge of all his realm.

6:25 - King Darius sent out a decree, stating, I proclaim that in all areas of my kingdom men will tremble and fear before the God of Daniel.

He is a living God, faithful in every age.

His kingdom will never be taken and he will rule until the end of days.

He rescues and saves.

He causes signs and wonders to be seen in heaven and on Earth.

And now, he has delivered Daniel.

Daniel did well during Darius' reign.

Daniel also did well during the reign of Cyrus, the Persian.

Amos

Amos 3:1 - Hear what the Lord says against you, oh seed of Israel.

Hear what he says against the whole family he brought out of Egypt.

Of all the people who have lived on Earth, says the Lord, you only have I known. Therefore, you are the only people I will punish for your evil.

Will a couple walk together if they are not in agreement?
 Will a lion roar in the forest if he has taken no prey?
 Will a young lion growl from his den if he has dragged in nothing?
 Will a bird fly into a snare on the ground if there is no bait in it?
 Will a trap spring from the ground if nothing triggers it?
 Will the trumpet sound in a city and its people not run to defend it?
 Will there be evil in a city and the Lord has not done it?
 When the Lord God does anything, he first reveals it to his servants.
 When the lion roars, who would not be afraid?
 When the Lord God sends his word, who would not speak prophecy?

John

Jn 19:31 - Because it was a day of preparation and because they wanted to be certain the bodies were not left hanging on crosses during sabbath day, the Jews pressured Pilate to order that the legs of the criminals be broken. They did it so the criminals would die sooner and so their bodies could then be taken down.

By the time they got to Jesus, they saw he was already dead.
 Because he had died, they did not break his legs, but one of the officers jammed a spear in his side, causing blood and water to gush out.
 I was there and I saw them do it.

My words are true because I only write about what I have seen.

My words are true and you can believe them.

All these things happened to fulfill scriptures. They fulfilled scriptures like this one, for example: None of his bones will be broken.

21:20 - Peter turned around and saw the disciple Jesus especially cared for behind them, and he asked Jesus, Lord, what about this one?

Jesus said, If I want him to remain here until I come back, what is it to you? You just follow me.

So a rumor went out among the brethren that this disciple would not die, but Jesus did not tell Peter the disciple was not going to die. Jesus only said, If I want him to wait here until I return, what is it to you?

I am that disciple and I testify these things are true.

I know this testimony is true because I wrote it.

Paul

Rom 15:4 - Things written in the past were written for our learning.

Things written in the past were written so we could have hope.

This hope comes through the endurance and comfort found in scripture.

Tim 3:15 - Since youth, Timothy, you have read the holy scriptures, and you know good and well that the scriptures can offer you way more than

enough knowledge to be saved through Christ. God imparts all scripture by way of inspiration, and he has tailored scriptures to be of help as far as doctrinal instruction, counsel, correction, and appropriate living so all who love God may be mature and ever ready to do what is right.

Peter

2 Ptr 1:19 - We have the more trustworthy word of prophecy accessible to us. We know prophecies of scripture did not come from the prophets themselves. We know prophecy of old did not come because the prophet begged for it. We also know prophecy of old came because the prophets spoke exactly what they were motivated to speak by God's spirit.

The Writer to the Hebrews

Heb 1:1 - On different occasions, using a number of ways, God spoke to our fathers in the past through the prophets, but now in these last days, God is communicating to us through his son, the one he elected to be the heir of all things, the one for whom he also established the ages.

Let's get real here! A document claiming to be from God, specifically one displaying the correctness of the Bible, doesn't need any stinking endorsement: it becomes a law unto itself.

Those who wrote it, as well as those they connected with, all trusted their stuff was coming from the Big Guy.

In that sense, their work is done.

It's now up to readers to decide.

A belief popular among many who'll say the Bible actually is the word of God is this: Bible writers were given great spiritual insights, yes, but they weren't necessarily as accurate as they should've been - not nearly as in-the-know as the hacks who are prostitutes for the scandal sheets sold at supermarket checkout counters.

Thinking that way only leads in one direction: "Whichever part of the Bible agrees with what I believe, that part is right. And if a part of the Bible does not agree with what I believe, ahm, that part is wrong, and it certainly wasn't written by someone in contact with God. Geeezz, those guys who wrote the Bible were only human, weren't they?!"

Sweet little belief, isn't it?

And what a super deal for the rest of us, since now we won't have to waste time trying to figure out what that foolish old Bible says, for the few who already know can tell us and we can get into things more suited to our true selves, like watching TV or going to the Mall.

Bible writers never denied they were human. Indeed, some said they were among the worst humanity had ever spawned. One thing they were all in agreement about was the prophecies they received came from God. None of them entertained doubts on the subject. They all did whatever they could to keep their humanity from soiling what they heard, too.

What was unrevealed was unrevealed because God decided not to let it be known. It didn't continue veiled because a prophet slipped past his or her limit on trance-time and had to zip back to reality.

Beliefs that suggest Bible writers were involved in things other than getting true words from the true God may enhance their popularity, but the same beliefs also destroy their credibility.

Dan 12:8 - I heard, but I did not understand.
I asked, Oh my Lord, when will these things end?
Return to your own path, Daniel, said the angel.
He also said, These words are shut up and sealed until the last days.

Jesus certainly believed the old testament, even down to the manner phrases were formed, for he debated about one word in **Psalms 82**.

Jn 10:31 - The Jews picked up stones and got ready to stone him.
Jesus asked, Why would you want to stone me? The Father has worked many mighty miracles through me. Which one of these wonders are you going to stone me for?
We do not want to stone you for doing miracles, the Jews answered. It is because of your blasphemy we will stone you. All you are is a man, but you walk around acting like a god.
Jesus said, Is it not written in your law that you are gods? So, if David told those who received God's word they were gods and if the scripture cannot be broken, how is it you call me, one the Father blessed and sent into the world, a blasphemer? All I mean is I am God's son. If a thing I do is not of the Father, then do not believe me, but if what I do is from God, then even though you do not want to believe what I say, you should believe because of what I do. This is the only way you will ever come to comprehend the truth. Also, it is the only way you will ever confess the Father is in me and I am in the Father.
As soon as he said it, the Jews began looking for a way to take him.
Once again, though, he stayed out of their clutches.

Paul did the same by hanging the outcome of a discussion concerning faith on a word appearing in **Genesis** in singular, not plural.

Gal 3:16 - Promises were given to Abraham and his seed, but the writer of *Genesis* did not select the word 'seeds', as if he was speaking about a multitude. He chose the word 'seed', as if he was speaking about one.

I am saying that one seed is the Christ.

I am saying, also, that the covenant ratified by God beforehand, when he vowed he would send us a Christ, can never be blocked out by a law which came four hundred and thirty years after. There is no way the law could make the promise of no effect, for if inheritance came by way of the law it would not be through promise, but God gave an inheritance to Abraham by promise because inheritance is not a thing you can work for and earn.

Undoubtedly, Jesus believed **Isaiah** and David were trustworthy, for he wasn't a bit shy about hammering Jewish leaders with their words.

Mt 21:42 - Jesus asked, Have you ever read this in scripture: The stone the builders rejected has now become the chief cornerstone?
Have you ever read this: The Lord did it, and it is marvelous in our eyes?
Why do you think I am telling you the Kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to those who bring forth fruit fit for God's kingdom?
The chief priests and Pharisees heard his parable.
They all knew he was talking about them.
They wanted to take him, but they feared the people. (**Mk 12:12**)
The people also knew Jesus used the parable against the Pharisees.

Mt 22:31 - Regarding a resurrection of dead ones, do you not know what God was telling you when he said he was Abraham's God? Our God is not a God of dead ones. As a result, Abraham, with the rest of the faithful, must be brought back to life.

Mk 7:8 - You toss aside God's commandments and conform yourselves to human traditions. You know you turn aside from God's commandments so you can follow things of your own liking. Moses said you must honor your father and mother, but your customs make God's word of no effect.

Jesus spun old testament strands into his yarns.

Lk 16:29 - Let them listen to Moses and the prophets.
Oh no, father Abraham, the rich man cried, but if someone appeared to them from the dead, they would repent.
Abraham replied, If they do not listen to Moses and the prophets, it is unlikely they will be persuaded even if someone rose from the dead.

22:35 - Jesus asked the disciples, When I sent you out with no supplies or money or extra shoes, did you lack anything?
No, nothing, they answered.
Jesus said, But now I am saying that anyone having money and provisions should take along both. And anyone having no sword should sell an extra garment and buy one.

I am telling you there is a scripture written concerning me that is yet to be fulfilled: He was accounted one of the lawbreakers. Do not be overly concerned at this, for things written about me will have an end.

Look, Lord, they said, we have two swords.

Jesus said, Two will be plenty.

In his letter to the **Romans**, Paul applied four passages out of the old testament to pound home the point that God had always planned to offer gentiles places in his kingdom.

Rom 15:8 - Christ was a minister to the Jews as far as the truth of God is concerned. Christ confirmed the promises to the fathers and made it possible for gentiles to also glorify God for his mercy.

It was written like this: I will confess you among the gentiles . . .

And like this: Rejoice, you gentiles, along with his people . . .

And more: Praise the Lord, all you gentiles. Praise him, all you people . . .

And finally, via Isaiah: A root will rise from Jesse. A root will rise up to rule the gentiles. And gentiles will trust him, too.

But almost all gentiles, as well as past and present Jews, have chosen to disbelieve the Bible. Almost all people on Earth have opted to rely on the flatulent flutings of the favorite fictions of their day.

That stuff has nothing to do with the Bible.

That stuff comes from gentiles who had the truth, then rejected it.

"But shouldn't writings from God contain warnings that gentiles would reject the truth after first receiving it?"

Absolutely so! That's why these writings are filled with verses about the apostasy which would surface after the apostles died.

An apostasia.

A falling away.

A pseudo-christian system of error that would rise from the ruins of pagan Rome and change the thinking of the whole world.

It was foretold by **Paul** and **Daniel** and **John**, to name three.

Acts 20:29 - I am persuaded that hateful wolves will enter in among you after I die, wolves having no mercy for the flock. From your own selves, also, they will arise, speaking terrible things, and drawing many disciples away after them.

Dan 7:7 - I saw a fourth beast in my dreams.

It was dreadful and terrible and very strong.

It had great iron teeth.

It devoured and broke to pieces every bit of the beast before it.

It stomped what was left with its feet.
It differed from the first beast because it had ten horns.
I watched the horns and saw a small horn rise up among them.
I saw this horn dig up three of the first horns by their roots.
I saw eyes like human eyes in this horn.
I saw a mouth that spoke terrible things in the horn, too.
I saw the horn make war with the chosen ones.
I also saw the horn celebrate victory over them. (20)

Daniel's interpretation follows.

Dan 7:24 - The ten horns are ten rulers that will rise.
After them, another ruler will rise, different from the first.
He will subdue three of the other rulers.
He will speak out against God (Ilai, Elyon, the Most High).
He will persecute God's chosen ones (Elyon's people).
He will think to change times and seasons.
He will be given power over the chosen ones.

8:9 - A little horn rose up among the notable horns.
It become very great, even waxing great against the host of heaven.
It hurled some of the stars to the ground and stamped on them.
It magnified itself against the Prince of the host.
The daily sacrifice was taken away.
The place of sanctuary was cast down.
The host was given over, for it had sinned against the daily sacrifice.
The little horn cast the truth to the ground.
The little horn continued to prevail and prosper.

23 - When the time of their kingdoms is at an end, and when punishment for sins is complete, a ruler with a very stern countenance will arise.
He will claim to understand hidden meanings.
He will be mighty in power, but not in and of himself.
He will destroy remarkably as he prevails and prospers.
He will overturn powerful ones, and also, the holy people.
His own wealth will increase through his investments.
He will magnify himself in his heart.
His plans of peace and plenty will overthrow many.
He will assume he can also defeat the Prince of princes.
He will be broken, though, and no one will even try to help him.

Rev 13:1 - I stood on a beach and saw a beast rise up from the sea.
The beast had seven heads and ten horns.
The horns all wore crowns.
There was a name of blasphemy written on each head.

The dragon gave the beast its power and influence.
The dragon also gave the beast its notable authority.
The beast had suffered a mortal wound to one of its heads.
The wound appeared to have healed, however.
The people of the world were in love with the beast.
The whole world honored the dragon that gave the beast its power.
The whole world honored the beast, too.
They exclaimed, Who is like the beast? Who could ever fight him?

The beast was given a mouth that spoke great lies and blasphemies.
The beast opened his mouth and blasphemed against God.
The beast disgraced the name and tabernacle of God.
The beast disgraced those who dwelled in the heavens, too.
The beast was given authority to make war with the chosen ones.
The beast was allowed to overcome them.
The beast was given power over all peoples, tongues, and nations.
Those who lived on the Earth feared the beast.
The ones whose names were not written in the book of life.
The book of the lamb slain from the beginning of the world.
Those who have ears, let them hear.

17:1 - One of the seven angels with the seven vials came close to me.
The angel spoke, saying, Follow me, and I will show you the decision.
The decision passed against the great whore.
The whore seated on many waters.
The whore with whom the kings of Earth have committed fornication.
The whore who has caused the people of Earth to be drunk.
The whore who has fed the people of Earth wine from her fornication.
The angel carried me away (by spirit) into a wilderness.
The angel showed me a woman sitting on a russet-colored beast.
The woman and the beast were both filled with names of blasphemy.
The beast had seven heads and ten horns.
The woman was dressed in colors of purple and scarlet.
The woman was adorned with gold, precious stones, and pearls.
The woman had a gold cup in her hand.
The cup was full of abominations and filthiness.
The cup held wine from the fruit of her fornication.
The words written on her forehead were a mystery.
They said, Great Babylon, Mother of Whores and Scum of the Earth.

I saw the woman was drunk on the blood of chosen ones.
I saw the woman was drunk on the blood of those slain for Jesus.
It was a sight that filled me with great awe.
The angel said, Why marvel? I will reveal the woman's identity.
I will also reveal the identity of the seven-headed beast carrying her.

15 - The angel said, You can see the whore sitting on many waters.
The waters are people, masses, nations, and tongues.
The ten horns on the beast represent ten kings.
The horns will grow to hate the whore.
They will cause her to become barren and naked.
They will eat her flesh and burn her with fire.
Theos (God) has put it in their hearts to work his will.
The kings will agree to turn their dominions over to the beast.
They will agree until all God's words have been accomplished.
The woman you saw is the great city that controls the rulers of Earth.

These prophecies disclose the origin and nature of the system of lies that would hunt down and terminate true believers.

The pagans who eventually took control of the chaos that rose during the fall of heathen Rome gave birth to the great whore.

The details can be located in all public libraries beneath the heading: Ancient History - Rome. Study them. It will seem as if **Daniel** and **John** knew exactly what would take place on the Earth from the time each got his visions until the return of Christ.

Once the word of truth was suppressed, the harlot was free to flood the Earth with her falsehood. That flood of lies is the **apostasy**. It has doomed this world by restraining Biblical truth as assuredly as the other flood obliterated Noah's world or as the rise of Rock & Roll washed away the world of Be-bop & Bunny-hop.

Apostasia (false-christianity) came from the same source as truth.
Because they emerged from the same womb, they're brothers.
One is good and one is bad.
Like Abel and Cain. Like Jacob and Esau. Like Jesus and Judas.

It's said that way before the apostles died, false doctrines began to gnaw away at whole congregations of believers, plus the treason and lies were coming in large part from within their own assemblies.

Rom 16:17 - I pray, brethren, you identify those who cause division.
Mark those who act in ways opposed to the doctrines you have learned.
Stay away from them, for they do not support our Lord Jesus Christ.
What they want is to stuff their own guts.
What they want is to use pleasing words and positive speeches to lie.
What they want is to deceive the hearts of the unstable.

1 Cor 1:10 - I pray you all say the same things.
I pray there are no differences between you.
I pray you are perfectly joined together in one mind and judgment.

3:3 - I hear there is envy, strife, and division among you presently.
I also hear you claim you are not fleshly.
How can you say you are not living according to human traditions?

11:18 - I hear disagreements break out among you, and I partly believe.
Are you not aware the reason warfare flares up among you is to make it
clear which of you will be approved?

Gal 1:6 - I am amazed that you have deviated so quickly from the gospel
which led you into the mercy of Christ.
I am also amazed that you have gone away to another gospel, one that is
not really a gospel at all.
People who distract you are just trying to undermine Christ's gospel, but
if I come to you myself, or even if an angel comes from heaven, to teach
you a gospel other than the gospel you have already accepted, let him be
accursed. As I just said, I will say again: those who come to teach you a
gospel that is different than the one you have already accepted must be
considered accursed.
They are false brethren.
They sneaked in secretly to spy out the freedom we have in Christ.
They only want to return us behind our backs into bondage. **(2:4)**

3:1 - You foolish Galatians, who bewitched you into not living the truth?
Are you really such idiots? You started in truth; do you now believe you
can gain perfection through flesh? Have you suffered for no reason?

4:8 - Do you recall that before you knew God you served things which in
kind were not from God? Now that you have come to know God, or can I
rather say, now that you have come to be known by God, why do you turn
back again to the useless and appalling things that should have been left
in the past? To me, it seems as if you want to return again into bondage.
You commemorate days, months, seasons, and years. And I am beginning
to fear I may have expended my energy on you in vain.

5:7 - You set out well. What made you go back? Why have you stopped
living the truth? None of this came from the one who called you.

Phil 3:17 - Follow my example, brethren, and take note of those who are
walking as I walk, for many are walking in error.
I have spoken of them often, and here I am speaking again in tears.
They are enemies of the cross of Christ.
Their end is destruction.
Their god is their belly.
They get great pleasure out of their shame.
They concern themselves with worldly things only.

Col 2:8 - Be mindful no one harms you through philosophy or some other kind of worthless lie that springs out of human traditions, the same kind of notions now in vogue in the world, none of which are from Christ.

2 Thes 2:3 - Let nobody mislead you at all: the falling away must happen before the man of sin is uncovered, the son of perdition that fights God and positions himself over everything which is worshipped, as if to show because he sits in the temple of God he and God are one.

You know what presently holds this unmasking back, preventing anything from being manifest before the proper time. The mystery of iniquity is already working. The power that presently holds it back will continue to hold it back until the day it is taken out of the way, then the lawless one will manifest himself, the lawless one who will be consumed by the spirit of the Lord's mouth, the one who will be overthrown by the brilliance of our Lord's appearance. This is the one whose look will resemble the look of our adversary (the Hebrew authorities) with all the power, signs, and false wonders. He is the one responsible for all the lies and ungodliness running rampant among the people heading for ruin, those who would not accept the truth in love, those who will never be saved.

For this reason, God is going to send a strong delusion upon them, and it will cause them to believe the lies.

God is doing this so the ones who refused to believe the truth, but took pleasure in unrighteousness instead, can be damned.

15 - My brethren, you must stand fast, holding tightly to the traditions you were taught, whether by word or in one of my letters.

3:6 - Brethren, I implore you in the name of our Lord Jesus, the Christ, to keep yourselves apart from the ones who walk in an undisciplined way, the ones who act in a manner not in line with my teachings.

14 - Those who do not observe what I have written in this letter should be identified in writing. Do not support them in fellowship; rather, have hope they might feel ashamed.

1 Tim 1:3 - I warned you to prevent particular brothers from preaching other doctrines. I warned you to have nothing to do with fables or with endless genealogies, for they only start arguments. Most of all, they do not relate to the godly learning that comes through the truth.

4:1 - Many will leave the faith in the last days.

They will follow seductive stories and doctrines of daimonia (demons).

They will speak in hypocrisy.

They will speak as if their consciences were seared by hot irons.

They will forbid some to marry.

They will enforce orders forbidding certain foods, foods God gave to be eaten in gratitude by all who know and love the truth.

6:3 - Those who teach what does not agree with the beneficial words of the Lord Jesus Christ, which are in agreement with godliness, are proud. Since they know nothing, all they do is brawl and debate over words, and all they produce is envy, conflict, blasphemy, evil thinking and every kind of meaningless thing that affects men with wicked minds, men without a drop of truth in them, men who assume gain is godliness. I am telling you to stay away from all such people.

2 Tim 3:1 - The final days will be full of danger, for humankind will be in love with itself. Humans will be envious, boastful, conceited, without the truth, disobedient to parents, unappreciative, unholy, lacking all inherent affection, trucebreakers, liars, with no self-control, cruel, haters of the ones who do what is good, traitors, headstrong, highminded, worshippers of pleasure more than of God. They will show a style of godliness, but it will give them no power. Stay away from them. They are the ones which steal into houses, take captive foolish women, fill them full of imprudent notions, and lead them off through a variety of cravings, women who are always learning, but never come to a knowledge of the truth.

13 - Ungodly people and seducers will become worse and worse, lying and being lied to, but you must keep on minding what you already learned and received, for a day will come when they will not tolerate proper doctrine. And because they will have ears itching to hear only things they approve, they will recruit teachers who will say only what they are told to say and they will all turn their ears from the truth and embrace lies.

Titus 3:9 - Avoid foolish questions, genealogies, contentions, and battles over the law, since they are unprofitable. Really, they are worth nothing. Stay away from all who have been confirmed to be heretics after a first and second warning, knowing these apostates have allowed themselves to be overthrown by sin, thereby dooming themselves.

2 Ptr 2:1 - There were lying prophets among the people of Israel. Therefore, you can be sure there will also be false teachers among you. They will put out lies, even denying the Lord who redeemed them. This will bring swift destruction upon them. There will be many who follow their disgusting ways. They will betray the truth, for they will care for themselves alone. They will use lying words to make merchandise of you.

3:3 - Cynics will appear in the last days. They will be skeptics who do only what they want.

1 Jn 2:18 - You were told that in the final times the antichrist (another Christ) would be manifest: look around and you will see many antichrists. This is how we know we are living in the last days.

Those who teach other christs (anti-christs) left us so it would be plain they were never actually part of our group. If they had been part of us they would still be among us, but they left so no one imagined they were truly members of our assembly.

22 - Who are liars but those who will not confess Jesus really is Christ? All who reject the true Christ are followers of a different christ.

Do not trust every preacher, but verify their doctrines to see whether they are from God, since many false prophets are now in the world.

They are followers of the antichrist. **(4:1)**

They belong to the one you heard was going to appear in the world.

They are at ease in the world because they talk the world's talk and the world understands them. We are of God. People who know God know us, but people without knowledge of God do not even hear us. It is the only way we know who has the spirit of truth and who has the spirit of error.

2 Jn 7 - Many deceivers are presently found in the world.

They are frauds who do not agree Jesus Christ was human.

They are liars and belong to an anti-christ.

Jude 3 - I decided, too quickly it seems, I should write to you about the hope we share, but I found it was much more necessary I write and urge you to passionately defend the faith once delivered to the chosen, since there are specific people who have come in deceitfully, people picked by God in the past to suffer this condemnation, ungodly ones who only want to transform God's mercy into excess. These people not only reject the one Lord God, but they also reject the Lord Jesus Christ.

People who think the truth made a comeback after the apostles died should seriously contemplate brain surgery. Believers found in the Bible were nothing like those claiming to believe today. Believers found in the Bible attended no picnics and parties. They knew no Popes and pagentry. Believers in the Bible were much too busy trying to keep the truth alive, as well as hoping to salvage their own skins in the process.

A first wave of traitors (false-christianity's "Early Church Fathers") crashed ashore before all the true apostles had died. The imaginings of these apostates were used to lay a foundation on which false-christians would erect all their rituals and doctrines.

As real apostles died off (mostly from murder) the "fathers" veered away from the truth, charting a course toward more exhilarating places, off to the legal, civil, and economic lands just over the horizon.

The apostates also dabbled in Science, Art, and Philosophy.

Their lives turned into sweet, sweet dreams when Scholars and other puffed-up pagans even pretended to listen.

The next wave of apostasy washed up the "patriarchs" that appeared in the second and third centuries. It included pseudo-christians such as Ignatius, Porphyry, Irenaus, Justin (that old martyr) Clement, Tertullian, Polycarp, Cyprian, Origen, and Eusebius, to name too many.

A flotilla of false-christian flotsam flailed away on the waters of the fourth and fifth centuries. Included were "fathers" like Ambrose, Cyril, Athanasius, Jerome, Basil, John Chrysostom, and that patron of rational thinking, Augustine, to name too many more.

The output of these "fathers" is gargantuan, and it's been preserved, hoarded and treasured through all the years. It can presently be found at many public libraries. Wade through some of this crap, just be ready to be amazed at how far away it is from basic Bible truth. And also, get ready to marvel at how little the pseudo-christians who love it care.

Daniel and **John** both predicted that the lies from those who turned their backs on the truth would morph themselves into a system of error that would give birth to the falsehoods which fill this whole Earth.

Both prophets revealed that the same ones who had loved the harlot, the ones who gave her their power, would eventually turn on her.

Could the following be considered turning on someone . . ?

Who is the antichrist but the one sitting in the house of God, he who claims he should reign over the whole church? Who, since the start, has dared to pronounce himself master of all the church but the pope alone? I am convinced popedom is the antichrist, the very seat of Satan.

Martin Luther (1483 - 1546)

Paul, the apostle, says the man of sin will rule over the church and he will place himself above worship of God. I also agree that no heresy has risen or will rise with which this description more truly agrees than that of the papal dominion. The antichrist is the Roman pope and his stooges.

Phillip Melanchthon (1497 - 1560)

The persecuting horn of the fourth Empire (**Daniel 7**) is the one that is known as the man of sin or antichrist, representing the Roman papacy. Of this truth I have no more doubt (that Roman popedom and its leader, its pope, is the man of sin Paul was talking about) than that Jesus Christ suffered under Pontius Pilate in Jerusalem.

John Knox (1505 - 1572)

The arrogance of the antichrist Paul denotes is that he sits in God's temple as if to say he is God himself. Thus, the incomparable majesty of God is assumed by mortal man. That Roman pontiff has impudently taken on himself all the most sacred privileges of God and Christ. If the truth was known, he is the head and standard bearer of an evil dominion. I say he is not a minister of Christ; rather, he is the antichrist.

John Calvin (1509 - 1564)

"Who were these guys?"

The answer: they were rebels, mavericks, leaders of cliques.

They were the false-christians who became modern Protestants.

They couldn't take the abuse of the prevailing religion of their day.

They were perfect daughters of Babylon, their harlot mother.

They were harlettes.

"Protestant" is believed to have first been hung on the supporters of Martin Luther.

During **1529 AD**, Martin publicly protested the powers and practices of the pope, and of popedom itself.

"Protestant" now represents all non-catholic pseudo-christians.

Luther is acknowledged as the first rung on the ladder of Protestant "reform". Martin became a catholic priest in **1507**; then after, he hired on as a teacher of theology at the university of Wittenburg, remaining a catholic until **1517**.

Luther was severely jolted when he learned of the practice of selling indulgences, or "pay-for-pray" religion. Martin was eventually kicked out by the harlot because he wouldn't cease rocking her Roman boat. Luther gave a moving speech in his own defense before the diet (ruling body) of Worms, and later published his beliefs in the best-selling *Confession of Augsburg*. Marty lived long enough to see most of his principles become practices, and just as he reached the top of his mountain . . .

He died.

Melanchthon was Martin's co-rebel. Phillip popped up in **1519 AD** as a promoter of Luther's doctrines. Phillip's name was familiar through all of Europe, not as the result of anything significant he'd done, but simply because he elbowed his way into the intrigue surrounding Luther's Augsburg confession, and . . .

He died.

John Knox, the Scottish religious reformer and historian, conned the Scots into buying protestism during Queen Mary's stretch on the throne. Johnny's bon ravings had all Scotland roused up in protest, and . . .

He died.

Calvin was another pseudo-christian reformer. He was very popular in France for a time, but was eventually expelled for refusing to soften his personal views. He moved to Geneva, jacked it up a notch, and . . .

As the others, he also died.

The only actual distinction between Calvin and Luther was that Calvin believed in predestination.

"What's predestination?"

The answer: it's the not-all-that-startling concept God knows everything the future holds so a person can't do too much to change the outcome of his or her life today. Seriously, that's it.

The glass-is-half-empty gang said, "Why do anything?"

The glass-is-half-full gang said, "All the more reason to do the things that show we believe as God believes."

The gang which did not equate things to the level of a liquid in a glass said, "How dumb! Who cares?"

Calvin's insight gained support from Scotland's Covenanters, France's Huguenots, and England's Puritans, three gangs of Protestants that would cause their harlot mother many fits in the future.

Before protestism came around, the harlot had birthed no daughters. After being raped and impregnated by the unholy sputum of life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness (the latest and greatest garbage hugged on by persons who'd suffered abuse from their monarchs, lords and priests forever) the whore brought forth a giggle of little gals.

Each was a dear child to behold.

On the inside, though, they were just like their mother.

Do you wonder if the protesters above spent any time at all trying to identify Babylon's daughters?

Do you wonder about Babylon's daughters?

Do you wonder if they were identified in the **Revelation**?

Do you wonder if they are Hopis? Hindus? Hottentots?

Didn't protesters call the Roman church the harlot of Babylon?

Didn't they say the pope was the antichrist?

Did they ever pause and wonder why God chose a symbol like mother-daughters, and not boss-employees, wife-husbands, or master-slaves?

Did they ever stop to reflect that God might have chosen the symbol of a mother and her daughters because he hoped readers would identify mother and daughters by similarities, not differences?

Protestants overlooked these apparent things because they were far too busy pointing fingers at the pope to realize there was but one major difference between their creed and the creed of Rome.

The difference was this: the pope didn't control the protesters.

Protestants hadn't been around long enough to man-handle their dim-witted masses into coughing up enough bucks to construct the great and glorious church buildings their mammy was throwing up all over the place, but it wouldn't take too long. The Greek Orthodox aunty had abandoned the family ties way before these latest dissidents, and she was erecting some really choice chapels in her effort to out-pope the Romans.

"Are there any similarities between the Greek and Roman lies?"

The answer: Greek apostates, like Roman apostates, trust in transubstantiation, a wonder that supposedly occurs during the worship service, when tiny slices of bread transform themselves into tiny (real) slices of Christ's body. These slices are then consumed by the worshippers. It's an obvious illusion, totally disregarding the fact there's not one verse in the Bible to support it. Besides, it sounds like something dreamed up by the Hottentots.

The harlot says the virgin Mary and saints can put in a good word for believers - after the proper love-offering, that is.

The harlot assures her brood that prayers to the virgin are specially effective, since Mary is God's mother.

The harlot says God is a Good Boy, one who always obeys his mom.

The authority of priests to absolve sins of dear souls in their flocks is another fib fondled by false-christian Greeks and Romans.

The Greeks made a good move when they rejected being ruled by the Roman's regime. Then they spoiled the whole thing by substituting their own guy, making him the head of all their churches.

All they did was create another pope.

Finally, Greeks allow their priests to marry, unlike priests wed to the jealous Roman hussy.

Protestants and Greeks differ in no meaningful way from the mother. The only real difference is in appearance, much as the variance between a towny-girl and her country cousin: the clothing and the way they speak differ, but these girls are the same within. On the inside, they're blood, bone, and flesh identical.

And the city-girl and her country cousins are as drunk as they can be from swilling the blood of people who chose to die rather than to live on in opposition to the truth.

That's what the Bible says, anyway.

Most present-day false-christians assume the antichrist in the Bible is their favorite fiend, their old friend the Devil, the one they just love to hate.

It's a belief that contradicts the Bible.

It conflicts, since the Greek word '**anti**' doesn't mean "to oppose", "be the enemy of", or "stand up to". Because of this, none of the five verses where the term "antichrist" was actually used can possibly signify beings or things opposed to Christ.

Mt 2:22 - When Joseph heard Archelaus was ruling in Judea in place of (anti) his father, Herod, he was afraid to go there.

Joseph wasn't full of dread because Archelaus had set up a throne in opposition to the throne of his father, Herod. This would've produced a civil war, a colossal reason all by itself not to round up Mary and the boy and head back home to the promised land.

5:38 - You know it was written this way: 'An eye for (anti) an eye, and a tooth for (anti) a tooth'. But I tell you not to oppose (anthistemi) evil.

Jesus didn't presume the Law of Moses demanded God-fearing Jews to stand with their faces smooshed up against the faces of those who'd done them dirt, gnashing teeth and rubbing eyes together, a much more compelling reason than civil war to avoid the promised land.

Anti means to "substitute for" or "put in the place of" another.

Anthistemi is a word Greeks used to mean "opposed to" or "against". It was translated as "oppose" in the last verse above.

If pseudo-christendom's concept of Christ's antagonist is true, then their boogeyman should be called the "Anthistemichrist".

Because **anti** is used to stand for a person or thing substituted for a different person or thing, it's only appropriate that false-christians are considered "anti-christians" from here on.

They'll appear as such in this book, anyway.

They substitute lies and fables for Bible truth, don't they?

Then there's no name that suits them better.

Today's anti-christians can barely wait for their fantastic fraud, the naughty old Satan, that Terrible One, to appear as an human in the final days, assume a power-position on the Earth, let it out that he's the head of a new global government, then strike up a deal with the Jews.

They'd better go easy on this one, since it sounds a lot like what the true Christ will do when he returns.

Why?

Before learning why the Bible was written, it's necessary to become acquainted with the source and inspiration behind the scrolls . . .

GOD

YHWH is a word Hebrews used to stand for their God.

Most English Bible translations employ "the Lord" to represent the name **YHWH**, but "the Lord" comes as near to signifying the God of the scrolls as "something good" comes to signifying banana-coconut-cream pie.

It's in ball-park, sure, but way out there in the cheap seats.

God picked the name **YHWH** to memorialize a plan and purpose regarding Earth and the people living on it. The name not only proclaims **YHWH** is the "existing one", it also proclaims **YHWH** is the "one who will be".

YHWH can mean any being, whether angel or human, provided that being manifests divine authority, purpose, and power.

The God revealed in the Bible isn't just the God of the Hebrews.

The Bible claims the Hebrew God is the primary source and sustainer of Earth's present condition, Earth's only God.

Acts 17:22 - Paul stood before the crowd at the Areopagus, and said, Hear this, you people of Athens: I will say you have become far too superstitious, for as I walked by, I saw your worship services and the altar inscribed with the slogan: 'To the Unknown God'. The Deity you ignorantly revere this way is the same God I am telling you about.

He is the God that arrayed our cosmos and everything in it.

He is Lord of heaven and Earth and he cannot live in houses built by humans.

He has no wish to be worshipped through figures made by human hands.

He needs nothing from humans.

He is the one that gives humans life, breath, and everything else.

He is the only Deity.

He is the one that formed all nations of the world from one human.

He is the one that populated the face of the planet.

He is the one that laid out their days beforehand.

He also established the boundaries of all their lands.

He did this for the sake of those who care to find him, that they may have a chance to truly find him, although he is not far from any of us, since it is in him we live and move and have our being. Your own poets certainly agree, for they also say we are sprung from God. So if we truly have sprung from God, how can we think the Godhead is a thing like the gold, silver and stone icons formed by human hands, the icons based on fantasies which come out of human minds?

God chose to ignore these displays of ignorance in the past, but now he has ordered all people in every area to repent, for he has already picked a time when he will rule the whole Earth in righteousness by a man of his choosing, and he proved it when he raised that man from the dead.

Most of the people in the crowd laughed when Paul spoke of a resurrection, but some who heard believed.

Isaiah says the job description below was produced for Messiah, the prophet, deliverer, and king God promised to send Israel.

By accepting the position, Jesus said he was God's son.

By accepting the position, Jesus said God's son had come.

By accepting the position, Jesus said he was Israel's new leader.

Is 61:1 - The spirit of the Lord God (Yahweh Elohim) is upon me, for he has anointed (christ-ened) me to preach good news (the gospel) to those who are meek, to heal ones whose hearts are broken, to proclaim liberty for those who are captive and freedom for those held in prison. Yahweh has also appointed me to announce the day of his great pleasure.

Lk 4:19 - The book of Isaiah, the prophet, was handed to Jesus. Jesus unrolled the scroll, discovering he had come to the passage where Isaiah enscribed, The spirit of the Lord has come upon me and anointed (christ-ened) me to preach the gospel to the meek, to the ones who love and tremble at his word, to cure those who have broken hearts, to bring freedom to captives, those who are oppressed by their own evil natures, to return sight to the blind, to show forth the truth, and to declare the time of liberty for all who are being exploited. God has also appointed me to proclaim the day of his great vengeance. Jesus returned the scroll to the minister and sat down. All eyes were on him when he said, The scripture is being fulfilled today in your sight.

Jesus only wanted to send the following message: The son of God has finally arrived. And now, heaven (the Jewish authorities) and Earth (the Hebrew people) are both going to experience a royal shaking.

Jesus stopped right when the prophecy was getting interesting.

Just look what he didn't read . . .

Is 6:12 - . . . and to publicize the day of the retribution of our God. The Lord has anointed me to console people who mourn, to bring comfort to people who grieve in Zion, to award them a crown of beauty for ashes, oil of joy for mourning, and a garment of praise for weariness. And they will be virtuous trees, planted by God to display his glory.

Did the people of Jesus' home town greet the news with joy?

Did they begin dancing around, praising God for his mercy?

Lk 4:28 - Before Jesus was finished speaking, the people grew so upset at his words they rose as one and hustled him out of town, then dragged him to the edge of the cliff atop which their city was built. Once there, the people fully intended to hurl him over, but Jesus passed through them and left the area.

There's no chance Jesus won't carry out the remaining tasks when he returns. To be sure, there's no cause for him to return at all other than to finish the job he was appointed to do. The work Jesus is slated to do is to accomplish the final provision of God's plan and purpose. That final provision is to save Earth and a remnant of its people.

God's plan is proceeding now, and it'll elevate certain elect humans in due time into positions of power and authority over Earth.

If you doubt it, you could do yourself a large favor by examining the divine names as they appear in the Bible.

The names you should examine are the names Hebrews gave God.

The names you should ignore are names English translators chose to put in place of the originals.

"Why ignore the English names?"

The answer: because names picked to signify God by translators are in no way connected to the Deity of the Bible.

Translators use these names because they know no better.

They know no better because they don't want to know better.

People who do want to know better are urged to speculate why those who translate the scrolls stick God with the following titles.

LORD of Hosts

Wherever the title **LORD of Hosts** is found in the old testament, the Hebrew words from which it came will always be **Yahweh Tz'vaoth**.

In plain English: "one who will be forces".

Normal minds respond with three questions . . .

First: What or who will be the forces God has or will put in a field?

Second: When and why has or will God put forces in a field?

And third: What field?

A fourth question pops into above-normal minds.

A fourth question which asks: Where were the minds of the men who translated the King James version, that they came up with three English non-words like "LORD of Hosts" to render that couple of extra-ordinary Hebrew words **Yahweh Tz'vaoth**?

LORD God of Hosts

A similar blunder can be found where translators render the Hebrew phrase **Yahweh Elohim Tz'voth** with "LORD God of Hosts".

A better rendering is "one who will be the power behind forces".

Again, familiar questions pop into normal minds . . .

One: Who or what will be the power God brings into play to prime the forces he puts in a field?

Two, Three, and Four: Where? When? Why?

Above-normal minds are wondering if translators think at all.

LORD God

If those renderings are questionable, what about the following?

What about the divine name mentioned most often?

What about **Yahweh Elohim**?

Anybody having at least two brain cells to bang together knows these words can be rendered into English as "he who will be mighty ones".

How many brain cells did translators of the King James Bible come up with to bang together? Apparently, they found only one cell. It appears like that because they translated **Yahweh Elohim** as "LORD God".

"LORD God!? Why would they do that?"

Funny how the same question keeps popping up, hmmm?

The Almighty

Everywhere the title "the Almighty" is seen in English Bibles, it was put there to render the Hebrew word **shaddai** or the Greek word **pantokrator**. **Pantokrator** is a compound word formed out of **panto**, signifying "in all ways" or "every" and **krator**, meaning "energy" or "force".

Writers of Greek scrolls related **pantokrator** to God whenever they wished to say the Big Guy possessed ultimate power; they didn't employ it because they imagined God was thrilled to hear humans sigh, "Ohhhh! Our Big and Strong One!"

It doesn't require a genius to realize that any God worthy of wearing the title must be omnipotent. Many translators of the scrolls have used "omnipotent" to render **pantokrator** the time it was applied to the Deity in **Revelation 19:6** not long after the whore of Babylon is destroyed and those who are still alive shout, "Ohhhh! Happy Day!"

Shaddai, a Jewish word signifying "mighty one" is derived from **shed**. Ancients not only used **shed** to indicate gods with the ability to destroy, but gods who could also preserve.

This is true power, all the power anyone should ever want.

Shed can be found two times in the Hebrew scrolls.

Each time **shed** was translated, it was with the English word "devils", but the pagan deities and images mentioned by the old testament books are nothing like anti-christian "devils".

Heathen idols are real things, though they're only rock and wood.
Anti-christianity's superstition regarding "devils" is fantastical.
It's nothing but nutty notions knocking around in numb noggins.
The rock and wood carvings of the heathen were **shed**.
They should be familiar to most people.
They're women sporting chests with six breasts.
They're part-human and part-animal creatures.
They dangle gnarly old clubs from gnarly old hands.
They're something to behold.
They all have chips on their shoulders, too.
The Deity of the Bible has no breasts, but he swings one huge club.
The Deity of the Bible wears a very large chip on his shoulder, also,
for people who prefer pagan fables over truth.

God Almighty

El Shaddai is often related to the God of the Bible.

Translators use the English words "God Almighty", wanting to display their understanding of the Hebrew's God. Again, however, all they show is the depth of their ignorance.

Bible writers used **El Shaddai** whenever they wanted to say God was "the glory and strength behind it all".

1 Tim 6:14 - Jesus will reveal the Big Guy, the King above kings and the Lord above lords. He will manifest the one that is undying, the one living in light no human may approach, the one no humans have seen or ever will see, the one in whom is the glory and power of the ages.

Most High God

"Most High God" was translated from **El Elyon**.

"Most High God" isn't far off, not as long as a reader is aware of the meaning of the Hebrew words from which it came.

El Elyon actually means "the source and force behind it all".

EL

The word **El** means "power", "force", or "energy".

The Hebrews used the same word to denote their Big Guy.

The Hebrews used **El** because that's what the God of the Bible is.

The Bible God has to do with divine desire, direction, and drive.

There's no fire-flinging, brimstone-breathing behemoth.

There's no grey-headed old geezer.

There aren't three different persons who think they're one.
The God of the Bible isn't primarily an entity.
The God of the Bible is desire, direction, and drive manifested.
This force becomes personal when it's evident in a person.

The beings who manifest the power of **EI** can be (and they often are) taken for God. That may be how the misunderstandings began. That, as well as the sightlessness of Bible translators, together with the naiveté of their readers, might be why so obvious a truth has eluded so many.

The Hebrew word **EI** can be seen around two hundred and fifty times in verses concerning ultimate spirit-power: the Big Guy, if you will.
A number of these appearances follow.

Dt 32:1 - Listen, oh heavens.
Let me speak.
Hear, oh Earth, the words of my mouth as I utter the name of the Lord.
Let greatness be attributed to our God, our rock.
His performance is flawless and all his ways are perfect.
He is an EI of truth, having no evil, but fair and upright instead.
Is he not your father?
Is he not the one who bought you?
Is the Lord not the very one who created and established you?

Josh 3:9 - Joshua spoke to the seed of Israel, and said, Come and hear words from the Lord, your God. This is how you will know the living EI is with you and that he will oust those who are now in the land . . .

11 - Look, the ark of God's covenant, the ark of the owner of the entire planet, will cross the river Jordan before you.

22:22 - The Lord is EI of Elohim (might of the mighty ones).
Our Lord, EI of Elohim, he knows. Now Israel will also know. If what we have done is a rebellion or sin against the Lord, destroy us right now.

2 Sam 22:29 - You are my light, oh Lord.
It is my God who illuminates the darkness.
It is my God who enables me to overcome any invading force.
It is my God who enables me to leap any barrier.
In so far as EI, his way is a perfect way, for his words have been tried.
It is EI who protects people who trust in him.
Is there an EI other than the Lord?
Is there a rock other than the Lord?
It is EI who is my strength and power.
It is EI who guides me along the proper path.

Neh 9:30 - You tolerated them for many years and testified to them by your spirit in the prophets. Since they would not listen, you turned them over to the people of the nations. Still, because you have so much mercy, you did not allow them to be entirely destroyed, nor did you desert them. You are a most generous and kindhearted El. As a result, our Elohim, our great and mighty and awesome El that keeps covenant and mercy, we beg you not to think of the troubles that have come on our kings, our princes, our priests, our prophets, our fathers, and all your people, from the time of Assyria's kings to the present, to be insignificant before you. You are completely justified to have sent all these terrible things on us, however, for you only did what was right. We are the ones who were wrong.

Job 8:1 - Bildad, the Shuhite, answered, How much longer will you go on speaking like this?

How long will words roar from your mouth like some great wind?

Would El change judgment?

Would Shaddai alter righteousness?

If your children sinned against him, and if he killed them as they sinned, and if you sought for El in the meantime, and if you prostrated yourself before Shaddai, and if you actually were clean and upright, would he not have returned your call by now?

Psa 5:4 - You are not an El who is pleased by evil.

You will not allow those who are wicked to appear in your presence.

You will not allow those who are ignorant to stand in your sight.

You hate those who do evil.

You will destroy those who tell lies.

You, oh Lord, hate all blood-soaked and lying humans.

7:8 - The Lord will judge his people.

So try me, Lord, according to my righteousness.

And test me, Lord, according to whatever integrity is in me.

Do not permit the wickedness of evil ones to continue; rather, establish those you have justified.

The righteous Elohim will try the hearts and reins.

The Elohim are my defense.

Those who care for the upright of heart are my salvation.

The Elohim support the righteous, but El opposes evil ones every day.

42:2 - My soul thirsts for my Elohim.

My soul thirsts for the true El.

My soul thirsts for the hour when I will appear before my Elohim.

My tears are my only nourishment day and night.

And all who are around me keep inquiring, So where is your Elohim?

9 - Sometimes I question my El, my rock, asking, Did you forget me?
I ask, Why do I get so frustrated when my enemies insult me?
I ask, Why am I shaken to the bone when they mock me?
And all day long they inquire, So where is your Elohim?

81:8 - Listen to me, my people. I promise you, oh Israel, if you obey me
I will never allow a strange el to be seen among you.
I promise you will never be forced to bow before an alien el.

94:1 - Our Lord, our El, to whom revenge belongs.
Our El, the one to whom revenge belongs . . . show yourself!

95:3 - The Lord is a great El, a king high above all other elohim.

6 - Come, let us worship.
Let us bow down.
Let us kneel before the Lord who formed us.
We have the Lord for our Elohim.
We are the people of his pasture, the sheep of his hand.

139:7 - Your thoughts are so precious to me, oh El.
How great is the sum of them!

23 - Search me, oh El. Judge my heart. Test me. Try my thinking.

Is 45:20 - Gather yourselves. Congregate here, you who have come out
of the nations, you who are lacking knowledge, you who arrived toting all
your carved wooden images, you who pray to an el that cannot save you.
Warn them. Bring it to their attention. Let them decide.
Who predicted this from ancient times?
Who predicted this long ago?
Was it not I, the Lord?

There is no other Elohim.
There is no other righteous El.
There is no one else who can save you.
There is no one else but me.
Turn to me and be delivered all the ends of Earth, for I am the only El.
There is no one else.
This I have sworn myself.
The word has gone forth from my mouth in all truth.
The word I have spoken will surely come to pass.

Then every knee will bow before me.
Then every tongue will swear loyalty.

Everyone will admit the Lord is the only source of righteousness.
Everyone will admit the Lord is the only source of power.
Everyone will come to the Lord.
Even those who were incensed with him will be ashamed, for the seed of Israel will receive justification and honor in the Lord.

Hos 1:10 - The sum of Israel's seed will be as sand on the shore.
It will never be counted or measured.
In the same place they were told, You are not my people, the children of Israel will hear it said, You are descended from the living El.

Eloah and **elah** were also brought into English as "God".

A better choice would've been "powerful one".

Yahweh is an ultimate **Elah**, but any being or thing displaying ultimate power, if only in the minds of ignorant followers, is also an **eloah**.

2 Chr 32:10 - Sennacherib, king of Assyria, asked, In what do you place your trust that you would stay in Jerusalem during a siege?
Is Hezekiah not misleading you?
Is he not asking you to offer yourselves up to dying by hunger and thirst when he says the Lord, your God, promises he will save you from the king of Assyria?
Is he not the same Hezekiah who destroyed all the altars of your Lord?
Is he not the one who tore down all your Lord's high places?
Is he not the one who forced Judah and Jerusalem to sin by saying, Now you will only sacrifice upon this altar, and this altar is also the only place you will now burn incense?
Do you not know what I and my fathers did to people in other nations?
Did the elohim of those people in any way save their lands from my hand?
Can you name any eloah from any of the countries my fathers completely destroyed that was able to save his people from my hand?
So why do you believe your elohim is going to save you?

16 - Sennacherib's servants said even worse things against our Lord.
They said things against our Elohim, and also his supporter, Hezekiah.
Letters were dispatched by Sennacherib, too, in which he railed against our Lord, the Elohim of Israel.
He reviled the Lord, and said, Like the elohim of other nations could not save their people from me, likewise, Hezekiah's elohim will also not save his people from my hand, either.
With loud voices, they shouted in the Hebrew's own tongue to those who were on top of Jerusalem's wall, wanting to intimidate and confuse them, hoping to seize the city like that. They talked about Jerusalem's Elohim as they talked about elohim from other nations, as if Israel's Elohim was no more than a figment of human imagination.

Because of this, king Hezekiah and Isaiah, the prophet, the son of Amoz, prayed, and called out to heaven. And the Lord sent his angel to destroy all the mighty and brave men, as well as all the commanders and officers who were in the camp of the Assyrian king.

Sennacherib retreated to his homeland in disgrace, and when he entered the house of his elohim, his own children killed him with their swords.

Ps 114:7 - Tremble, oh Earth, at the manifestation of the Lord.
Tremble, oh Earth, at the presence of the Eloah of Jacob.

139:19 - Without doubt, you will destroy the wicked, oh Eloah.
So get away from me all you bloody humans!

Jer 10:1 - Hear what the Lord says to you, oh house of Israel.
Do not embrace the customs of other people, says the Lord.
Do not be unsettled by signs in the heaven, either, even though those of other nations are terrified by them.
What these people practice is no more than illusions. For example, some use an axe and chop down a tree in the forest, which is just the labor of the hands of a man at work, then they trim it with silver and gold.
They affix it upright with nails and hammers so it does not topple over.
The thing stands there straight as a palm, saying nothing.
The thing is trucked from place to place, for it cannot go on its own.
The thing should not impress you.
There is nothing in it able to bring evil.
There is also nothing in it that can bring good.

You are like no one else, oh Lord.
You are splendid, oh Lord.
Your name is awash in power.
Who would not be awed by you, oh King of nations, since this you are due, and since among the wise in the world and in all their kingdoms they have nobody who can compare to you? Also, they are total brutes and foolish, for the things they value are no more than empty concepts.
Silver, hammered into plates, is imported from Tarshish.
Gold is brought in from Ophaz.
This is all just the effort of the laborer's hand, nothing but the product of metal-formers. The robes of the priests are blue and purple, but the garments are no more than the output of those skilled with a needle.

The Lord is the true Elohim, the living Elohim, a king in all ages.
The Earth shakes when the Lord becomes angry.
The nations cannot handle his wrath.
This is what you will say to them: the elah (gods) which did not establish the heaven and Earth will vanish from under the Earth and heaven.

Dan 2:11 - The Chaldeans answered the king, and said, No one on Earth can reveal the dream our king has put before us. Because that is a fact, no ruler, leader, or aristocrat has ever asked for such a revelation from magicians, astrologers, or Chaldeans. The king is asking us to do what is not possible. No one can supply the king with this interpretation except for the eloah, and they do not even live here with mortals. When they said that, the king grew angry. Later, he became completely furious and ordered that all the wise men of Babylon be slaughtered.

3:12 - Certain Jews, people you placed over all the territorial affairs of Babylon, oh king, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego by name, reject the orders you issued by declining to worship your eloah. And also, they will not bow down before your golden image. Nebuchadnezzar was caught up in a great wrath and fury. He ordered them to bring Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego to him.

11:36 - This one will do whatever he wishes.
He will exalt and magnify himself over every el.
He will even speak out against the El of els.
He will prosper until atonement has been made for the outrage.
He will prosper until everything that was determined is accomplished.
He will not honor his father's eloah.
He will not respect the desire for women.
He will honor no elohim, but he will consider himself above all.
He will have no regard for the true El in his realm.
He will honor an eloah of power instead.
He will honor an eloah of which his fathers had no knowledge.
He will adorn it with gold and silver and every other valuable thing.
He will make all people worship his eloah through force of arms.
He will continue the worship of his eloah.
He will aggrandize his eloah's reputation.
He will decide who rules over the masses.
He will sell their lands for his own profit.

ELOHIM

Elohim stands for "powerful one".
Most often, it was translated by the English non-word "God".
It isn't all that far from truth, for it was **Elohim** who manipulated the planet and placed humans on it.
It was **Elohim** who said, Let us form the human in our own image.
It was **Elohim** who appeared to Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, Isaiah, Ezekiel, Solomon, and Josiah, to name a few.
The Big Guy hasn't been seen by anyone.
The **Elohim** handle all the personal appearances.

"But what if some poor human sees **Elohim** going about God's business and he thinks they're something else . . . like men from Mars?"

Beg pardon? If humans become what they eat, is it odd to think that humans see what they want to see and think what they want to think? A person who eats, sees, and believes things that aren't true and proper is bound to have problems somewhere along the line. Tough, isn't it?

In verses below, **elohim** was not translated and that's the best way to handle certain alien words, for it lets readers attach their own meanings and weight while they read.

"angels" (1)

Ps 8:5 - What is it about humans that makes you aware of them?
What is one of humanity's sons that you would even notice him?
Still, you gave humans a nature just slightly below the Elohim (angels).

"goddess" (2)

1 Kng 11:5 - Solomon chased after Ashtoreth, the Zidonian elohim.
The king also chased after Milcom, an abomination of the Ammonites.
They yielded themselves to Ashtoreth, the Zidonian elohim. **(33)**
They yielded themselves to Chemosh, the Moabite elohim.
They also yielded themselves to Milcom, an elohim of Ammon's seed.

"gods" (240) "**God**" / "god" (Too many to count)

Gen 1:1 - In the day that began this age, Elohim rearranged heaven and Earth. The Earth was in a chaotic state, with no life. And darkness was on the face of the deep when Elohim's spirit hovered over the water.

3:1 - He said to the woman, Hey, did Elohim say you should not eat fruit off all the trees in the garden?
The woman replied to the serpent, saying, We can eat the fruit from any tree in the garden, but Elohim said we must not eat fruit off the tree in the midst of the garden. Elohim said we will die if we even touch it.
There is no way you will die, said the serpent, for the Elohim know if you consume fruit off that tree your eyes will be opened, and you will be like them, able to experience both good and evil.

And the woman saw the tree was good for food, that it pleased her eyes, and it was a tree able to bring understanding, so she picked fruit off the tree and ate it. She also gave some fruit to her husband after he joined her. Their eyes came open when Adam ate the fruit, and it allowed them to see they were naked (vulnerable?).

6:2 - When the humans started to increase on the planet and daughters were born to them, sons of Elohim saw the daughters of aliens were way more appealing than their own. After a short while, they were taking all who attracted them as wives.

5 - Elohim saw iniquity among humans had become so terrible upon Earth that all their thinking, with all the desires of their hearts, had gotten to the point where they were nothing but continual evil. As the result of it, the Lord started to reassess his plan and purpose, the reason he had put humans on Earth in the first place.

8 - But Noah found favor in the Lord's eyes.

22:1 - The Elohim tested him, calling out, Abraham.

Abraham answered, Here I am.

Elohim told him, This time you will take your only son, Isaac, the one you love, up into the land of Moriah. You will sacrifice him there in lieu of a burnt offering. I will show you the mountain on which you will do it. First thing in the morning, Abraham took off.

35:9 - Elohim appeared to Jacob again after he left Padan-aram.

Elohim blessed him, and said, Your name is now Jacob, but you will not be called Jacob any longer. From here on, you will be known as Israel.

Elohim said, I am El Shaddai (strength of the strong ones).

You will be productive and multiply. A nation and a company of nations is going to come out of you. Kings will come out of your loins. And the land I vowed to give Abraham and Isaac, I will give to you and your seed, also. After, Elohim went up from him, up from the place where they spoke.

Ex 3:13 - Moses addressed the Elohim, saying, Once I stand in front of the children of Israel and tell them the Elohim of their fathers sent me, the first thing they will ask is your name. What should I say?

Elohim said, My name is Ehyeh Asher Ehyeh (I Will Be Who I Will Be).

Elohim said, Tell Israel's seed Ehyeh (I Will Be) sent you.

Lev 23:39 - On the fifteenth day of the seventh month, after the fruit of the land has been harvested, you will celebrate a festival to the Lord for seven days. You will rest from all your labor on the first day, and on the eighth day, also.

You will pick the finest fruit from the trees on the first day and gather branches off palm trees, leafed trees, and willows by the brook and you will celebrate before the Lord, your Elohim, for seven days.

You will keep this feast to the Lord one week out of every year.

I will walk among you and be your Elohim.

You will be my people and I will be the Lord, your Elohim. **(26:12)**

Num 16:20 - The Lord told Moses and Aaron, Get away from the people so I can wipe them out right now.

Moses and Aaron fell on their faces, and cried, Oh our Elohim, Elohim of the spirits of all humanity!! Will you kill your people for one man's sin??

Dt 4:5 - I gave you the laws and ordinances the way my Lord and Elohim told me to do it, and I did it hoping you will observe them in the land you enter and have for your own. As a result, cling to them, and follow them, for they will show your wisdom and awareness to any who hear.

If you observe the laws, people will say, This is truly a great nation that overflows with wise and perceptive people.

What other nation is so outstanding that the Elohim would be as closely involved in all its affairs as the Lord, our Elohim, is involved in ours?

5:22 - The Lord, your Elohim, said it on the mountain, from the midst of fire and cloud and thick darkness, with his mighty voice.

Your Elohim showed me the essence behind the words which are written on the two stone tablets given to me by the Lord.

If you recall, the moment you heard the voice of the Lord speaking from the midst of the darkness, you summoned the leaders of your tribes and your elders, also, and they said to me, Our Lord and Elohim has shown us all his grandeur and greatness and we have heard his voice coming out of the midst of the fire. We are now convinced Elohim can talk with human beings and the humans can still remain alive. Why push our luck, though? Why gamble with death? We believe there is still some chance we might be burned by that great fire. If we are forced to go on listening to this voice of the Lord very much longer, we know we are going to die. Find us just one human who was forced to listen to the voice of the living Elohim talk to him from the middle of a fire. Seek one who is still alive, though. Maybe you could approach the Lord, our Elohim, to find out what he asks. Maybe you could come back to us, then tell us what the Lord, our Elohim, wants from us. We promise to listen to you if you do it, and also, we will obey everything you tell us. Okay, hmmm?

16:16 - Each year, on three occasions, your men will all assemble before the Lord, your Elohim. They will appear in a place the Lord selects: once during the feast of unleavened bread, once during the festival of weeks, and once during the feast of tabernacles. It is best if these men do not come empty-handed. Instead, tell them to bring all they may in relation to what the Lord, your Elohim, has given them.

31:10 - Charging them, Moses said, At the end of every seventh year in the solemnity of the year of release on the feast of tabernacles, Israel will all come together before the Lord, their Elohim. Israel will meet at a place chosen by the Lord and the law will be read in their hearing.

Assemble all the people now, the men, women, and children, including the aliens who live in the land with them, and bring them here to listen. Bring them so they might learn to appreciate the Lord, their Elohim. Bring them so they might understand and obey all the words of the law.

Joel 3:14 - Multitudes, multitudes, in the valley of decision.
The day of the Lord is near in the valley of decision.
The sun and moon will go dark.
The stars will stop their shining.
The Lord will thunder out of Zion.
The Lord will send his voice out of Jerusalem.
The heaven and Earth will quake, but the Lord will protect his people.
The Lord will be a stronghold for the seed of Israel.
That day, you will know I, the Lord, your Elohim, am living in Zion.
That day, you will know I am living upon my holy mountain.
That day, Jerusalem will be holy.
That day, strangers will never pass through her again.

Ex 22:28 - You must not speak evil of the elohim (judges).

"judges" (5)

Ex 21:6 - His master will bring him to the elohim (judges).
22:8 - The master of the house will be taken to the elohim (judges).
9 - Both parties will appear before the elohim (judges).

"great" (1)

Gen 30:8 - I wrestled against my sister using elohim (great) grapplings, and I have prevailed!

"exceeding" (1)

Jonah 3:3 - Nineveh was an elohim gadol (exceedingly great, a vast and powerful) city.

"very great" (1)

1 Sam 14:15 - The Earth quaked, and there was an elohim (very great, powerful) trembling.

"mighty" (2)

Gen 23:3 - Sarah died in Kirjatharba.
Abraham came to mourn and weep for Sarah.

Abraham rose up from where he had been kneeling beside Sarah.
 Abraham faced the sons of Heth, and said, Though I am only an alien and sojourner among you, I ask that you permit me to buy a place in your land where I may bury my wife in the proper manner.
 Heth's sons answered Abraham, saying, You are an elohim (strong, powerful) warrior in our midst. Choose the best tomb we have in which to bury your wife. No one will refuse you his tomb, and no one will try to prevent you from burying your wife.
 Abraham bowed to the people of the land, to Heth's descendants, and he said, If you agree I may buy a place to bury my wife in the proper way, I beg you to speak to Ephron, son of Zohar, in my behalf, and ask if he will sell me the cave of Machpelah by the end of his field. I will give him any price he puts on it and use it only as a tomb to bury my dead.

Three more verses concerning the **Elohim** follow.

Ps 82:1 - Elohim directs the community of El (God's powerful ones).
 Elohim judges among rulers.
 How long will you excuse those who are unethical?
 How long will you show partiality to those who are evil?
 Stand up for those who are weak and for orphans.
 Stand up for the rights of the poor and those who are oppressed.
 Save those who are failing and those who are in need.
 Save them all from the hands of wicked ones.
 Wicked ones know nothing.
 Wicked ones do not even know they are walking in darkness.

I told Israel, You are elohim (gods).
 I told Israel, You have originated from El Elyon (you are descendants of the Most High) but you will die just like any other human.

Arise, oh Elohim, and judge the Earth, for you will inherit all nations.

89:3 - The Lord said, I made a covenant with my chosen.
 I promised David, my servant, this: I will establish your seed through all ages. I will build up your throne before all humankind.

Heaven will praise your wonders, oh Lord.
 Heaven will praise your faithfulness to the assembly of the elect.
 Who in all the heavens can be compared to the Lord?
 Who among all the sons of power (el) is like the Lord?
 El is to be feared greatly in the congregation of the chosen.
 El is to be held in reverence by those who wish to approach him.
 Elohim Tz'aba, our Lord, you are the only God.
 Who else is wrapped in truth like you?

Ez 28:1 - The word of the Lord came to me again, saying, Son of man, go and inform Tyre's leader that the Lord, your Elohim, has some words for him. Tell him this: You have grown way too proud. You say to yourself, I am a god (el) and I sit in the seat of a god. Here I am, right in the midst of all the action.

You forget, though, that you are no more than a man.

You are a long way from being a god, despite the fact you believe in your heart you have the awareness of a god.

Are you as clever as Daniel?

Is nothing beyond your grasp?

Using wit and perception, you have amassed much wealth. You have piles of gold and silver tucked away in your vault. An ability to wheel and deal has helped you stack up the loot, but your riches have gone to your head. Beware, therefore, because I am going to bring aliens upon you.

They will be the most terrible from every nation.

They will bare their blades before the brightness of your wisdom.

They will diminish your brilliance.

They will dash you down to the pit.

You will die a death like those slain at sea.

You will shout to the ones who come to kill you, saying, Wait, I am a god!

Believe this: you will be a mere man in the hands of those who slay you.

You will die the death of the uncircumcised at the hands of aliens.

I have spoken, declares Yahweh Elohim.

Ezekiel says even more about the king's death.

Pseudo-christians of the past used **Ezekiel 28** to prove the actuality of their second-favorite fantasy: Satan, the Devil.

Pseudo-christians of today ignore **Ezekiel** at all costs, except to brag they were aware all along it was out of chapter 37 that some no-account pirate ripped off the words to the old ditty, "Dem bones, dem bones, oh dem dry bones . . . now he'yah de word o' dat Lawd."

Yahweh

No subject in the Bible reveals the ignorance of renderers more than the subject of the nature of Abraham's God. Because translators of the Bible haven't much knowledge of the God of Abraham, it can't be an huge surprise finding their readers milling around in the gloom alongside them, but there's no reason to remain in the dark, for people just need to read between the lines to see the light.

The Big Guy didn't introduce himself as "God" or "the Lord".

The Big Guy introduced himself as **Yahweh**.

The English interpretation of **Yahweh** is "I will be".

The Big Guy said he was becoming and would eventually be.

The Big Guy was also known as **Ail Shaddai**.
The name **Ail Shaddai** means "might of the mighty ones".
The mighty ones, of course, are the **Elohim**, the angels.

During Moses' day, the Big Guy elected to reveal more of his plan and purpose to humans, and he introduced himself as **Ehyeh Asher Ehyeh**.
The English translation is "I will be whom I will be".
Those who weren't listening became confused.
They thought he said "I am that I am".
They were wrong.
The Big Guy said **Ehyeh Asher Ehyeh**.

By introducing himself as **Ehyeh Asher Ehyeh**, **Yahweh** was saying his manner of dealing with humans was going to change.

By introducing himself like that, the Big Guy was saying it was time to manifest himself in and through the seed of Abraham, as he promised he would some four hundred years before. Slowly, bit by bit, **Yahweh** began to show up in judges, prophets, and kings, but the first child of Abraham to manifest **Yahweh** fully was Jesus, the Christ.

Yahweh's messenger (angel) ordered Messiah's parents to name their child **Yahshua**. The name became **Yeshua**, which connotes "he who will be the savior". **Yeshua** later appeared in Greek as Yai-sous, and after some time it was seen in English as Jesus. These heathen names mean nothing, but the Hebrew name was used for a good reason. By choosing this name the Hebrew God proclaimed there was no way of salvation other than his way, no way out but his way out.

Acts 4:10 - Let it be known to all of you, and to all in Israel, that it was through the name of Jesus Christ, of Nazareth, the one you took in your wicked hands and crucified, the one God raised from the dead, that this man stands here today before you entirely healed.
Jesus is the stone you builders rejected.
Jesus has now become the primary cornerstone, for no one else can save you and there is no other name given under the heaven by which anybody can be saved.

It was mentioned earlier that translators often head south whenever they run across the Hebrew word **YHWH**. They sure do: they all choose "LORD" in capital letters to translate **YHWH** in the old testament. This is no surprise, since they offer no indication at all they comprehend God used the name **YHWH** as a memorial of his plan with humanity.

"LORD" is also chosen when rendering names.

It's preferred when translating the abbreviated form of **YHWH** that was likely spelled **YH** and pronounced "**Yah**".

Adonai is another Hebrew word translated into English by "Lord", but in this case, "Lord" is seen with a capital "L" and a small "ord".

Whichever combination of capital and small letters is chosen, there's no way "Lord" can ever convey the meaning of the Hebrew **adonai**.

Often, Bible writers linked **adonai** and **YHWH**, which might be a cause for translators to contemplate, but it seldom is. Most often, they select "Lord God" when rendering **Adonai YHWH**, but it never will.

In English, **Adonai YHWH** means "lords of the one who will be".

In future reality, that will refer to the leaders and administrators of the **Yahweh** entity, those charged with out-working divine will then.

Another word related to God is **tsur**, a symbol of strength and power. **Tsur** signifies "rock".

The King James Bible relates it to God as follows . . .

Is 44:8 - Is there another Eloah than me? I know of no rock (tsur).

Dt 32:15 - Jeshrun (Israel) became fat and it kicked.

Israel became fat and bloated and sleek.

Israel deserted the Eloah that made it.

Israel disgraced the very rock that supports it.

Israel provoked him to jealousy with alien elohim.

Israel provoked him to rage with abominations.

Israel sacrificed to shed (images) not to its own eloah.

Israel sacrificed to elohim it did not know, to late-comers.

Israel sacrificed to elohim its fathers did not know.

Israel ignored the rock that gave it birth.

Israel forgot the El that reared it. **(29-40)**

Ps 18:31 - Who is an Eloah other than Yahweh?

Who is a rock other than our Elohim?

46 - Yahweh lives.

Blessed be my rock.

Let the Elohim of my salvation be exalted.

28:1 - I pray to you, oh Yahweh, my rock. Do not refuse to hear me, for if you do not hear me, I will be as those who are going down into the pit.

Only one word was used to indicate the Big Guy in the new testament. Writers chose the word **theos**. **Theos** is like the English non-word "god". Like "god", it can mean almost anything. The context of the verse where **theos** is seen is an arrow indicating the proper path.

Don't forget, though, arrows have sharp points that can nick you.

It's obvious Paul picked **Theos** to represent **Yahweh** when he wrote a letter to believers living in Rome.

Rom 9:20 - Do not even think it, oh man. Who are you to speak contrary to God (Theos)? Will that which was formed ask the one that formed it, 'Why did you make me like this?'
Does the potter not have power over the clay? Can he not take one lump of clay to make a pot for special use and other clay for the common?

Why is it obvious Paul picked **Theos** (above) to represent **Yahweh**?

Is 45:9 - Will the clay say to he who shaped it, 'What have you made?'
64:8 - You, oh Yahweh, are our maker. We are clay. You are the potter.

That's why.

Most Scholars, along with the more liberal Reverends, feel God is but the product of humanity's natural, spiritual evolution from **polytheism** (a belief in many gods) into **monotheism** (a belief in one God).

These brightly glowing intellectual lamps believe it's but another rung on an always-ascending ladder climbing to that magic moment when every human ever born finally cries out as one, "Wow, look, We are God!"

"Golly, gee whizz, it was Us all the time!"

"And We just didn't know!"

"Hey, praise Us!"

People waiting for all humanity to reach that moment have a very long wait, that's for sure.

What evidence is seen in history to confirm any member of the human race but Christ has experienced one degree of spiritual advancement?

Zero evidence is seen to confirm it.

Everything points the opposite direction.

Wake up and look around you.

Yahweh's memorial name was translated as "Jehovah" seven places in the King James version, but since the Hebrew language has no letter "J" it's hardly a proper rendering of the Big Guy's name.

The names Jesus and Joshua are also bad.

These two boys were really named **Yahshuah**.

Three of the seven times **Yahweh** is found as "Jehovah" are in names of places in Canaan. All seven verses follow.

Ex 6:2 - God told Moses, I am YHWH. Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob knew me by the name El Shaddai. They did not know me as YHWH.

Ps 83:1 - Do not be silent, oh God. Do not hold your peace and be still.
The enemies have rioted.
Those who despise you have raised their heads.
They are involved in a secret agreement to confront your people.
They entertain plans against your hidden ones.
They say, Come, let us cut them off from being a nation.
They say, Then the name of Israel will never be remembered again.

16 - Fill their faces with shame, oh YHWH.
Let them seek your name.
Let them be confounded.
Let them be tormented in every age.
Let them experience disgrace.
Let them just die in the end.
Let them realize that you alone, known as YHWH, are the Most High.
Let them know you rule the Earth.

Is 21:1 - On that day, they will say, We praise you, oh YHWH.
But YHWH is my salvation today.
Because I trust YHWH, I have no fear.
YHWH, my Lord, has given me power.
YHWH has become my song.
YHWH has become my salvation.

6 - Shout it out! Shout it loud, you inhabitants of Zion!
The holy (qadosh, separate, set apart) one in your midst is great.

26:4 - Trust yourself to YHWH in all ages.
YHWH is olam tsur (age-lasting strength, the rock of ages).

Gen 22:14 - YHWH Jireh, which means "Yahweh will provide".
Place in Moriah where Abraham demonstrated faith by offering Isaac.

Ex 17:15 - YHWH Nissi, which means "Yahweh is my banner".
Where Moses set up an altar to memorialize Israel's victory over Amelek.

Jdg 6:24 - YHWH Shalom, which means "Yahweh will give us peace".
An altar built by Gideon to honor his meeting with Yahweh's angel.

Ex 15:11 - What god (el) is like you, oh Yahweh?
What god is like you, all regal in holiness and awesome in praise?
What god is like you, able to perform such great wonders?

Jer 32:26 - Jeremiah heard Yahweh's voice, saying, I am Yahweh.
Yahweh's voice also said, I am the God of all humankind.

Dt 4:23 - Take heed to yourselves.

Remember that you and your God have entered into a covenant.

Do not carve idols or make images such as those Yahweh has banned.

Yahweh, our Elohim, is a consuming fire.

Yahweh is a very jealous God.

32 - Ask about the old days, the days that have passed since God placed humans on the Earth. Ask from one side of heaven to the other if there has been anything as important as this. Has anything been known that is equal to it? Have any other people ever heard the voice of God speaking to them from the fire as you have and stayed alive? Has God ever taken one nation from the midst of another nation with testing, signs, wonders and war, or by a strong hand or an out-stretched arm or by great terror like Yahweh, your Elohim, did in Egypt before your very eyes?

You saw these wonders so you would realize Yahweh is God.

You saw them so you would know there is no other God but Yahweh.

You must believe in your heart that Yahweh is God.

You must believe Yahweh is God of heaven above and Earth below.

You must believe there is no other. **(39)**

6:4 - Hear this, oh Israel: Yahweh, your God, is the only God.

Yahweh, your God, is God alone.

Yahweh is the only God worthy of trust.

Yahweh is the only God who will honor covenant and mercy to a thousand generations of those who love him and obey his commandments.

Yahweh will repay those who hate him to their faces.

Yahweh will consume them.

Yahweh will not put up with those who ignore him forever.

Yahweh will repay them by and by. **(7:9)**

32:26 - Yahweh will judge his people.

Yahweh will turn himself about (repent) for his servants.

Yahweh asks, Are you not aware that I am God? Are you not aware that there is no other god but me? I kill and I bring back to life. I hurt and I heal. No one can steal you from me. I raise my hand up to heaven and proclaim I am alive continually (for the ages).

Josh 2:9 - Rahab told the men, I believe Yahweh has given you our land. I know that fear of you has come over us. All those who live in this land are afraid of you. We also heard Yahweh dried up the water of the Red sea when you left Egypt. We heard what you did to Sihon and Og, those two Amorite kings who reigned on the other side of the Jordan, the two kings you entirely annihilated. Our hearts melted when we heard it, and there was no more courage in any of us because of you. We see Yahweh, your God, is the true God of heaven above and Earth below.

1 Sam 2:1 - Hannah prayed, saying, My heart rejoices in Yahweh.
My trumpet sounds loudly for Yahweh.
My voice is raised above my foes.
I rejoice in Yahweh's salvation.
Nothing is holy but Yahweh.
Nothing but Yahweh exists at all.
No rock is like our Elohim.
Do not speak with such great pride.
Stop your boasting, for Yahweh is a God who hears.
Yahweh is a God who measures the weight of actions.

6 - Yahweh kills people and returns people to life.
Yahweh hurls people down to the grave.
Yahweh raises people back up again.
Yahweh decides who will be poor and who will be rich.
Yahweh decides who will be obstructed and who will advance.

2 Sam 7:18 - King David went into the tabernacle.
He sat down before Yahweh, and asked, Who am I, oh Yahweh? What is my house, oh Yahweh, that you would put me in this position?

22 - You are exalted, oh Yahweh.
There is no one like you.
There is no God at all but you.

2 Chr 20:5 - King Jehoshaphat stood before the assembly of Judah and Jerusalem. He stood in the house of Yahweh before the new court.
Jehoshaphat began to pray, crying, Oh Yahweh, oh Elohim of our fathers, are you not the God of heaven, far above all kingdoms and nations?
Do your hands not hold power and might?
Is anyone able to oppose you?
Are you not our God?
Did you not drive out the nations of this land before your people, Israel?
Did you not promise it to the seed of your friend, Abraham, for all ages?

Ps 103:6 - Yahweh deals out righteousness and judgment.
Yahweh gives them to all who are able to overcome.
Yahweh revealed his plan and purpose to Moses and the people of Israel.
Yahweh is merciful, gracious, and slow to anger.
Yahweh overflows with forgiveness.
Yahweh will not always reprimand, nor will he always be angry.
Yahweh has not rewarded us according to our sins or our wickedness.
As high as heaven is above the Earth, this is the abundance of Yahweh's mercy to those who lean on him.
As far as east is from west, this is how far away Yahweh cast our sins.

135:4 - Yahweh has chosen Jacob for himself.
Yahweh has chosen Israel for his own special treasure.
Yahweh is great.
Yahweh, our Lord, is above every god.
Yahweh does whatever he wants in heaven and on Earth.

Is 40:18 - To whom, then, will you liken our God?
To what likeness can you possibly compare him?

21 - Are you not able to hear or see?
Have you not been told from the start?
Have you not known from the foundation of Earth?
It has always been Yahweh seated on the circle of Earth.
Inhabitants of Earth are like grasshoppers to Yahweh.
It is Yahweh who stretched out the heavens as a canopy.
It is Yahweh who unrolled the heavens as a tent in which to dwell.
It is Yahweh who reduces rulers to nothing.
It is Yahweh who makes leaders of Earth appear vain.

25 - To whom will you liken me?
Who is my equal?
Why do you refuse to lift up your eyes?
Why do you refuse to see I am responsible for all these things?

28 - Have you not heard and perceived that the everlasting God, Yahweh,
the God that laid out the ends of the Earth, does not get weak or weary?
Do you not see there is no way to grasp his wisdom and knowledge?

43:10 - You are my witnesses, says Yahweh.
You are my ministers, the ones I have chosen.
You were chosen so you could know and understand me.
You were chosen so you could witness that I am the only God.
No God existed before me and there will be no God after me.
I am Yahweh, I myself, the one who will be.
I am the only one who can deliver you.
I revealed that to you before I rescued you.
I revealed it long before you had strange gods among you.
I, Yahweh, want you to proclaim that I am God.
I want you to swear that I have been here from days of yore.
I want you to be my witnesses.
I want you to realize no one can remove you from my hand.
If I say something is going to happen, who can possibly stop it?

44:6 - Yahweh, the King and Redeemer of Israel, Yahweh of hosts, says,
I am the beginning and end. There is no other God than me.

Where will you find another God like me?
Go ahead, invite your god to step up and take a bow.
Who else could bring these things to pass?
Who else could have shaped the ancient people?
Let some other god come forth and reveal what will happen.
Let him appear right now and predict what is going to be.
Have no fear, but be brave instead.
Have I not told you from the very start?
Have I not called you my witnesses?
Have I not assured you there is no God but me?
Hear this: there is no other God . . . not one I am aware of, anyway.

45:5 - I am Yahweh; there is no other. I am your God, the one who kept you sheltered, though you never gave me credit for it. And I did this so people from the rising of the sun all the way into the west might realize no God exists but me.
I am Yahweh, the one who brings forth light and darkness.
I cause peace and I cause evil.
I, Yahweh, do it all.

46:9 - Ponder the past. Think about what has already taken place. Who knows, you may just see I am God, and that there is no other. I am God. No one else is like me, and no one else is able to uncover the end and the beginning. No one else can reveal what will come to pass. No one else is able to cause things already predicted to happen. Who else may say, My plan will transpire? Who else may say, I will achieve my purpose? Yahweh has spoken and Yahweh will make it happen.
I planned it and I will do it, too.

48:16 - Come close. Come and hear.
From the time it all began, I have kept no secrets, not one.
Nothing was hidden in the beginning, either.
I should know, for I was there when it all started.
Yahweh, your redeemer, the holy one of Israel, says, I am Yahweh.
I am your God and I will teach you things that are of profit.
All I want is to lead you in the path you should walk.
Oh, if you would only follow orders!

Jer 9:24 - Yahweh says, Let the wise not glory in their wisdom.
Let the strong not glory in their might.
Let those who are rich not glory in their wealth.
Let those who glory get pleasure from knowing me instead.
Let them be pleased they know and understand me.
Let them be pleased they know Yahweh, who exercises mercy, judgment, and righteousness on Earth, for this is what makes me happy.

10:10 - Yahweh is the true God, a living God, an age-lasting king.
Earth trembles at his wrath and nations cannot handle his anger.
Earth can be sure of this: all the gods that did not array the heaven and
Earth will perish from Earth and from under heaven.
Yahweh made Earth habitable through his power.
Yahweh instituted the ages through his wisdom.
Yahweh formed the heavens to fit his purpose.

23:23 - Yahweh asks, Am I a God close-by, but not far off?
Can people hide where I am not able to find them?
Do I not fill heaven and Earth?

Through his **Elohim, Yahweh** rules the people (goi, heathen) of Earth.
This is clearly revealed in the scrolls.

Dt 32:7 - Remember the days of old. Learn of the years experienced by
earlier generations. Ask your father and he will explain. Ask your elders
and they will tell you when the Most High chose an inheritance for all the
nations after he separated the descendants of Adam, the limits of these
heathen were set to correspond with the number of the people of Israel.
Yahweh's portion is his people and Jacob is the lot of his inheritance.

Ps 2:1 - Why are the nations all aflutter?
Why do the people (goi) have vain thoughts?
Kings of the Earth align themselves.
Rulers meet together against Yahweh and his anointed.
Leaders say, Let us break their bonds and throw off all their restraints.
Yahweh will sit in the heavens and snigger.
Yahweh will hold them in derision.

10:16 - Yahweh will be king forever and ever (le-olam va-ed, to the age).
Yahweh will be king and the heathen will be driven from his land.

33:8 - Let the Earth fear Yahweh.
Let the inhabitants of the world regard Yahweh with awe.

44:1 - We heard it with our own ears, oh God.
Our fathers told us of the works you did in their days, in the old days.
Our fathers told us how the aliens were expelled by your hand.

47:2 - Yahweh Elyon is awesome.
Yahweh is a mighty King over all the Earth.

89:18 - Yahweh is our defense.
Yahweh, the holy one of Israel, is our ruler.

Jer 18:7 - If I speak about how I will pluck up, throw down, and destroy a particular nation or dominion and the nation against which I pronounced evil alters its evil ways, then I will repent of the evil I said I would bring upon it. And if I speak about how I will build and plant a particular realm or kingdom and the country does evil in my sight by refusing to follow my word, then I will repent of the good with which I said would benefit it.

Dan 2:20 - God's name is hallowed forever and ever (alema, through the ages) because wisdom and power are his.
He changes times and seasons.
He removes kings and he raises kings up.
He gives wisdom to the wise and knowledge to those who can handle it.

4:17 - This decision was determined by the Watchers.
This verdict was sanctioned by mandate of the Holy Ones, with an intent that the living may come to comprehend the Most High reigns among the kingdoms of mankind, that he gives them to those who suit him, and that he will elevate even the crudest of people if it advances his plan.

Yahweh prepared and peopled the planet.
Yahweh prepared and propelled the seed of Israel.
Territories and populations rose and fell in relation to the parts God elected them to play in his plan and purpose with the Hebrews.
Anti-christian deceptions of a kind and caring Father, squirming with chagrin if even one of his Dear Children strays off that old straight and narrow, are as far from the true Father of the Bible as they can be.
The true Father of the Bible uses chosen ones to bring his wishes to pass even if it means altering the lives and destinies of entire nations.

The Flood . . .

Gen 6:5 - The Elohim saw wickedness among humans had grown so much on Earth that all their thoughts, along with the cravings of their hearts, were nothing but evil, and Yahweh began to rethink his plan and purpose, the sole reason he put humans on Earth in the first place - and though it caused him much sorrow, Yahweh finally decided he had to eradicate his humans from the face of the Earth.

7:4 - In one week, I will cause rain to come down on the Earth for forty days and nights and every living substance I put on the planet will die.

Babel . . .

11:1 - In those days, humans on Earth spoke only one language.
In those days, humans had only one way of thinking, too.

They came out of the east, arriving at a plain in the land of Shinar. They decided to stay there, and they said, Let us build a city and tower with a pinnacle that reaches far into the heavens. Let us create a name for ourselves so we are not scattered over the face of all the Earth. Yahweh came down to view the city and tower the humans were building. He said, Check it out, the people have become one. And listen, they are all speaking one language. See what they are doing. If we allow it to go on, they will soon realize there is nothing they cannot accomplish. Then they will do whatever they want. We must remain here to confound the language they are speaking. After we do, one tribe will not comprehend what any of the other tribes are saying. Later on, Yahweh scattered the humans abroad from Shinar, out across the face of the Earth, and the humans had to stop building the city. Babel was the name of the tower, for that was where Yahweh confused the one language spoken by the human race.

Sodom and Gomorrah . . .

19:1 - Two angels came to Sodom at evening. As soon as Lot saw them, he rose to meet them. He bowed with his face to the ground, saying, Give this some thought, my lords! I pray you come to your servant's house and safely spend the night. No way, said the men. We will spend the night in the park. Lot pleaded so fervently they finally gave in and followed him home. Once they were there, Lot threw together an huge feast with flatbread and all the trimmings, and they ate until they were ready to burst. Before they hit the sack, though, a mob of men from Sodom surrounded Lot's house, young men and old from all over the city. One cried to Lot, asking, Where are the men who came to you tonight? Others yelled, Send them out so we can have at them! Lot squirmed through the front door, secured it tightly behind him, and said, Please, guys, why be so gross? Bear with me. You know I have two young daughters who have never been with a man. What if I send those two out so you can have at them? How about that? If you do no evil to the men taking shelter under my roof we will all be fine. One in the mob shouted, Get out of the way! Another said, He got here an alien! Look at him now, acting like a judge! A top-man yelled, We will have at you worse than we have at them! And they started pushing so hard against Lot they almost knocked down the door, but the angels reached out and pulled Lot back into the house. After striking the crowd that banged at the front of Lot's house with a blindness so severe they could not find the porch, they sealed the door. Morning arrived and the angels urged Lot to hurry, saying, Move it! Get your wife and daughters. Take them with you and depart so you are not destroyed with the rest when this city pays for its wickedness. **(15)**

Lot lingered, and the men took his hand, along with the hands of his wife and his daughters, and they transported them away from the city. Not too long after, Yahweh poured brimstone and fire from heaven down on Sodom and Gomorrah, annihilating those cities, along with every other city on the plain, including all the people who lived in the cities and every plant that grew on the ground.

Yahweh and Abraham . . .

Gen 14:18 - Melchizedek, king of Salem, brought out bread and wine. He was a priest, a servant of Elyon El (the Most High God). He blessed Abraham, saying, Abraham has been honored by Elyon El, the owner of heaven and Earth. Elyon El is deserving of your respect, for he has given your enemies into your hand.

Yahweh and Isaac . . .

Gen 26:1 - Another famine came to the land a while after the famine of Abraham's day. Isaac wanted to ask Abimelech, ruler of Gerar, for help, but Yahweh said to him, Do not go down to Egypt; rather, live in the land I show you. If you sojourn there, I will be with you and bless you. I will also give the land to you and your children, and carry out the vow I made concerning your father, Abraham, for he respected my word and obeyed all my instructions, orders, statutes, and laws.

26 - Abimelech came to Isaac from Gerar, in concert with Ahuzzath, his friend, and Philcol, the chief captain of his army.

Isaac said, Why come to me? It is evident you hate me, since you asked me to move away from you.

We understand Yahweh is with you, they said, and we want you to ratify an accord between us. We are asking you to promise not to harm us, for we did not harm you. We did you nothing but good when we sent you off in peace. We want you to make a pledge of peace with us, especially now that anyone can see you are being blessed by Yahweh.

After hearing this, Isaac prepared a feast and they all ate and drank.

Yahweh and Jacob . . .

Gen 35:1 - Elohim (God) told Jacob to go up to Bethel and live there. When they went, fear from Elohim was on every city around them. (5)

9 - Elohim appeared to Jacob again after he left Padan-aram. Elohim blessed him, saying, You were known as Jacob, but Jacob will not be your name any longer. You will now be known as Israel (ruler with El). And it was then and there the Elohim named him Israel.

Elohim spoke again, saying, I am El Shaddai (God Almighty, the power of the strong ones). Be fruitful and increase. A nation and an organization of nations will come from you. Kings will come from your loins. The land given to Abraham and Isaac will be given to you and your seed after you.

Yahweh and Joseph . . .

Gen 39:1 - Joseph was taken away to Egypt, where Potiphar, an officer of Pharaoh, and captain of his guard, an Egyptian, acquired Joseph from some Ishmeelites who had brought him there.

Yahweh was with Joseph, and his life in the house of his Egyptian owner was successful. Potiphar also realized Yahweh was with Joseph, causing whatever Joseph asked for to happen.

45:1 - Joseph could no longer hold himself back.

He called out to his brothers, Come close to me, I beg you.

When they came closer, he said, I am your brother, Joseph, the one you sold into Egypt. Do not be sad or angry at yourselves because you did it, for our God sent me on before you to save our lives. You must believe it was not you who did it. God did it. And God has made me as a father to Pharaoh. I am now the ruler of his house and head of all Egypt.

50:24 - Joseph told his brothers, I am dying, but I am convinced God is going to visit you. I am certain he will bring you out of this land and into the land he promised Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

Joseph compelled the children of Israel to vow with an oath, saying, God will surely visit you. When he does, you must carry my bones out of here into the land of promise.

Joseph died when he was one hundred and ten years old.

His children embalmed him and laid him in a coffin in the land of Egypt.

And four hundred short years later, Yahweh started to establish the kingdom he'd promised in the land.

Yahweh, Moses, Egypt, and Abraham's seed . . .

Ex 1:8 - A new Pharaoh took the throne in Egypt, one who knew nothing of Joseph. He told his nation, Look at these people. This seed of Israel has become more and mightier than us.

11 - They put task-masters over them to wear them down with burdens. They forced them to build the treasure cities of Pithom and Ramses for the Pharaoh. But the more the Egyptians tormented Israel's people, the more they multiplied and grew. And when the Egyptians started to fear the children of Israel, they put them to hard labor.

2:23 - After a time, Egypt's ruler died and the children of Israel sighed because of their bondage. When they called out, their crying rose up to God in light of the fact they were being held as slaves.

God heard their groanings.

God remembered the promise he made to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

God saw the plight of the children of Israel and felt sorry for them.

3:1 - Moses was herding a bunch of sheep for his father-in-law, Jethro, a priest from Midian. He led his sheep to the backside of the desert to Horeb, the mount of God. He saw Yahweh's angel there in the flames of a fire that was burning among some brush.

In due course, the angel of Yahweh called out to Moses, saying, I am the God (Elohim) of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

Moses hid his face, for he was afraid to look at God.

Yahweh said, I have seen the affliction of my people in Egypt. I am here to deliver them from the hand of the Egyptians.

Yahweh told Moses, I am going to send you to the Pharaoh. **(10)**

Yahweh also told him, You are going to lead Israel's seed out of Egypt.

Moses asked, Who am I to go to Pharaoh?

Moses also asked, Who am I to lead Israel's seed out of Egypt?

Elohim told him, You must believe I will be with you. This is a sign which will prove I really did send you: after you have delivered your people out of Egypt, you will all worship God here on this mountain.

Moses said, When I stand before the children of Israel to tell them the Elohim of their fathers sent me to deliver them, they will ask your name.

What should I say to them?

Elohim said, I am Ehyeh Asher Ehyeh (I Will Be Whom I Will Be).

Elohim also said, Tell the seed of Israel Ehyeh (I Will Be) sent you.

Moses said, I know they will not listen to me. They will never do what I ask them, but they will only say Yahweh did not appear to me. **(4:1)**

My Lord, said Moses, I am not all that gifted at speaking, not up to this time, anyhow. And I have not gotten any better since you began talking with me. I am too slow to speak and my tongue moves too slow. **(10)**

Yahweh rejoined, Who made the human mouth? And who causes humans to be dumb and deaf? Who causes humans to see and to be blind? Is it not I, Yahweh? Go now. I will be with you and tell you what to say.

Moses said, Oh my Lord, I beg you to send someone else.

Moses also said, Send someone more qualified to do the job.

Yahweh directed his disenchantment Moses' way, and said, Is not Aaron, the Levite, your brother? I know he can speak well. You will talk to him and put words in his mouth. I will be with your mouth and his mouth and tell you what to do and say. Aaron will speak to the people. He will be a mouth for you and you will be in God's place to him.

Moses and Aaron assembled the elders of the people of Israel.

Aaron repeated everything Yahweh told Moses. **(29)**

The people believed when Aaron performed signs before them.
They finally realized Yahweh had come for them.
They believed Yahweh was moved at their affliction.
They bowed their heads and began to worship after they believed.

5:1 - Moses and Aaron appeared before Pharaoh, saying, Yahweh Elohim (the Lord God) of Israel, says, Let my people go so they may celebrate a feast to me in the wilderness.

Pharaoh asked, Who is your Yahweh? Why should I listen to him and let Israel go? Since I do not know your Yahweh, I will not let Israel go.

Moses and Aaron replied, Really, the Hebrew God did contact us, and we were ordered to demand you to let us go into the desert for a three day journey to offer sacrifices to Yahweh, our Elohim. And you better do it before Yahweh comes down on us all with a plague or sword.

Pharaoh, the ruler of Egypt, said, Moses and Aaron, why did you let your people ease up on their labor? Get back to your duties. Even more work will now be put on the men. They can focus on that instead of fantasies.

15 - The elders of the children of Israel came crying to Pharaoh, saying, Why have you dealt with your servants in such a manner?

Pharaoh replied, Because you are lazy and you are shiftless. That is why you say, Let us go out and worship Yahweh. You can exit my sight, but it will only be to return to work. No straw will be given to you from now on and you will still put out the full total of bricks each day.

Israel's leaders knew things were going to get much worse when Pharaoh said the total number of bricks they had to produce every day would not be lessened at all.

Moses and Aaron were standing on the path and met the leaders as they emerged from their meeting with Pharaoh.

We are going to pray to Yahweh to look on you and judge you, the elders told them, because you have now caused our savior to be despised in the sight of Pharaoh and his followers. What you accomplished was to place a sword in their hand to kill us.

Moses went back to Yahweh, and said, Lord, why were you so rough with your people? And why did you send me? From that first time I met the Pharaoh and spoke in your name he has only done more evil to the people and you have not delivered Israel at all.

Yahweh told Moses, You will now see what I have ready for the Pharaoh. I am named Yahweh. Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob knew me as El Shaddai (God Almighty). They never knew me by Yahweh, even though I vowed a covenant with them, swearing to give them the land of Canaan, the place of their pilgrimage, the place where they lived as strangers.

I have heard the cries of the seed of Israel, of my seed, the nation the Egyptians now hold in bondage, and I am here to honor my covenant.

Tell the people of Israel Yahweh is prepared to free them.
Tell them I will remove them from under the thumb of the Egyptians.
Tell them I have come to rescue them from servitude.
Tell them I will do it by an outstretched arm and mighty judgments.
Tell them I will take them to myself for a people and be their God.
Tell them they will belong to me, to Yahweh, their Elohim.
Tell them I am going to free them from their slavery in Egypt.
Tell them I am going to move them to the same land I swore to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, then I will give them the land as an inheritance.

6:13 - Yahweh ordered Moses and Aaron before Israel to command that Pharaoh, the Egyptian king, release Israel from his land.

7:1 - Yahweh told Moses, I have made you as God to Pharaoh, and I have made Aaron, your brother, as your prophet. You will tell Aaron whatever I have told you, and Aaron will speak to Pharaoh, insisting that he permit all Israel's people to leave his land; then I will harden Pharaoh's heart so I might work signs and wonders among the Egyptians. The Egyptians will not know I am Yahweh until I have extended my hand out over Egypt and snatched Israel's seed from their midst.
Moses and Aaron, of course, did just what Yahweh told them to do.

14 - Yahweh said, Pharaoh's heart has been hardened and he will not let the people go. Meet Pharaoh in the morning as he walks out to the river. Stand beside him on the shore and tell him this: Yahweh, the God of the Hebrews, sent me to order you to let his people go out in the wilderness and serve him, but you would not obey his order so Yahweh is now saying you will be forced to understand he truly sent me. Watch and see: once I smite the river with the rod in my hand, its water will turn to blood. Then Moses smote the water and all the fish in the river died. The river began to stink and Egyptians were not able to drink the water. They also began to see blood throughout the land of Egypt. The Egyptian sorcerers caused a similar thing to happen by way of their spells. Pharaoh hardened his heart because of it, and he would not even listen to Moses and Aaron, the same as Yahweh predicted.
At last, Pharaoh turned his back on Moses and went home. **(21)**

Plague followed plague until . . .

Ex 11:1 - Yahweh said to Moses, I am sending only one more scourge on Pharaoh and Egypt. Believe me, he will let you go after this one.

12:29 - Just around midnight, Yahweh destroyed all the firstborn living in the country of Egypt, from the firstborn of Pharaoh, the one who was in line for his throne, to the firstborn of those held in dungeons.

Yahweh also slaughtered all the firstborn cattle.
Pharaoh woke during the night, he, his servants, and all Egypt.
Great cries rose throughout Egypt, for there was not one house without at least one dead male.
Pharaoh came to Moses and Aaron during the night, saying, Rise up right now. Get away from my people, you two, and all those children of Israel. Worship Yahweh as you have insisted, and take your flocks and herds as you also insist. Just leave us . . . but bless me before you go.
Also, the Egyptians pressed the Hebrews, urging them out of their land, saying, We will all be dead if we do not send them away.

14:1 - Yahweh told Moses, I will harden Pharaoh's heart. He will follow the people and I will receive glory at the expense of the Pharaoh and all his army. And the Egyptians will finally get to meet Yahweh.

5 - After the sovereign of Egypt finally came to his senses and realized the people of Israel were actually gone, his heart, and the hearts of his servants, became opposed to the people, and they asked, Why did we do it? Why did we free Israel from being our slaves?
So Pharaoh readied his chariot and gathered his warriors to him.

10 - When Pharaoh and his army came into view behind them, the people of Israel realized the Egyptians had been following them. They were all filled with fear and they cried out to Yahweh.
Blaming Moses, they shouted, Was it because there were no tombs back in Egypt that you brought us out here to perish in the wild? We have no idea at all why you are doing it. Why did you lead us out of Egypt? This is just what we told you was going to happen when we were still in Egypt. We pleaded with you to leave us alone. Did we not say we were happy to continue slaving for the Egyptians? To be slaves of the Egyptians is far better than dying out here in the desert!
Moses said, Have no fear. If only you watch, you will see Yahweh is able to rescue you. You will see it right here today, and after you do you will never fret the Egyptians again. Stand your ground firmly and be strong. If you do, you will see Yahweh fight for you.

19 - The angel of God leading the nation of Israel took a new stance.
The angel moved the pillar of cloud from before Israel to its rear.
The cloud stayed between the camps of Egypt and Israel until morning.
The Egyptians had only cloud and darkness.
The Hebrews had light in the night.
The whole time long, neither Egypt or Israel approached the other.
Then morning came and Moses extended his hand over the sea.
The sea began to recede and it continued all the next night.
The sea declined because Yahweh sent a strong east wind to blow on it.

This caused the sea to become like dry land, with the waters divided.
The children of Israel walked into its midst as if it was dry ground.
The Egyptians followed after.

24 - Yahweh peered out of the column of fire and cloud sometime during the morning watch and it troubled the Egyptian forces.

26 - Yahweh told Moses, When you hold your hand out above the sea, the water will cover the Egyptians, their chariots, and their horsemen.
So Moses extended his hand out over the water.
And Yahweh destroyed the Egyptians in the midst of the sea.
Israel saw Yahweh's great victory over the Egyptian army.
Israel saw and feared. **(31)**

Clearly, the loss of Pharaoh, as well as his chariot corps, let alone the first-born men and livestock, altered day-to-day life in Egypt, and it was probably not for the better. And what about the moral people of Egypt? What about all those Dear, Sweet Children of God, the ones who went to Saturday night sacrifices faithfully? And what about those who made it to temple every Sunday, the ones who really, really strived to live a good and worthy life? What about them? What happened to their world?

Records of that world (Egypt in **1500 BC**) were misplaced somewhere along the line, but there are plenty of other records. Museums in Egypt are filled with records, including laundry lists from various royal palaces. Thousands of transactions from before and after the time of Moses are available, but records from Moses' time? Zip. Zilch. Nada. Nothing of meaning regarding Egyptians (wicked or upright) from Moses' day can be seen. The only information retrieved from Moses' time states Yahweh's campaign to plant Abraham's seed in the land he pledged he was going to give them got under way with a very large splash.

Egypt had ridden the broken backs of Jewish people to the good life for four hundred years, then it was time to shuffle the deck and redeal. Everything Egypt sent around went around, and it came back again after to drop down on unsuspecting Egyptian heads.

Egypt rallied quickly, though, for evidence indicates peace and plenty returned some two hundred years later. Egyptian people thronged their temples again, thrilled at a new chance to revive the good old days.

Egyptians who left with the Jews may not have had such sweet lives, but they were the only ones with a chance at a notable future.

Egypt regained influence in the area and retained it until it was time to launch the next stage in Yahweh's plan. Once again, humans began to flirt with the haughty notion of erecting their very own order. Instead, Egypt and the nations around her were wolfed down like so many chunks of kibble by the dreadful dogs of change.

"But I feel so concerned about all those poor, precious souls."

Do you really? Why would you feel concern for persons who enslaved God's nation? How can your uneasiness benefit them now? They weren't overly affected when they had the chance to do something about it, and not much regard was shown by other nations, either, ones that stood by watching, wishing they also owned Hebrew slaves.

Why should people living today feel concern for a bunch of heartless heathen who lived in times past? The relationship between the real God and one's own self is more important now.

Yahweh, Israel, and the people of Canaan . . .

Ex 23:20 - I will send my angel before you. He will lead you in the right way. He will take you to a place I have prepared. Listen to him, then do as he says. Do not upset him, for he will not pardon your transgressions. He is not allowed because he wears my name. If you attend to his voice, and do all that he tells you, I will be an enemy to your enemies and I will oppose any who oppose you.

My angel will accompany you and lead you into the lands of the Amorites, Hittites, Perizzites, Canaanites, Hivites, and Jebusites.
I will cause people in all these nations to scatter before you.

27 - I will send a trembling before you.
I will destroy everyone who lives in the lands you enter.
I will cause all your opponents to turn their backsides to you and flee.

29 - I will not remove them in a single year so the land does not become barren and so the beasts of the field do not outnumber you. I am going to cast them out from before you little by little until you are swelled in number and can better tend the land.
I will establish your borders from the Red Sea all the way to that great sea (the Mediterranean). And they will reach out across the desert the whole way to the Euphrates. I will give the people in all these countries into your hands and you will drive them out before you.

33:1 - Yahweh said to Moses, *Get going, you and all those you delivered from Egypt, and move up to the land I promised to give Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the same land I also said I would give their seed.*

Num 21:21 - Israel sent its messengers to Sihon, who served as leader of the Amorites, saying, *We want to pass through your land, and we vow not to turn to either side into your fields and vineyards. We also swear not to drink water out of your wells. We will stay on the king's highway only until we are out of your land.*

Sihon, however, refused to let Israel through; rather, he assembled his entire army and attacked Israel in the wilds near Jahaz. He engaged in warfare against Israel, but they struck him with the edge of the sword and took his land.

32 - Moses sent spies to Jaazer and they took its towns and ran off the Amorites living there. When they turned in the direction of Bashan, Og, Bashan's king, led all his people out to fight with Israel at Edrei. Yahweh said, Do not fear him, Moses, since I have already given Og over into your hand - Og, his people, and his land. You will treat him the same as you treated Sihon, the ruler of the Amorites. Do you remember him? Sihon was the one who used to rule over in Heshbon. So they smote Og, his sons, and all his people until there was no one left among the living. Then they took Og's land.

31:6 - Moses sent them forth to battle, one thousand from every tribe. And they clashed with the Midianites, doing what Yahweh had told them and killing all the Midianite males, the kings with the rest.

Dt 1:6 - Yahweh, our God, spoke to us in Horeb, and said, You have lived on this mountain long enough. Prepare yourselves. The time has come to go to the mount of the Amorites, and to places nearby, to the plains and hills and valleys to the south, to the shores of the sea all the way to the Canaanite lands, and to Lebanon, and over to the great river, over to the river Euphrates. I have laid out all the land before you; go now and take it. Go get all the land Yahweh swore to your fathers, to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. And remember this: not only did Yahweh promise to give the land to your fathers, he promised it to their seed who would come after them . . . to you.

31:1 - Moses spoke to Israel, saying, I am an hundred and twenty years of age today. I will no longer lead you. Yahweh says I cannot cross over the Jordan river. Your God, Yahweh, will go over before you. Yahweh is planning to destroy all those nations in your sight and you will take them. From now on, Joshua will lead you. That is what Yahweh has asked. And if Yahweh gets it, you may be sure he will do to their nations just like he did to Sihon and Og, the two kings that used to reign over the Amorites. Yahweh will do the same thing to these lands as he did to other lands he destroyed. He will deliver them up before you. When Yahweh does this, you must act just as I told you. You must be strong and very brave. Do not fear them. Do not fear them or anybody else, either. Yahweh, your God, will be with you. Yahweh will never fail or forsake you.

Yahweh, Joshua, Israel, and the people of Canaan . . .

Josh 1:1 - Moses, Yahweh's servant, died, and Yahweh spoke to Joshua, son of Nun, protégé of Moses, saying, My servant Moses is dead and you must take yourselves across the river Jordan, you and the ones to whom I will assign all these lands, the children of Israel.

Any land touched by the bottom of your feet is land I will give you. Like I told Moses, your boundary will reach from the desert to Lebanon, then all the way over to the great river (Euphrates) toward the east into land occupied by the Hittites. It will also extend to that great sea (Mediterranean) and then out to lands that lay far to the west. No one will stand against you your entire life. Like I was with Moses, so will I be with you, and I promise to never fail you or disown you if you remain strong. If you are courageous, I swear to give you the land of all these nations. I swear to give you the same land I promised Israel and the fathers.

2:1 - Joshua sent two men from Shittim to secretly spy out the land.

Joshua said, Go scout the land, especially the city of Jericho.

As soon as the spies got to Jericho, they went to the house of an harlot, one with the name of Rahab, and they decided to stay there with her.

9 - Rahab told the men, We realize Yahweh has given you our land and an unease about you has come over us. We are all weak because of you. We heard Yahweh dried up the waters of the Red sea as you left Egypt, plus we also heard what you did to Sihon and Og, the Amorite kings who lived on the other bank of the Jordan, the two kings you downright destroyed. Our hearts melted when we learned. No more courage was left in any of us because of you. Beyond doubt, Yahweh, your God, really is the God of heaven above and Earth below.

6:1 - Jericho was shut tight because of the children of Israel.

Jericho was shut tight and no one left or entered.

Yahweh asked Joshua, Now do you believe I am going to give you Jericho and its king and all its mighty men of valor?

The priests sounded their trumpets, the people all shouted, and the wall tumbled down. After that, Israel stormed into Jericho, with all of them rushing straight forward. And this is the way they took the city. **(20)**

25 - Joshua ordered that Rahab, the harlot, be saved, with the house of her father and everything she had.

Is it not a fact that Rahab is alive in Israel today in return for providing shelter to the men Joshua sent to spy out Jericho?

27 - Because Yahweh was with Joshua, his fame spread through the land. Yahweh told Joshua, Do not be fearful or confused. Take all the men of war and get over to Ai. I am going to turn the ruler of Ai over to you. I will give you him, his people, his city, and all his land. **(8:1)**

You must deal with Ai and its king the way you dealt with Jericho and its king, but this time all the spoil and animals in Ai are yours as a reward.

28 - Joshua torched Ai and devastated it for the ages.
Is Ai still not deserted even today?

9:1 - It transpired that all the rulers who lived on this side of the river Jordan, including those in the hills and valleys, and those living along the shore of the great sea close to Lebanon heard and they all clustered together as one to fight Joshua and Israel.

10:10 - Yahweh brought great discomfort upon them before Israel, and he slaughtered them there with a terrible massacre by Gibeon, pursuing after them as they ran down the path to Beth-horon. Israel killed them all the way from Azekah to Makkedah. After they tried escaping Israel on the trail leading to Beth-horon, Yahweh rained gigantic stones of hail down on them out of heaven all the way to Azekah. Many died, but more died by hail than by the swords of Israel's children.

Joshua cried out to Yahweh in Israel's hearing the day Yahweh gave the Amorites into their hand. As the people of Israel listened, he cried, Oh sun, remain where you are over Gibeon! And you, oh moon, do not depart from above the valley of Ajalon!

So the sun stood still, and the moon stayed, until the seed of Israel had avenged themselves on their enemies. Is this not recorded in the scroll of Jasher? Does he not state the sun stood in the midst of the heaven? Does he not state the sun did not set that entire day? There has never been a day since like the day Yahweh paid heed to words from an human, no day like the day Yahweh fought for Israel, anyway.

11:1 - When Jabin, king of Hazor, heard, he sent to Jobab, the ruler of Madon, and to all the kings of Shimron and Achshaph, including the ones that lived north of the mountains, and they all sallied forth to engage in battle against Israel, each king with his whole army beside him.

Yahweh told Joshua, Do not let them bother you, since tomorrow around this same time I will deliver them all up dead before Israel.

After Yahweh turned them over to Israel, Joshua slew them all, just as Yahweh had ordered him to do.

Moses, Yahweh's servant, had put Joshua in charge of completing everything Yahweh commanded him to do and Joshua did it all, leaving nothing undone that Yahweh ordered Moses to do. **(15)**

18 - Joshua battled these kings for a long time, and no city would sign a peace treaty with the nation of Israel. Nobody signed except for those living in Gibeon, the Hivites, with every other city defeated in war.

Yahweh hardened their hearts so they would attack Israel.
Yahweh did it so he could totally destroy them.
Joshua showed them no mercy, but he obliterated them the way Yahweh had ordered him through Moses.

23 - Joshua took all their land, just as Yahweh promised Moses he would. He gave it to Israel for their inheritance and he partitioned it according to their tribes. And the land rested from war.

23:1 - Long after Yahweh gave Israel rest from her enemies around and about, Joshua became old, stricken by age. He assembled all Israel, and said, I am old now and well along in years.

You saw what Yahweh, your God, did to those other people for you.

You know it was Yahweh, your God, who fought for you.

You know the remaining nations have already been divided up for you.

You know they will be the inheritance of your tribes.

Your boundaries, you may rest assured, will extend out from the Jordan, including the nations that were already destroyed, as well as nations far out west and all the way over to the great sea.

Yahweh, your God, will shove them out of the way before your very eyes. When he does, you will take their land like Yahweh, your God, said.

9 - Yahweh drove off greater and stronger nations than you. No nation has been able to face you up to today. One of you will chase a thousand, since Yahweh, your God, will fight for you as he promised.

Had Moses been present, he'd possibly have repeated what he'd said years before when he addressed the ragged bunch which was Israel, as they hunkered down outside the same promised land, peering in . . .

Dt 10:17 - Yahweh, your God, is God of gods.

Yahweh, your Lord, is Lord of lords.

Yahweh is very powerful.

Yahweh is immense.

Yahweh is majestic.

20 - You must respect Yahweh, your God.

You must serve Yahweh and cling to him.

You must commit to his name, for he is your glory and your God.

Yahweh did all these great and impressive things for you, things you saw with your own eyes. The day your forefathers went down to Egypt, they were just seventy souls in number. And now look, Yahweh, your God, has made you like the stars in heaven for multitude.

Nehemiah would expand on the theme a thousand years later . . .

Neh 9:5 - Rise up and praise Yahweh, your God, forever and always.
 Your most holy name, oh Yahweh, is glorified.
 Your name is exalted far above all blessing and praise.
 You alone are Yahweh (the one who will be).
 You alone arrayed the heavens.
 You arrayed the very Heaven of the heavens.
 You brought forth the abundance of Earth and everything on it.
 You formed the oceans and everything in them.
 You sustain it all, Yahweh, and the whole host of heaven obeys you.
 You are Yahweh, the God who chose Abraham.
 You are the God who found Abraham's heart unwavering before you.
 You swore a covenant with him, promising to give him all the lands of the Canaanites, Hittites, Amorites, Perizzites, Jebusites, and Girgashites.
 You also promised you would give their lands to Abraham's seed.
 You have now accomplished your word, for you are righteous.
 You gave them kingdoms and people. (22)
 You gave them the land of Sihon, king of Heshbon.
 You gave them the land of Og, king of Bashan.
 You increased their children as the stars of heaven.
 You led them into the land you promised their fathers.
 You led them into a land you said they could have as their own.
 You led them in and they did take the land. (24)
 You defeated those who lived in the land.
 You gave them into the hands of your people.
 You gave your people kings, as well as their subjects.
 You said your people could do whatever they wanted to them.
 You helped your people capture strong cities and a fat land.
 You gave them houses overflowing with many good things.
 You gave them a land with wells already in the ground.
 You gave them vineyards and oliveyards and fruit trees in abundance.

David confirmed it all in the **Psalms**.

Ps 105:4 - Focus on Yahweh.
 Remember his fabulous works and wonders.
 Remember the words of his mouth, you seed of his servant, Abraham.
 Remember the words of his mouth, you seed of Jacob, his chosen.
 Remember he is Yahweh (the one who will be) your God.
 He will remember his contract through all ages.
 He will remember his oath sworn unto a thousand generations.
 He will remember his agreement with Abraham.
 He will remember his promise to Isaac.
 He will remember his covenant to Jacob, confirmed as a law.
 He will remember his pact with Israel, his age-lasting accord.
 He will remember his pledge to give them the land of Canaan.

He will remember he vowed Canaan would be their inheritance.
 He vowed it when they were few in number.
 He vowed it when they were few, and aliens in the land, too.
 He remembered his holy oath to Abraham, his servant. (42)
 He set his people free in joy, his chosen in gladness.
 He gave them the lands of the heathen.
 He caused them to inherit the labor of all those people.
 He gave it to them so they would have a place to obey his laws.
 He gave it to them so they would have a place to keep his statutes.

Yahweh, Israel, and the Judges . . .

Jdgs 1:1 - After Joshua had died, the Israelites asked Yahweh, Who is going to challenge the Canaanites? Who will go out and fight for us? Yahweh said, Judah is going to go. All you must do is have faith that the Canaanites will be delivered into his hand.
 Judah went and Yahweh delivered the Canaanites and Perizzites into the hand of Israel. They killed more than a thousand of them in Bezek. (4)

2:7 - The people followed Yahweh all the days of Joshua and all the days of the elders who outlived Joshua, those who had witnessed the wonders Yahweh did for Israel with their own eyes.

10 - That generation died off and another generation arose.
 Israel did not know Yahweh or the things he had accomplished earlier.
 Israel worked evil before Yahweh by serving Baal, the heathen's god.
 Israel turned its back on Yahweh, the God of its fathers.
 Israel faltered as Yahweh's anger raged hot against it.
 Israel could no longer stand against its enemies. (14)

16 - Yahweh raised up judges (shaphat) who saved (yasha, liberated) the people of Israel from those who wanted to hurt them, but Israel did not listen to their judges. Israel quickly went whoring after other gods, and they bowed themselves before them. Israel turned from the way of the fathers, the ones who did obey Yahweh's commandments.
 When Yahweh raised up a judge, he stayed with the judge. He saved his people from the hand of their enemies all the days of the judge.
 After the judge was dead, the people returned to their old way and they soiled themselves more than the fathers. They chased after other gods and they obeyed them. They bowed themselves down before other gods, refusing to reject any of the unholy rites in which they were taking part. And they also refused to repent of their stubbornness.

3:8 - Yahweh's wrath flared fiercely against Israel.
 Yahweh turned them over to Chushanrishathaim, king of Mesopotamia.

Israel served Chushanrishathaim for eight years.
 Israel finally called on Yahweh, though, and he raised up a judge.
 Yahweh raised up Othniel, a son of Kenaz, Caleb's younger brother.
 Yahweh's spirit came on Othniel and he judged Israel.
 He took Israel to war and Yahweh gave the Mesopotamians into his hand.
 He defeated Chushanrishathaim and the land had forty years of peace.

Regarding the four hundred and fifty years that passed from Joshua to Samson, this can be said in favor of the seed of Israel: they toed the line the entire time. Gaps can be seen here and there, granted, but over the long haul, the nation of Israel faithfully followed its God.

During the three hundred or more years Israel really did toe the line, its population just grew and grew. The Jewish nation kept right on growing, for none of the nations around could resist it.

It can also be said that the judges (**shaphats**) carried on in the exact same way in the promised land as Yahweh's prophets say Messiah and the chosen ones will carry on when they take control of the world, as soon as he raises them up in the (hopefully) not-too-distant future.

The father of the family of Hebrew words created to denote "savior" or "save" is **yasha**. From this word came **Yahshua**, the name awarded the son of Abraham's promise. This genuine Jesus is no relative of the false "jesus" loved by people in the world, as anyone can see.

Yahshua, Yahweh's true seed, the son of Abraham and David, is no kin to anti-christendom's "jesus". Any who place their trust in this part-man and part-god (plus all-fantasy) whose advocates claim is the middle being in the heathen illusion named the "Trinity" are the same people God's son is coming back to wipe off the face of Earth.

The anti-christ that will be destroyed at the return of Yahweh's true son is pseudo-christendom, mother of the disgraceful lies that presently pollute the thinking of the whole Earth.

Yahweh and the first king of Israel . . .

1 Sam 8:7 - Yahweh asked Samuel, Have you heard what the people are saying? They did not refuse you, they refused me. Now they are saying Yahweh will never reign over them.

Samuel told those who asked for a king what Yahweh had said. **(10)**
 However, Israel refused to take Samuel's advice, and they said, No way! We want a king over us like all the other nations. We want a king of our own, one we can see, one to judge us, lead us, and fight our wars.
 Samuel listened to the people, then repeated their words to Yahweh.
 Yahweh said, Do what they want, Samuel. Give them a king. **(19)**

The next phase in Yahweh's plan with Earth required a visible king to visibly rule a visible kingdom, and it was about to get under way.

1 Sam 10:1 - Samuel raised the vial of oil. He poured it over the top of Saul's head. Then he kissed Saul, and said, Yahweh was the one that had me come here to anoint you king over his inheritance.

24 - Samuel asked the people, Do you see who Yahweh selected for you? Will you agree there is no one like him in the whole nation? And the people all shouted, God save the king!

13:2 - Saul drafted three thousand soldiers and stationed two thousand in Michmash, while one thousand quartered with Jonathan in Gibeah. Not long after, Jonathan attacked a Philistine stronghold in Geba. Not long after that, the rest of the Philistines heard.

5 - The Philistines came together to do battle with Israel. They fielded thirty thousand chariots. They also brought along six thousand horsemen. They marched into Michmash and set up a camp. The people immediately knew Jonathan had gotten them into big trouble. They started to worry and they hid themselves in caves, thickets, rocks, high places and pits. Some even crossed the Jordan into lands occupied by Gad and Gilead. And the whole time, Saul remained in Gilgal, with his subjects supporting him, but trembling.

The forty years Saul ruled as king of Israel marked an upswing in the fortunes of Abraham's children in the land. These same years marked a downswing in the fortunes of others in Canaan, especially the ones living in places controlled by the five great cities of Philistinia.

Saul could've governed longer and better if he'd avoided that trap of making decisions better left to Yahweh, but it was tough for Saul to let well enough alone, and he veered to the left.

Yahweh chose to replace Saul with a ruler more willing to advance his plan, a man who was delighted to do the will of his God.

David laid the foundation of a kingdom that deleted from history any trace of the nations surrounding it for a century.

Assyria's rise was waived and the nation accomplished nothing having value for the reigns of David and Solomon, those two Hebrew kings.

The same can be said for Egypt.

There wasn't a lot out of Babylon, either, one more budding power, a rising hammer with which Yahweh would nail nations and people.

And the pagans that would become the citizens of Greece and Rome? They were someplace up north of the Mediterranean prancing about and bowing to trees, rocks, and any other natural thing that turned them on, chiefly bright and gleamy things like the sun and moon.

Not before the divided kingdom led by the offspring of Solomon and David grew wholly vile did Yahweh call on the Greeks and Romans.

Yahweh lifted them up from wallowing in their mire, transforming the pair of peoples into prime players, ones he would exploit to bring off the most pivotal part of his plan: birth of the son of the covenant.

These things are presented to afford hope to those who wait for the age to come, an age when God's kingdom once again rules people on Earth, an age when the planet will be administered by the immortal offspring of God, seed of Abraham, Yahweh's friends, heirs of the world.

COVENANT

The Covenant concerning planet Earth.

Eph 2:12 - You lacked Christ in the past when you were gentiles.
You were aliens from the commonwealth of Israel.
You had no knowledge of the covenants of promise.
You had no hope.
You were without God (atheists) in the world.

Abraham and the Covenant.

Gen 12:2 - I will bring forth a great nation from your loins.
I will bless you.
I will bless those who bless you and curse those who curse you.
Mercy will be available to all Earth's people through you and your seed.

13:14 - Yahweh asked Abraham to raise up his eyes, saying, From where you are standing, look to the north, south, east, and west.
I will give you and your seed all the land you see throughout the ages.
I swear your seed will be a multitude, just like the dust of the Earth.
Abraham believed God.
God counted Abraham's belief the same as righteousness. **(15:6)**

7 - Abraham, I called you out of Chaldea so I could give you this land.
I promise you today you will inherit it.

9 - Animals and offerings by which the covenant was confirmed.

13 - A prophecy of future captivity and release.

18 - That same day, Yahweh made a covenant with Abraham, saying, I am promising today that I will give your children all this land, from the river of Egypt over to the great river, the Euphrates.

19 - A record of the fate of people occupying the land when the seed of Abraham took it for their own.

17:1 - Yahweh appeared to Abraham in his ninety-ninth year.
His name was changed from Abram to Abraham at that time.
His new name means Father (Eber, origin, source) of a multitude.

7 - I will bring my covenant into fruition using your descendants.
I will use your descendants and their descendants after them.
I will give you, Abraham, and the children who come after you, this land.
I will give you the land where you now live as aliens.
I will give you the whole land of Canaan as an age-lasting possession.
I will be your God.

11 - A verse saying circumcision was a token of the covenant.

22:15 - The angel of Yahweh's presence cried to Abraham from heaven once more, stating, I confirm it by myself (by my position, meaning: if it doesn't happen, I'm not really Elohim/God).

17 - In blessing you, I will both bless you and multiply your offspring.
Your seed (son) will possess the gate of his enemies.
All nations on Earth will be blessed because you and your son obeyed me.

It's hard to see how anything could be more apparent. Yahweh made an explicit promise to Abraham, vowing that he (Abraham) would inherit the land where he lived. The sojourn, the length of time he remained in the land, was just a first step. Individuals wanting to purchase and own property then were encouraged to spend time living on the desired land. It wasn't a bit like the speedy "Looky-Loo Walk-through" foisted upon a person who wants to possess property today.

Abraham left this world before receiving a single inch of the land he was promised. That is clear, for he was forced to buy the cave in which he would be entombed after with Isaac and Jacob, and with each of the "covenant wives": Sarah, Rebecca and Rachel. And it's possible that the mummified morpheus of Joseph inhabits the cave at Machpelah. Perhaps you remember that Joseph compelled his sons to promise by oath they'd carry his bones up out of Egypt to the land of Canaan after Yahweh had freed them, meaning Joseph believed very strongly in the covenant of a monarchy on Earth in the land of Canaan - or he was just one more aged, addled, and sun-blasted old geezer, trying to hedge his bets because he had no idea at all what awaited him when he croaked. You decide.

The truth is Yahweh promised these men, as well as all their faithful seed, the chance of inheriting Earth. If Yahweh really is God and if the covenant really does provide inheritance on Earth, then Abraham and all who believe like him must come back some day from the dead.

If they don't return, how can they have new life on a new Earth?

If they don't return, how will they ever inherit their property?

If Yahweh isn't really God (to entertain a senseless notion) the finest a person can wish for is to end up in a land filled with buffalo and beaver, where deer and antelope play, a place where the sky is never clouded and bleak, a place where calm streams meander through an abundance of cool dells, a place where mountains are made out of rock candy, a place where whipped-cream seas lap at spun-sugar shores.

Take it easy, for it'll also be a place where money trees are seen upon each horizon, planted there to allay angst amidst the poor souls that are experiencing the anguish of capital withdrawal.

Yahweh promised Abraham he'd be a great man.

Yahweh promised Abraham he'd have a great name.

Yahweh promised Abraham his name would be honored in all ages.

Yahweh promised Abraham one of his sons (a single male offspring of Abraham) would shower blessings down on the Earth.

Yahweh promised Abraham his son would overcome his enemies.

Yahweh promised Abraham his son would control the fate of anybody who tried to oppose him.

Finally, Yahweh promised Abraham his children would stay in the land conditionally through the ages according to their conduct.

Yahweh told Abraham the job of his descendants was to care for the land until his promised son appeared.

It wasn't a bad deal at all for Abraham, who was likely bored to tears living in the big city, and Ur of Chaldea was a city that offered as high a level of creature-comforts (relative to the day) as any of the larger and more up-to-date cities of the present.

Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Joseph died before getting their reward, their children became slaves in Egypt, and the years rolled by . . .

Ex 2:24 - Then Yahweh remembered his covenant with Abraham.

6:8 - Yahweh said to Moses, Tell the children of Israel Yahweh is ready to lead them into the land he promised Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Also, tell them Yahweh wants to give them the land as an inheritance.

23:13 - Turn from your fierce wrath and remember . . .

33:1 - . . . the land you promised Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

Lev 26:2 - Yahweh said, If you walk in my statutes, and hear my orders and do them, I will send you rain at all the right times and your land will bring forth its increase. You will eat your fill and live in the land safely. I will walk among you.

I will be your God and you will be my people. (12)

14 - If you do not hear and obey my commandments . . .
I will bring the land into such a desolation that your enemies dwelling in
the land now will be amazed by it.
And after, I will scatter you among the heathen. **(32)**

38 - You will die among the heathen.
The lands of your enemies will eat you alive.
Those who are left will pine away until they admit their evil.
They will pine away until they admit the evil of their fathers, too.

42 - I will remember my covenant with Jacob, Isaac, and Abraham.
I will remember the land, also, and it will be rid of them.
It will enjoy rest as it lays desolate without them.
And them?
Believe me, they will pay full measure for their wickedness.
For resisting my judgments they will pay.
For refusing to write my laws on their hearts they will pay.
In spite of that, even while they are in the lands of their enemies, I will
never completely cast them away, and I will never abhor them enough to
destroy them, for it would violate the covenant I made with them.
I am Yahweh, their God, am I not?
I am Yahweh, their God, and I will remember for their sake the promise
I made their fathers, those which I liberated from the land of Egypt in
sight of the heathen on the day I became their God.

Deut 1:8 - Consider this: I have laid the land before you. It is the very
same land Yahweh promised to your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob
and their seed after them. So get in there and possess it.

6:10 - After Yahweh, your Elohim, has led you into the land he promised
your fathers, you will get grand and goodly cities, containing houses that
you did not build, houses overflowing with all kinds of wonderful things.

9:5 - It is not for your own goodness or the goodness of your own heart
that you will get this land; it is because of the wickedness of the people
in the land now, the ones Yahweh will drive out before you.

27 - Remember your servants, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Do not think
about the stubbornness of these people, their wickedness, or their sins.
If you slew the people of Abraham, the Egyptians would just gloat. And
what they would say is, Since Yahweh could not bring them into the land
he vowed to give them because he grew to abhor them, he led them into
the desert and did away with them. But they are your people, Lord, and
your inheritance, also. They are the very same people you freed by way
of your great power and out-stretched arm.

29:10 - You have assembled here today before Yahweh, your God, to be inducted into his covenant. Yahweh is promising today to accept you for his own people; then Yahweh will be your God, the same way he promised your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

30:19 - I call upon heaven and Earth today to be witness against you, to witness that I have set life and death, blessing and curse, before you. I advise you to take life so both you and your children might live. I advise you to take life so you might love Yahweh, your God. I advise you to obey Yahweh's word and lay hold of him.

Yahweh is not just your life, but Yahweh is also the one who determines the span of your life. You will extend your lives in the land Yahweh gave your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob if you do what he says.

2 Kng 13:22 - Hazael, king of Syria, harassed Israel the whole reign of Jehoahaz, but Yahweh looked on Israel with favor and pitied them. And Yahweh also loved them because of the covenant he made with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. Yahweh chose not to do away with them or drive them from his presence at that time so Hazael, king of Syria, had to die.

Neh 9:7 - Yahweh, the God who chose Abram, who brought him from Ur of the Chaldeans, the God who named him Abraham, the God who judged him faithful, the God who promised to give him all the land of Canaan, as well as to his children after him, has now caused his word to be fulfilled by bringing about this part of his promise, for he is righteous.

Ps 105:4 - Seek Yahweh.

Seek Yahweh's power.

Seek Yahweh's company in every age.

Remember the marvelous works he has done.

Remember the word he has spoken, you seed of Abraham, his servant.

Remember the word he has spoken, you seed of Jacob, his elect.

He is Yahweh, our Elohim, and his judgments fill the Earth.

He will remember the covenant he made to last through all ages.

He will remember the word he spoke unto a thousand generations.

He will remember the covenant he made with Abraham.

He will remember the pledge he gave to Isaac.

He will remember the covenant he confirmed to Jacob as a decree.

He will remember the oath he gave Israel by an age-lasting promise.

He will remember the vow he made to give you the land of Canaan.

42 - He remembered his holy covenant with his servant, Abraham.

He set his people free from Egypt with joy.

He delivered his chosen with singing.

He gave his people the lands of the heathen.

He gave his people everything the heathen had worked for so they would have a place of their own, a place where they could follow Yahweh's laws, a place where they could keep Yahweh's commandments.

Micah 7:20 - In the future, you will bring forth everything you swore to Jacob. You will fulfill the covenant you made with Abraham, which is the same oath you swore to our fathers in days of old.

Not only can the covenant of promise be seen in the old testament, it can also be seen throughout the new testament.

The speech below was delivered just prior to the first appearance of the son Yahweh covenanted to Abraham.

The words were spoken by Zechariah, father of John, the Baptizer.

Lk 1:67 - Zechariah was filled with holy spirit and he spoke in prophecy, saying, Praise the Lord God of Israel for visiting and saving his people. Yahweh has brought forth an horn of salvation in the line of his servant, David, just as he swore by all his holy prophets since the beginning. Yahweh promised he would deliver us from our adversaries. Yahweh promised he would also save us from the hand of all who hate us. Yahweh has granted us mercy, just as he promised our fathers. Yahweh remembered his holy covenant. Yahweh remembered he made a vow to Abraham, our father. Yahweh remembered he swore that after he delivered us from everyone who hates us, we could worship him in holiness and righteousness, having no fear all the days of our lives.

The covenant of promise constitutes a vital part of the gospel taught after Abraham's son of promise was raised and glorified.

Acts 3:19 - You have to amend your lives and return to God so your sins may be blotted out in the time of regeneration which will come from the Lord after he sends Jesus Christ, the same Jesus we already mentioned to you, and the same Jesus who will stay in the heavens until the days of renewal God's holy prophets have spoken of since this age began. Moses uttered the truth to our fathers when he said, Yahweh, your God, will raise up a prophet like me from among your own people. You must be willing to listen to him.

Samuel and all the prophets who came after him spoke of this day. You are descended from the prophets and from the covenant which God established with our fathers when he told Abraham all people who dwell on Earth would be blessed by means of his seed. This is the reason God raised his son, Jesus, then sent him to you (Jews) first to bless you and teach you a way whereby you might each halt your own evil conduct.

7:2 - The God of glory appeared to our father, Abraham.
Yahweh told him, Move out of your country.
Move away from your kin and go to a land I will show you.
As soon as he could, Abraham went.

5 - God did not give Abraham an inheritance in the land, not even an inch on which to stand, but he promised it to him as an inheritance. And also, he promised it to his offspring after him. And God made that promise a long time before Abraham had even fathered a child.

Rom 4:13 - The promise that said Abraham would inherit Earth was not granted with a necessity Abraham and his children could obey God's law; rather, the promise of God said it because God will assign righteousness to everyone having the same faith as Abraham.
If the promise was only made to those who observe the law, there could be no place for faith and it would be pointless to call it a promise.

20 - Abraham did not wobble at God's promise as someone without faith may have. Abraham's belief gave him power instead and he offered God all the glory. He was totally persuaded that God could and would do just what he said. We know it was Abraham's conviction that God counted as righteousness, and we know it was not only written about Abraham (that his faith would be accepted as righteousness) but faith will be accepted as a replacement for righteousness in any others who have also believed into God, the one who raised our Lord Jesus from the dead.

15:8 - Jesus Christ was a minister to the circumcision (Jews).
Jesus Christ was sent to announce God's truth.
Jesus Christ was sent to confirm the promises to the fathers.

Gal 3:6 - Abraham trusted in the promise of God, and Abraham's belief was accounted to him in lieu of righteousness. In this same way, anyone who believes like Abraham will be counted as Abraham's seed.
God's covenant, as if it knew God always intended to rescue the gentiles through faith, made the gospel clear to Abraham by saying, Everyone on Earth can be blessed through you. Therefore, the covenant says people who believe like Abraham will be blessed along with Abraham.

16 - The promise was offered to Abraham and his seed, but Genesis did not say, To your seed (in the plural) like it was speaking about a sizeable number. Genesis says, To your seed (in the singular) like it was speaking about one. That one seed, of course, is the Christ.
I say this, too: the covenant God confirmed earlier when he promised to supply a Christ cannot be put aside by a law that came four hundred and thirty years later, since a law cannot nullify a promise.

If inheritance came through the law, it would not be by way of a promise, but God told Abraham he would receive his inheritance by promise.

27 - Those who have faith in this Christ Jesus are God's children.
The ones who are baptized into Christ and have put on Christ.
There are no more Jews or gentiles.
There are no more slaves or free.
There are no more males or females.
There is only one person in Christ Jesus.
Therefore, those who are truly in Christ are Abraham's seed.
They are Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise.

Heb 11:8 - It was his faith that gave Abraham the strength to obey the time he was urged to relocate to a place he would one day receive for his inheritance. He did not even know where he was going, but his faith gave him the strength to dwell in the land of promise like he was living in some strange country, staying in tents with Isaac and Jacob, also heirs of this same promise, since they all sought a place which had its foundation built and maintained by God.

Isaac and the covenant.

Gen 26:2 - Yahweh appeared to Isaac, and said, Do not move to the land of Egypt. Instead, remain in a land I will show you. If you sojourn in the land, I will stay with you and bless you. I will give all this land to you and your seed, and also, I will fulfill the covenant I made with Abraham, your father, when I vowed I would multiply his children until they were as the stars in heaven and set them above all nations. The blessing will be made available to everybody on Earth as a result of your seed. And the reason I will do it is because Abraham lived as I told him, following my way.

24 - Yahweh showed himself to Isaac again, saying, I am the God of your father. I am the God of Abraham. Have no fear, since I will be with you to bless and multiply your descendants for Abraham's sake. Isaac set up an altar there, and it was the place he first called the name of Yahweh upon himself.

Jacob and the covenant.

28:4 - Isaac sent for Jacob. He blessed him and charged him by saying, El Shaddai (God Almighty) will bless you, making you very productive and causing you to increase greatly. He will pour the blessing of Abraham on you and your descendants and he will cause you to inherit the land where you now live like aliens, the same land he promised Abraham. After Isaac said it, he sent Jacob away.

10 - Jacob left Beersheba, bound for Haran, and he decided to pass the night at a certain place, for the sun was setting. Once he was asleep, he dreamed he saw a ladder standing on the Earth.

He saw that its top reached into the heaven.

He saw angels of God (the Elohim) going up and down the ladder.

He saw Yahweh at the top of the ladder.

He heard Yahweh say, I am Yahweh, the God of your father, Abraham.

He also heard Yahweh say, I am Isaac's God.

I will give you the land on which you are sleeping.

I will give this land to your descendants, too.

I will make your seed as the dust of the Earth for multitude.

I will bless all nations on Earth because of your seed.

I will be with you and keep you everywhere you go.

I will bring you back again to this land.

I will not leave you before I make good all I have promised.

35:9 - God appeared to Jacob when he came out of Padan-aram.

God blessed him, and said, Your name was Jacob, but it will not be Jacob (supplanter) any more. Your name will now be Israel (ruling with God).

Elohim said, I am El Shaddai. You will now be fruitful and multiply, and a nation and company of nations will come from you. Kings will come out of your loins. Also, I will give you the land I gave Abraham and Isaac.

David and the covenant.

David, the Hebrew king, was given promises, but as the others, David died before he could collect the benefits.

"Was David upset?"

The answer: no, he wasn't. Actually, David handled it quite well, since many years after his kingdom was established, far before David went to sleep, a prophet named Nathan was asked to speak to the king.

1 Chr 17:7 - This is what you will say to my servant, David . . .

I took you from the sheeppcote.

I released you from herding sheep.

I anointed you as king over my people, Israel.

I was with you wherever you went.

I destroyed your foes in front of your face.

I made your name great like the names of other great men on Earth.

I will prepare the place for my people, Israel, though.

I will prepare a place to plant them and they will live in their own land.

I will ensure they are never removed from it again.

I will ensure they are never again wasted by the children of evil.

I will not let it be like when I first put judges over my people, Israel.

I will continue to beat down all your enemies, too.

I will be the one who builds a place for you.
I will do it when your days are over.
I will do it when you are sleeping with your fathers.
I will exalt one of your sons and establish his throne for all ages.
I will appoint him to build a place where my name will dwell.
I will empower the administration of his kingdom over the ages.
I will be his father and he will be my son.
I will never take my mercy from him as I took it from Saul.
I will set him up in my house and my kingdom for all ages.
I will establish his throne through all time.
It was these words and this vision that Nathan spoke to David.

Promises to Abraham provide the **land** for God's kingdom.

Promises to David provide a **king** and **throne**.

Like Abraham must be raised to inherit his place in the promised land, David must be raised, for he was assured he'd see his own son seated on a throne in the Kingdom of God. David was assured he'd see his son hold a position of leadership in this kingdom until the end of the ages.

As the following verses indicate, David didn't necessarily believe that God's promise had to be fulfilled anytime soon after he died.

2 Sam 7:18 - King David went into the tabernacle and he sat down in the presence of Yahweh. He said, Who am I, oh Yahweh? What is my house? Oh Yahweh, why have I have been brought to such a lofty position? I am sure you are talking about my family line for a long while to come.

21 - It is for the sake of your word and for your heart's desire that you have done all these great things and revealed them to your servants.

23 - Is there any other nation on Earth like Israel, your people?
Is there any other nation you made to redeem for yourself?
You have committed yourself to Israel.
You have said Israel will be your people through all time.
Yahweh, you have said you will always be Israel's God.
Yahweh, please bring to pass now and in all ages the promise you made to your servant and his seed.
Do what you said so your name will always be honored.
Do what you said so all will know Yahweh of hosts is Israel's God.
Please let the house of your servant, David, be confirmed before you.
Oh Yahweh of hosts, oh God of Israel, your servant cannot fail to notice you have sworn to build me an house. And this is why your servant found it in his heart to offer his prayer to you.
You are Yahweh, our God.
Your word is right and true.
You have promised this to your servant.

May it please you to bless your servant and his house.
May it please you to keep your servant's house before you for all ages.
May you remember, oh Yahweh, you promised to bless my house forever.

23:1 - These are the last words of David . . .
Yahweh's spirit spoke through me.
Yahweh's words rolled off my tongue.
Yahweh, the God of Israel, Israel's rock, told me, Anyone who rules over other humans must be impartial and rule with reverence for God.
And even though my house is not presently that way before God, he still offered me an everlasting covenant, ordered and certain in every way.
No other means of salvation suits me.
Nothing else interests me at all

Ps 89:33 - I will not utterly remove my loving-kindness from my Christ.
I will not allow my truth to be turned into lies.
I will not break my covenant.
I will not change the words that have come from my mouth.
I swore once in all my holiness I would never lie to David.
I said his seed will reign for all ages.
I said his throne will be like the sun before me.
I said his throne will be established throughout time.
I said it will be like the moon, my faithful witness in heaven.

102:13 - God will rise up and have mercy on Zion.
The time to favor her (yes, the set time) is coming.
Then the heathen will fear Yahweh's name.
Then the kings of Earth will see his glory.
Then Yahweh will build up Zion.
Then Yahweh will appear in all his brilliance.
This is written for generations in the future.
This is written for those who will come forth to praise Yahweh.

110:1 - The Lord said to my lord, Sit here at my right hand until I make your enemies your footstool.
He will continue to sit there until Yahweh sends the rod of his power out of Zion to reign in the midst of his enemies.
And his people will be willing when he is in charge.

132:10 - For the sake of your servant, David, do not alter the objective of your anointed. In truth, you vowed to David you will never change the promise you made, the oath which says, I will place one of your sons, the product of your own body, on your throne. Also, you swore, If your seed abide by all the words of the covenant and law, I will teach them my way and their children will occupy your throne through the ages, too.

Yahweh has chosen Zion and he wants it for his habitation.
Yahweh has chosen Zion as his rest (sabbath) for the ages.
Yahweh will dwell in Zion, a place he favors above all.
Yahweh says, I promise to provide a blessing for her.
I will satisfy her poor with bread.
I will clothe her priests with salvation.
I will give reason for her chosen to shout with joy.
It is there I will cause David's horn to bud.
It is there I will maintain a light for my anointed.
It is there his adversaries will be draped with shame.
It is there his kingdom will increase under its own power.

Is 9:7 - There will be no end to the growth of his government.
There will be no end to peace.
There will be no end to David's throne or kingdom.
The kingdom will be ordered and instituted in judgment.
The kingdom will dispense justice from that age on, even for all time.
The unwavering desire of Yahweh of hosts will bring it about.

11:1 - A rod will spring forth from the stalk of Jesse.
A branch will grow from Jesse's root.
Yahweh's spirit will be upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding,
of counsel and might, of knowledge and respect for Yahweh.
He will not judge by the sight of his eyes.
He will not judge by the hearing of his ears.
He will judge the compliant with righteousness.
He will judge the meek ones of Earth with equality.
He will smite the Earth with the rod of his mouth.
He will slay the wicked with the breath of his lips.

16:5 - His throne will be established in mercy.
He will occupy his throne in truth in the tabernacle of David.
He will judge and seek judgment.
He will foster the growth of righteousness.

Jer 23:5 - The time is coming, says Yahweh.
It will be a time when I raise up a righteous branch to David.
It will be a time when a king will reign and prosper.
It will be a time when judgment and justice are executed on Earth.

30:7 - Alas, that day will be great.
It will be a day so great there will never be another day like it.
It will be the time of Jacob's trouble, but he will be delivered from it.
In that day, says Yahweh of hosts, I will tear the yoke from your neck.
I will rip off your ties and aliens will not serve themselves of you again.

Instead, you will obey Yahweh, your Elohim, and David, your king.
Instead, you will obey the one I raise up for you.

33:15 - In that day, and at that time, I will cause a righteous branch to issue out of David. He will rule the land with judgment and justice.
It will be then that Judah is delivered and Jerusalem dwells safely.

Ezk 34:22 - My sheep will never again be prey.
I will place one shepherd over them, even my servant, David.
I will allow David to feed them and lead them.
I, Yahweh, will be their God, and my servant, David, their prince.
I, Yahweh, have spoken it.

Amos 9:11 - I will rebuild David's tabernacle, the one that has fallen.
I will tend to its damage and raise up its ruins.
I will put it back together the way it was in the old days.

 Promises concerning **land** appeared in both old and new testaments.
 Promises concerning the future **throne**, **king**, and **kingdom** may also be found in both testaments, as seen in new testament verses below.

Mt 1:1 - This is a book of the lineage of Jesus, the Christ.
It is a book of the lineage of the son of David and Abraham.

Lk 1:30 - The angel said to Mary, You will bear a son and call him Yeshua. He will be grand, a child of the Highest. The Lord God will grant him the throne of his father, David. He will govern Jacob's house through all the ages and his kingdom will have no end.

Acts 2:29 - May I speak plainly about the patriarch, David?
May I remind you he died, he was buried, and his tomb is here yet today? Since David was a prophet, he saw that God had taken a vow to raise up a Christ from fruit out of David's loins, and of his family line, to occupy his throne. David knew this before-hand, and it is clear he was talking about the resurrection of Christ.
God brought David forth for Israel to be their king, and he gave him the following testimony: I swear that David, the son of Jesse, is a man after my own heart, a man who will fulfill all my desires.
And now, of this man's seed in line with the promise, God has raised up a savior: Jesus, from Nazareth. **(13:22)**

32 - We announced the good news (gospel) to you so the promise given to the fathers could be fulfilled by God in us, their seed, after he raised up Jesus and returned him to life. David's second psalm put it like this: You are my son. Today I have begotten you.

As far as God returning him from death and saving him from corruption, a psalm says along these lines: I will give you the sure mercies of David. Another says: You will not allow your holy one to see corruption. Consequently, after David served his own generation according to God's will, he went to sleep and saw corruption, but Jesus, the one God raised back up again, saw none.

15:16 - The writing of this prophet also agrees, for it is written: When I come back and raise up David's tabernacle, the one which has fallen, I will rebuild its ruins and appoint it so the remainder of Jews, along with gentiles who have called themselves by my name, may follow Yahweh.

Rom 1:3 - The son of God, Jesus Christ, our Lord, rose from the family of David as far as flesh is concerned. It is the power used to raise him from the dead that shows he is God's son.

2 Tim 2:8 - Jesus Christ, who came out of David's family line, returned from the dead according to the gospel I teach.

Rev 3:7 - These words come from the holy and true one, one that holds the keys (the dominion and power) of David. Whatever he closes cannot be opened and whatever he opens cannot be closed.

5:5 - One of the elders in the vision said, Do not cry, for the lion of the tribe of Judah, who arose from David's branch, has prevailed. He is the one who will open the book and activate its seven seals.

11:15 - The seventh angel sounded his trumpet.
Loud voices filled the heaven, shouting, The kingdoms of this world have now become kingdoms of our Lord and his Christ!
He will reign over them for all time!

22:16 - I, Jesus, sent my angel to you; now you must share these things with all the ecclesias (churches, groups of called out ones).

Yahweh created a kingdom (a base of power) in ancient Israel.
People who won't agree ancient Israel was a real, historical nation on Earth are like those who suppose the moon and Mars landings were shot out in the desert near Needles, California.
Whether astronauts truly landed on the moon isn't a big deal.
What's a big deal is the fact Yahweh truly is Israel's King.

When the Kingdom of God ruled Israel, its people were too stubborn and apathetic to represent it appropriately so Yahweh evicted them off his land. Since that time, Yahweh has fed, tended, and toughened their

bloodline, ensuring it remains robust and strong, looking forward to that time he utilizes Israel to return his kingdom to Earth. Before then, the prophets of Yahweh predicted the seed of Abraham would experience a sequence of blessing and curse, scattering and gathering.

Gen 12:3 - Yahweh said to Abraham, I will bless (approve of) those who bless you and curse (disapprove of) those who curse you.

27:29 - The blessing was passed from Isaac to Jacob (Israel).

Num 24:9 - The prophet, Balak, was cursed for cursing Israel.

Curses and Blessings

Possession of the land meant meeting certain conditions.

Dt 4:40 - You must follow Yahweh's laws and commandments.
You must do them so it goes well with you and your children after you.
You must do them so Yahweh, your God, lengthens the time he allows you to live on the land he is willing to give you for all ages.

5:16 - Yahweh, your God, told you to honor your father and mother.
You must do it so your days are lengthened and everything goes well with you in the land Yahweh, your God, will grant you.

6:16 - You must not test Yahweh, your God, as you did at Massah; rather, you should diligently follow his commandments, as well as the testimonies and pronouncements he gives you. You must do what is good and laudable. If you do what is right in Yahweh's sight, all will go well for you. And you will possess and live in the good land Yahweh promised your fathers.

11:22 - If you obey all the commandments I gave you, and if you respect Yahweh, your God, walking in his ways and holding on to him, Yahweh says he will banish the people who now live in the land before you, and you will possess nations greater and stronger than you.

26:16 - Yahweh, your God, has charged you today to observe all his laws and judgments. Yahweh wants you to honor and do them with your whole heart and soul.

You agreed today that Yahweh will be your God.

You promised to walk in his way and follow his laws and judgments.

You promised to obey his pronouncements and listen to his voice.

Yahweh has sworn today that you are his special people.

Yahweh has sworn today that if you follow all his commandments, he will set you over every other nation he formed in glory, name, and honor.

Yahweh has sworn you will be his holy (separate, special) people.
Yahweh, your God, has sworn you will be his possession.

27:9 - Moses and the priests (Levites) talked to all Israel, stating, Hear and pay attention. Hear, oh Israel, for today you have become people of Yahweh, your God. Therefore, you must follow the laws of Yahweh, your God, and obey all the decrees and doctrines he gives you.

28:1 - If you strictly observe the word of Yahweh, your God, obeying all the commandments I delivered to you today, then Yahweh, your God, will set you on high, way over others on Earth, but blessing from Yahweh can only come on you and overwhelm you if you obey his voice.

9 - Yahweh will allot you to be a people separate to himself. If you obey all the laws of Yahweh, your God, and do his will, everybody on Earth will know you are called by Yahweh's name and they will fear you.

12 - Yahweh will shower all his precious treasures down on you.
Your land will receive rain in all the right seasons.
Yahweh will bless the labor of your hands.
You will lend to others, not borrow.
Yahweh will make you the head, not the tail.
You will always be above, never below, if you love what Yahweh, your God, tells you, but you will only prosper if you hear and do what he says.

15 - If you will not follow the words of Yahweh, your God, and if you will not hear and do his laws, the ones I delivered to you today, these curses will all come upon you and engulf you.

63 - As Yahweh rejoiced over you before, doing you good and multiplying you, he will rejoice over you then to destroy you and bring you to naught. You will be driven off the land you entered and occupied and Yahweh will scatter you among all people, from one end of Earth to the other. While you are gone, you will worship gods of wood and stone, the gods of aliens, gods you or your fathers never knew.

You will find no peace in these nations.
Your foot will find no place to rest.
Yahweh will send timid hearts, failing eyes, and weariness of mind on you.
So long as you are there, your lives will always hang in the balance.
You will exist in fear day and night, never knowing how long you will live.
When it is morning, you will cry, Oh God, please make it evening!
When it is evening, you will cry, Oh God, please make it morning!
Your frightened hearts will feed off their own fear.
Your astonished eyes will not believe what they are seeing.

29:9 - You must conform to the conditions of the covenant carefully. You must keep them . . . if you hope to do well in everything else. You are standing here today before Yahweh, your God - you, the leaders of your tribes, your elders and officials, all the men of Israel, your sons and your daughters, your wives, and each of the aliens who reside among you, from the ones who cut wood to the ones who fetch water. You are here to enter into a covenant with Yahweh, your God. You are here to become part of a promise Yahweh is going to make. Yahweh is prepared to designate you as his people today. Yahweh is waiting eagerly to become your God like he swore to both you and your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Yahweh's covenant and oath are not being offered to you alone, but they are also being offered to all those who are here today in the company of Yahweh, your God. In fact, the covenant and vow of Yahweh will even be offered to some who are not here today.

30:1 - When all the blessings and curses I placed before you have found you and entered your minds as you are languishing away in whichever land Yahweh, your God, scatters you among the heathen, if you will come back to Yahweh, your God, and observe his word and obey all the things I gave you today, both you and your offspring, with all your heart and soul, then Yahweh, your God, will end your captivity and show you mercy. Yahweh will return, and he will bring you out of all the nations into which he dispersed you. Even if you were driven away into the farthest corner of heaven, Yahweh, your God, will find you and bring you back.

31:27 - I know all about your aptitude to rebel. I have far more insight into your stiff necks than I ever wanted. Even now, while I am yet alive and present with you, you keep on fighting Yahweh. How much more will you resist him when I am dead? Gather all the elders and tribal leaders here before me so I can repeat these words in their hearing and call upon heaven and Earth to be witness against them.

You ask why?

It is because I was told after I die you will totally defile yourselves.

I was told you will turn from the path I gave you.

I was told evil will come on you in the distant future, too, for you will do evil in Yahweh's sight and enrage him with the works of your hands.

Josh 8:30 - Joshua set up an altar on top of Mt Ebal to Yahweh, God of Israel. He built it like Moses ordered him, in line with instructions seen in the scroll of laws given him by Moses. The altar was built from uncut stones, stones that never came in contact with human tools. Burnt offerings and peace offerings were sacrificed on the altar. Joshua copied the laws Moses had given him onto a stone. Joshua did it in front of the children of Israel.

34 - Joshua spoke all the words of blessing and curse the same way they appeared in the scroll of laws. Joshua did not fail to speak one word out of all the words he was ordered to speak in Israel's hearing, including all the women, the children, and the aliens who lived among them.

Joshua is thought to have been born about **1540 BC**.

The elders who outlived **Joshua**, those who were there after Yahweh gave Canaan to the Jews, the ones who followed Yahweh's covenant, had likely died off by **1400 BC**.

For the most part, the children of Israel supported Yahweh and lent their ears to the judges he sent to bail them out of their blunders.

By **1000 BC**, the time Solomon's realm is believed to have reached an apex, God's promise to Abraham had blossomed into a nation which ruled much of the "civilized world" of the day, to employ words the Reverends and Scholars adore. "Uncivilized world" is closer to truth.

"Civilization", in reality, is only whatever amount of the planet and its population the thugs on top at the time decide they must enslave to stay on top. Others living on Earth are less than civil and don't count.

But it's time to get back to Solomon . . .

Since he had too many smarts for his own good, Solomon couldn't see he was flying his kingdom into the ground, and fly it in he did.

It's no shock to learn Hebrew dominance began its on-again off-again four century slide into oblivion around the same time.

Josiah got the throne about **640 BC**, almost one hundred years after dispersion of the northern ten-tribed division of the Hebrew's dominion. In Josiah's time, it was hard to find any true difference between Judah and surrounding nations. Jews were so out of touch with their covenant that ruler and people alike went into shock after a copy of the promises to the fathers showed up during restoration of the temple.

2 Chr 34:1 - Josiah was eight years old when he first became the king in Jerusalem. He ruled for thirty-one years and did what was proper in Yahweh's eyes. He followed the pattern of his father, David, and never swerved to the right hand or left.

After he had ruled for eight years, when he was still young, he began to search for the God of his father, David. He started his twelfth year as king by cleansing Judah and Jerusalem, including all the high places, and all the groves. He also tore down all the idols. Josiah was present when the altars of Baal were demolished and all the statues raised high above them fell to the ground. They overturned all the groves and the images, then mashed the pieces into dust and poured it out on top of the graves of those who had offered sacrifices to idols. When this was done, they burned the bones of the priests on their own altars.

And that is the way Josiah cleansed Judah and Jerusalem.

8 - During the eighteenth year of his rule, when he had purified his land of all idolatry, Josiah chose certain men to restore Yahweh's temple.

14 - While they were hauling out some money they had discovered in the dwelling-place of Yahweh, Hilkiah, the priest, happened to find a copy of the scroll of laws Moses received from Yahweh.

Hilkiah gave the scroll to Shaphan, and Shaphan sent it out to the king. When Josiah heard the words of the scroll (he said) . . .

Go and ask Yahweh for me, along with all the rest that are left in Judah and Israel, about things contained in this scroll. The scroll says Yahweh is pouring out all this horrifying wrath on us because our fathers did not obey his covenant and do the things written in it. **(21)**

23 - Huldah, the prophetess, said, You will do well in believing Yahweh is preparing to bring calamity on this place, and on the people who live in it, even the curses contained in the book read before king Josiah.

Go and tell this king of Judah, the one that sent you to ask me regarding all that is scribed in the scroll, Yahweh, the God of Israel, says, Because you trusted me with your whole heart and put yourself in my hands when you heard about all the evil I am bringing on this place and its people you will be gathered to your fathers (the grave) in peace and not have to see all the ruin I will send on this land and those living in it. **(26)**

29 - Josiah ordered all the elders and people in Judah and Jerusalem to gather before him so he could read the words written in the book of the covenant they discovered in Yahweh's house. He read it all, and the ones who were present heard him. After, Josiah stood in the king's place and formally reaffirmed the covenant, pledging to respect Yahweh and do all Yahweh's commandments, pronouncements and rules with his whole heart and soul. Josiah also promised he would do everything found in the book of Yahweh's covenant.

33 - Israel's people followed Yahweh, the God of their fathers. Israel's people followed Yahweh for the rest of Josiah's reign.

Unfortunately for Judah, in fewer years than it took to live out the average human life, the people returned to the old ways and Yahweh was left with no choice but to pour the remaining curses out on them.

The Bible reveals the carnage and chaos that came down on the Jews and the land. It's not like Jews hadn't heard. Long before they stormed into the land and possessed it Yahweh's prophets warned them adversity would come looking for them if they did evil, and they could end up being plucked off their land and scattered into all nations.

Moses told them around **1500 BC** . . .

The Scattering

Dt 4:26 - I call on heaven and Earth to be witness against you today. I am telling you you are not going to last long in the land you will enter and possess on the other side of the Jordan. You will not increase your stay in the land. Instead, you will end up being completely eradicated from it and Yahweh will scatter you into all nations. Your numbers will be few in relation to the pagans into whose lands Yahweh will disperse you. All the while you are there, you will bow yourselves down before strange gods, gods that are only the labor of heathen men's hands.

29 - If you decide to repent while you are there, and if you turn back to Yahweh, your God, you will find him without a doubt. You will find him as long as you repent with all your heart and soul. While you face tribulation after these things have caught up with you in the final times, you will find salvation if you return to Yahweh, your God, and obey his word, for Yahweh, your God, is a merciful God. Yahweh will never forsake you. Yahweh will never destroy you. Yahweh will never forget the covenant he made with your fathers.

Abijah, the prophet (**960 BC**) told Jeroboam, the king . . .

1 Kng 14:15 - Yahweh will shake Israel the way one shakes reeds in the water. He will pluck the Hebrews up by their roots and drive them from the excellent land he swore to their fathers. He will thrust them out of this land, far off beyond the rivers.

The priest, **Jeremiah**, lived in a part of the land occupied by the clan of Benjamin. He became a prophet during Josiah's thirteenth year. The priest who turned prophet spoke in the final days of the first kingdom.

Jeremiah publicized reasons Yahweh was displeased with Israel.

Jeremiah begged Israel to return and follow Yahweh's covenant.

Jeremiah also revealed what would happen if Israel refused.

Jer 1:14 - Yahweh says, Evil will descend out of the north. It will cover the people who live in this place. Beware, says Yahweh, for I will call out to the tribes of the northern territory, and they will come, setting their thrones up in the gates of Jerusalem, alongside her walls, and against all the cities in Judah. And when they have, the judgments I predicted will come down on my people. Vengeance will visit my people because of their evil, the evil they did when they deserted me. And they took part in evil works when they burned incense to strange gods, thereby giving glory to images they forged with their own hands.

2:5 - What did I do to your fathers to make them stray from me?
What did I do to make them trust in vanity?
Was I the one who made them vain?

13 - My people have worked evil in two ways: firstly, they abandoned me, a river of living water; secondly, they fabricated their own containers to hold water, but they cannot because they are so full of holes.

18 - You say you want to go to Egypt and drink from the Nile.
You say you want to go to Assyria and drink from the Euphrates.
Believe me, it will make no difference, since your own evil will punish you, and your own backsliding will bring you shame. Realization will come over you there and you will understand just how wicked and disgusting a thing you did when you left Yahweh, your God, rather than invite him into your hearts.

23 - How can you say you are not corrupt?
How can you say you do not bow to other gods?
You must consider your actions.
You must stop and mull over what you are doing.
You are like some horny old she-camel, darting here and there.
You are like a wild ass from the desert, sniffing lustily at the wind while in heat. Who can hold something like her back? Anybody who wants her never has to strain himself to have her, for when she is ready she is not hard to find.

3:1 - They say if a man divorces his wife and she leaves him to be a wife to some other, he must not take her back because she is soiled, but even though you have whored after many lovers, you may still return to me.

4:18 - It is your own conduct that will bring your punishment on you.
Just imagine how bitter it will be.
Just imagine how it will cut you to the bone.

22 - My people are foolish, with no idea who I am.
My people are like ignorant children who lack any perception.
My people are perfect at doing wrong, with no idea at all how to do right.
Just ponder what you are doing, you who will soon be ruined. Why do you display yourself in scarlet? Why do you pile on the jewelry? Why do you paint your eyes? Why get yourselves all made up for no reason? Your so-called lovers will soon hate you and seek your life. You sound exactly like a woman in labor, just moaning and groaning to deliver her first child. To me, it sounds like the daughter of Zion is gasping for air, like she is holding out her hands, wailing, Alas, I am slipping away! I have signed my life over to murderers. **(30)**

5:7 - Why would I forgive you? Your children tender allegiance to other gods (elohim). They offer sacrifices to gods that are not real gods at all. Even after I fed them to the full, they still committed adultery, dashing off to visit the houses of whores.

11 - Israel and Judah are completely unfaithful to me, says Yahweh. They tell lies about me, saying, Yahweh will do nothing. They say, Yahweh will not harm us or bring sword or famine upon us. Those prophets are blowing wind, oh Israel, for my word is not in them. The things they guarantee are not coming will be here soon. They will come, and they will land on the heads of those prophets.

30 - A terrible and disturbing thing is happening in my land. My prophets prophesy only lies. My priests use their positions to serve only themselves. My people love it like that, but what will they do when their end comes?

6:15 - Do they feel shame over their conduct? They feel nothing, not a bit of regret. They do not even have the decency to blush. Accordingly, they will speedily join the rest, and they will all topple over the day that I come down on them, says Yahweh. Stop at the crossroads. Search earnestly for the old way. Search for the right path and walk it. Seek it, for that is the only way you will ever find peace in your soul. Stop telling us to walk it, they say. So see, oh nations, and hear. See, oh witnesses, what will come upon them. Listen, oh Earth, for I will send misfortune on these people, the product of their own acts. I will send it on them because they refuse to do what they have been ordered by my words and commandments. What do I care about incense from Sheba? Why would I want some sweet essence from a far away land? Your burnt offerings do not please and your sacrifices do not satisfy. Because of it, says Yahweh, I will lay stumbling blocks before my people. Because of it, fathers and sons will falter. Because of it, neighbors and friends will come to ruin.

8:4 - When a person falls, does he normally not stand up? When a person departs, does he normally not come back? If so, why do the people of Jerusalem go away and refuse to return? If so, why do the people of Jerusalem love lies? They will never come back. Though I listen closely, they never say the right things. They will never repent of their evil, and ask, What have I done?

Instead, they hold fast to their own thinking.
Instead, they charge off like war-horses going into battle.

8 - Where do people like you find the courage to say, We are wise, since we have Yahweh's law? Are you not able to see? All you have is the lies of those who interpret my law for you.
Is there anyone among you wise enough to understand?
Is there anyone among you to whom Yahweh has spoken?
Is anyone able to explain why the land is dying?
Is anyone able to explain why the land is burned up like a desert?
Is anyone able to say why it is burned so bad none will pass through it?
It is because they renounce the law that I, Yahweh, gave them.
It is because they will not hear my voice and honor my words.
Instead, they follow their own stubborn hearts.
Instead, they obey gods of the Baal, those their fathers taught them.
Israel's God, Yahweh, says, Therefore, I will feed them wormwood.
I will pour out hemlock for them to drink.
I will scatter them among the heathen.
I will scatter them among nations they or their fathers never knew.
I will send a sword after them until they are all but destroyed. **(9:12)**

11:1 - Yahweh's words came to Jeremiah, saying, Be aware of the terms of the covenant, then repeat them to the ones who dwell in Judah and in Jerusalem, and say, Yahweh, the Lord God of Israel, says, All who do not conform with the conditions of the covenant are doomed. These are the very stipulations I offered your fathers after I took them out of Egypt, out of the iron furnace, saying, Hear my voice and follow me.
If you observe my covenant, you will be my people and I will be your God.
I will accomplish the oath I made to your fathers to give you a land that is overflowing with milk and honey the way it was in their days.
And I, Jeremiah, cried, Amen! Oh, Yahweh, let it be!

Yahweh said, Repeat these words in the cities of Judah and the streets of Jerusalem, proclaiming, Listen to the principles of the covenant, then observe them. Since the day I brought your fathers out of Egypt, from their time until the present, I have continually warned them and begged them to pay attention to my voice, but they will not listen. They will not even pretend to listen. All they want is to chase after their own wicked and willful hearts. As a result, they leave me no choice but to cause the covenant's curses to come down upon them. All I wanted them to do was mind the accord I forged with their fathers, but they would not.

10 - The children of Israel and Judah broke the covenant I forged with their fathers. Therefore, I will bring evil upon them, an evil from which they will never escape. Even if they cry out to me, I will not hear.

16:1 - You will not acquire wives in the land and you will not have sons or daughters. About sons and daughters born here, and about the mothers who carried them and the ones who fathered them here in the land, this is what Yahweh has said: They will all die horrible deaths, with no one to mourn them. They will not be buried. Instead, they will be left like shit on the ground. They will be slaughtered by sword and starvation. Their cadavers will stay on the ground as food for birds of the sky and beasts of the field.

10 - When you repeat these things to the people, they will ask, Why did Yahweh bring all these terrible things upon us? What did we do wrong? How could we possibly have sinned so against Yahweh, our God? It is because your fathers left Yahweh for other gods. It is because they followed other gods, bowing and offering to them. It is because they turned from Yahweh and refused to obey his laws. It is because you have acted far worse than your fathers. It is because you chase after the imaginings of your own evil hearts. It is because you do not want to obey Yahweh. I will pluck you off your land for all these things, says Yahweh. I will drive you into nations of which you or your fathers never heard. In these lands, you can sacrifice to alien gods all day and night as far as I care because I will show you no mercy.

18:15 - Since my people do not focus on me, they burn incense to vanity and their vanity is why they stumble. They strayed off the old path and now walk in a way that does not lead to glory. That is why their land has become deserted and a cause for hissing. And also, it is why people that pass through can only marvel and waggle their heads in disbelief.

Ezekiel urged Israel to return to Yahweh and keep his covenant.

Ezk 12:15 - They will know I am Yahweh after I have driven them away to live among the heathen, after I scatter them into all nations. A small number of them will be spared from the sword, famine, and plague to be witness to the disgusting deeds in which they will participate when they are living with the heathen. Too late will they realize I am Yahweh.

20:18 - I begged the offspring of the ones who rebelled against me out in the wilderness not to follow the way of their fathers, not to obey the laws of their fathers or dirty themselves with their pagan images. I am Yahweh, your God, I said. You must respect my laws and judgments, and you must do them. You will honor my sabbaths, also, for they will be the sign showing you respect Yahweh, your God. But these children rebelled against me and decided not to observe my laws, judgments, and dictates. And although they knew full well the ones that comply will live, they still

did not submit. When they sullied my sabbath, I decided to pour out my wrath on them. I resolved to consume all my anger on them out there in the barrens, but I held back for my name's sake, and I only did things I thought were needed to keep my name from being defiled in the eyes of all the nations that watched me remove Israel from Egypt. I held up my hand and swore to them in the desert that I would scatter them into all countries, and disperse them among all people. I informed them I could justify it because they did not live up to my standards and they loathed my law and sabbath. And I also told them I would do it because all they wanted was to worship the idols of their fathers.

22:1 - Yahweh's word came to me, and said, I want you to give judgment against her, son of man. You will denounce this bloody city and unveil all her repulsive acts. You will say to them, This is the sentence Yahweh is pronouncing against the city that has brought her own end on herself by allowing bloodshed among her people: your images have defiled you, thus you will now pay for all the blood you shed. You are completely poisoned by your images. Your end has finally come. Your time is up. Now I will cause you to be ridiculed by the heathen. Now I will cause you to be mocked by all nations. How bold and strong will you be on the day I deal with you? Yahweh has spoken and Yahweh will do it, too. **(14)**

2 Kng 24:1 - During Jehoiakim's term (around **600 BC**) Nebuchadnezzar, Babylon's leader, invaded the land. He crushed Jehoiakim and his people for three years. After that, Yahweh altered Jehoiakim's thinking, which caused him to challenge Nebuchadnezzar. Then Nebuchadnezzar sent to Babylonian, Aramean, Moabite, and Ammonite marauders, and he ordered them to come to Judah and destroy it, just like Yahweh had said through his servants, the prophets.

2 Chr 36:11 - Zedekiah was twenty-one years old when he was made the king. He reigned for eleven years, doing evil before Yahweh, his God. He refused to submit to Jeremiah, the prophet, who Yahweh was using for a spokesman. He opposed king Nebuchadnezzar, before whom he vowed he would be faithful to the Elohim. He stiffened his neck and dampened his heart, refusing to come back to Yahweh, the God of Israel, and it caused all the leaders, priests, and people to drift farther and farther from the truth and edged them closer to the disgusting practices of nations about them, so close they even defiled Yahweh's holy temple in Jerusalem.

17 - Yahweh brought in the ruler of the Chaldeans and he butchered the best of them with the sword, no matter where they tried to hide, hoping to stay alive. He had no mercy on young men or women, on older ones, or even on those stooped over with age. They were all given into his hand.

Ezk 21:24 - Here are three reasons I decided to do away with you . . .

First: because your thinking has become altogether evil.

Second: because you continue to exhibit evil in everything you do.

And third: because you never stop.

25 - And you, oh dead, disgusting king of Israel, your day is here at last.
Your evil will end today.

Yahweh Elohim says, Your miter will fall to the ground.

Your crown will no longer be exalted, for everything will change.

Proud ones will be brought down and the lowly will be exalted.

I will overturn, overturn, overturn it.

And this kingdom will be no more, not until the manifestation of the one
to whom it rightfully belongs. It is he to whom I will give it.

Jer 39:1 - Jerusalem finally fell. In the tenth month of the ninth year
Zedekiah ruled as king of Judah, Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, with
all his army, came to Jerusalem and besieged it.

It took them more than a year and an half to undermine the wall and get
into the city. When they took Jerusalem, they torched the palace, then
they burned the homes of people who lived in the city. After that, they
carried the survivors of Jerusalem off to Babylon, as well as any others
who surrendered to the Babylonian army.

Nebuzaeadan, who was head of the guard, left some of the poor folk be-
hind, people who had had nothing, allowing them to keep living in the land
and also giving them Judean fields and vineyards before he left.

Nebuchadnezzar gave plain orders concerning the prophet, Jeremiah: he
was to be released from the prison in which he was being held, he was in
no way to be harmed, and he was to be given whatever he wanted.

Nebuchadnezzar's officials came for Jeremiah and they freed him from
the court of the Jewish palace guard. After that, they escorted him to
Gedaliah. Gedaliah ordered that Jeremiah be taken back to his house in
Benjamin and allowed to remain there among his people.

By **588 BC**, most Jews were either extinct or being held as prisoners
in Babylon. Jerusalem's wall and the house of Israel's God were knocked
down. It mustn't be believed there were no Jews in the land during that
seventy years Israel was in Babylon. The scrolls (as seen above) and dis-
coveries by Scholars and Bone-diggers prove some Jews lived in the land
over the exile. Whether they lived in their promised land or were caged
in one of Babylon's assorted territories, prophets like **Ezekiel**, **Jeremiah**,
Haggai and **Daniel** made it impossible for Jews to assume the low profile
they longed for as they rode out the fire-storm raging around them.

Jews couldn't avoid hearing their prophets.

Jews must've heard **Jeremiah** predict the upcoming scattering.

Jews must've heard him say the captivity would last seventy years.

They most certainly heard him disclose when they went off into exile they could best assure their own welfare by trying to improve conditions in the places where they'd live.

No doubt, they heard what went on at Jeremiah's place when . . .

Jer 42:1 - All the used-to-be leaders of their used-to-be army, as well as many of the ones who had remained in the land, from the least to the greatest, came to Jeremiah, saying, Please hear our request and pray to Yahweh, your God, for these people who are left. Undoubtedly, you may see with your own eyes how few remain from the multitude that used to be Israel. We beg you to pray right now and ask Yahweh to show us the correct way to walk and the right things to do.

Jeremiah told them, I hear your request and I will pray to Yahweh, your God, as you ask. As always, I will tell you exactly what Yahweh says, not holding anything back.

And the people said, May Yahweh be a true and faithful witness against us if we do not adhere to all Yahweh says. No matter what it is you tell us, we promise to do as Yahweh says, whether good or bad.

7 - Yahweh got back to Jeremiah in ten days.

Jeremiah said to the military men, along with the others that were with them, Yahweh, to whom you sent me, answers your question this way: If you will only return to the land, I will build you up, not tear you down. I will plant you and not pull you up. It is because I just want to repent of all the evil you forced me to bring on you that I say it. Have no fear of Babylon's king, the one that appears to bother you so. My advice to you is to not worry about him in the least, since I will be with you to deliver you from his hand. He will pity you because I pity you. And also, he will permit you to stay in the land. But if you leave for Egypt, trusting that you will be safe there, I will reach out my hand and destroy you.

So Azariah and Johanan, along with all the other arrogant men, shouted, You are a liar! Yahweh, our God, has not told you to say we cannot go to Egypt and live there. Baruch most surely turned you against us. All you and Baruch want to do is to hand us over to the Chaldeans. All you want is for us to be killed or taken back to Babylon and kept there for slaves. Johanan rounded up the ones that had come back to Judah out of other lands where Yahweh had scattered them. Johanan rounded up the ones who returned hoping they might live in their land again, the men, women and children, including some daughters of the king, as well as Jews that Nebuzaeadan, the commanding officer of Babylon's guard, had placed in the charge of Gedeliah, among them Jeremiah, the prophet, and Baruch. Because Johanan did not believe what Yahweh had told him, he led them off to Egypt, down into Tahpanhes. **(43:2)**

Few who went to Egypt were seen again.

Jeremiah continues to condemn the existing world-order, and also, he gives much information about the time when and way in which the old order would be brought down. **Jeremiah** also supplies clues to the identities of the new nations that would rule Earth following Babylon's fall.

Shortly after, Yahweh brought into play the peoples and powers he'd fathered, formed, and fed on the side: the Medes, Persians, Greeks, and Romans, those Yahweh picked to give of their flesh and fortune over the next five hundred years, bringing about a most pivotal time in the human adventure: the revelation of Abraham's son, that promised seed, the one in Yahweh's covenant, the anointed king, Jesus Christ.

"So how did Yahweh control rulers and nations?"

The answer: quite handily. All he did was make sure his prophets and priests held key positions in the courts of kings during pivotal periods.

Dan 1:17 - Yahweh gave Daniel awareness and proficiency in all types of wisdom and learning, as well as an ability to interpret visions and dreams. Daniel stood before Nebuchadnezzar, and the king confessed he had not met anybody like Daniel. In a situation needing wisdom and discernment, the king always chose Daniel. He found him much more accurate than all his own wise men or astrologers, and Daniel occupied a very high position all the way up to the first year of king Cyrus.

2:47 - Nebuchadnezzar spoke to Daniel, saying, Your God is God of gods and King of kings. He must be a revealer of secrets, too, for he granted you the meaning of my dream.

Nebuchadnezzar gave Daniel a leading position with great authority, and he gave him many gifts. He also appointed Daniel to be administrator of Babylon's suburbs. He placed him above all the wise men, and like Daniel recommended, he commissioned Daniel's associates, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego to help Daniel run the region of Babylon every time Daniel was present in the court of the king.

4:34 - When my day of trouble was complete, I, Nebuchadnezzar, lifted my eyes to heaven, whereupon my sanity returned to me and I gave glory to the Most High. I offered praise and tribute to the one that lives for all time. His reign is an unending reign. His dominion will endure through all ages. The nations of Earth are nothing before him, and he does whatever he wants with those who have power in heaven, as well as the rulers on Earth. No one is able to obstruct him and no one is able to ask him to justify what he is doing, either.

37 - I, Nebuchadnezzar, now offer praise, glory, and respect to the God of heaven because he does only what is proper. His ways are all just and he is able to bring down anyone who is proud.

6:28 - King Darius wrote to all the people, nations and tongues who lived on Earth in his time, saying, May peace be multiplied to you. I charge all those that are living in every area of my dominion to tremble and fear in the presence of Daniel's God.
 He is the only living God.
 He is faithful forever.
 His kingdom will never be conquered.
 His dominion will last for all ages.
 He delivers and saves.
 He works signs and wonders in the heavens and on Earth.
 And now he has saved Daniel from certain death in the den of lions.
 Because of this, Daniel did well in the reign of Darius, the Mede.
 Daniel did well in the reign of Cyrus, the Persian, too.

9:1 - In the first years of Darius' regime over Babylon, I, Daniel, saw in certain writings, particularly in Yahweh's word to Jeremiah, the prophet, that Jerusalem's desolation would last only seventy years.
 I prayed to Yahweh, the God of Israel, with pleas and fasting.
 I clothed myself in sackcloth and ashes.
 I prayed to Yahweh, my God, confessing and calling out to him.
 Oh Yahweh, I cried, you are our majestic and awesome God.
 Oh Yahweh, when you fulfill your covenant, you will be our only God.
 Oh Yahweh, we know you love all who love you, all who observe your law.
 We sinned, however, when we turned away from you.
 We sinned by ignoring your statutes and pronouncements.
 We sinned by ignoring your servants, the prophets, the ones you sent to our rulers, princes, fathers, and everyone else in the land.
 We sinned when we ignored others who also came to speak in your name.
 We ignored the voice of Yahweh, our God, who only asked us to walk the way he taught us through his servants, the prophets. **(10)**
 Everyone in Israel has turned from Yahweh's law, though.
 Everyone in Israel has turned away, choosing to ignore Yahweh's word.
 Everyone knows this is why the curse is being poured out on us.
 It is the same thing written in the word of Moses, God's servant.
 It is the punishment God is bringing on us because we disobeyed him.
 It is the sentence Yahweh passed against us and our elders.
 It is now being confirmed, since Yahweh is sending all this evil on us.
 Is there anyplace under heaven where there has been so much evil?
 Is there anyplace that has had evil like Yahweh is sending on Jerusalem?

Is 44:24 - I am Yahweh, the one who freed you.
 I am the one who put you in the womb.
 I am Yahweh, the one who planned it all.
 I am the one who arrayed the heavens, as well as the Earth.
 I. Me. Alone.

I bring the so-called evidence of liars to nothing.
 I drive diviners insane.
 I make wise men fall back, showing their wisdom is really foolishness.
 I will ratify the word of my servants and give them what they desire.
 I will say to Jerusalem, You will now be inhabited.
 I will say to the cities of Judah, You will now be rebuilt.
 I will tell the cities of Judah, Your ruins will all be raised up again.
 I will tell the deep to be dry and rivers will dry up, too.
 In the case of Cyrus, he is my shepherd.
 He will accomplish all my desires.
 He will say to Jerusalem, You will be built.
 He will say to the temple, Your footing will be laid.
 Yahweh chose Cyrus as his anointed one, his right-hand man, to whom he
 gave authority over all nations. He will overthrow the defenses of kings
 and smash down all their gates. Nothing will be closed to him.

I will go before you, Cyrus, to level out every high place.
 I will break their bronze doors to bits.
 I will cut through their iron bars.
 I will give you all my hidden riches.
 I will give you all the valuables I have stashed in secret places.
 You will know that I, Yahweh, the one who called you by name, am God of
 Israel. You will also know it was for the sake of my servant, Israel, that
 I named you Cyrus (son, throne) although you never knew me.
 I am Yahweh and there is no one else.
 I am Yahweh and there is no God but me.
 I upheld you for only one reason, though you were not aware.
 I upheld you so from east to west all will know there is no God but me.
 I upheld you so all might know me, Yahweh, and that there is no other.

Scholars and History-buffs feel the reason Cyrus reached the top so
 fast is because he conned people of nations he defeated into believing it
 was their gods that gave him their kingdoms. Actually, it was the God of
 all nations who cast Cyrus in the role of world-ruler. It was Yahweh, the
 God of Israel, and it came to pass because Yahweh decided the time had
 arrived to sit a ruler on the world-throne who'd do whatever was needed
 to return Jews to their land with enough money and clout to reconstruct
 the city of Jerusalem and its temple.

Yahweh had promised, but how would he get it done?

Would Cyrus, who knew little about Yahweh and his people, compel his
 subjects to support Jews as they rebuilt their capital?

That, in a very real sense, is just what Cyrus did . . .

Ezra 1:1 - In Cyrus' first year as king of Persia, in order that the words
 from Jeremiah's mouth were fulfilled, Yahweh altered Cyrus' thinking.

Cyrus issued a written proclamation through all his empire, which said: I, Cyrus, ruler of Persia, hereby proclaim that Yahweh, God of heaven, gave me all the nations on Earth. And also, he has commanded me to build him a dwelling-place in Jerusalem in the land of Judah.

I pray Yahweh will be with any of his people willing to go up to Jerusalem in Judah to reconstruct the house of their God, the God of Israel, which is the same God who vowed he will dwell in Jerusalem.

I hereby order those who live in places where survivors live to give them silver and gold, supplies and livestock, and all kinds of free-will offerings so they can go to Jerusalem and work on the house of their God.

Elders of the tribes of Judah and Benjamin, and the priests and Levites, as well as all those whose spirits Yahweh raised, prepared themselves to go up and rebuild Yahweh's house in Jerusalem.

7 - Cyrus had the valuables brought forth, the objects Nebuchadnezzar looted from Jerusalem and hid in the house of his god, Molech.

So there were in excess of five thousand and four hundred pieces made of gold and silver, all of which Sheshbazzar took along with him when he and the other exiles returned to Jerusalem from Babylon. **(11)**

3:7 - They gave money to bricklayers and carpenters and bartered food, drink and oil to the people of Tyre and Sidon to float logs of cedar down by sea from Lebanon to Joppa, as authorized by Cyrus.

As soon as the enemies of Judah and Benjamin learned construction had begun on the dwelling-place of Yahweh, God of Israel, they scurried off to Zerubbabel, saying, Let us help, for all we want is to serve Yahweh.

They asked, Do you not know we have been offering to Yahweh from the time we were left here by Esarhaddon, the king of Assyria?

Zerubbabel, Yeshua, and the other leaders answered, We cannot let you help us. Cyrus, the king of Persia, authorized us to build a sanctuary for Yahweh, the God of Israel. We will build it ourselves and you will not be involved in it.

Later, the same people started harassing Judah and Benjamin, wishing to see if they would be too afraid to keep building.

Also, they hired lawyers that tried to make things hard for the builders. Adversaries attempted to frustrate the building throughout the time of Cyrus, king of Persia, right up to the days of Darius. **(4:1)**

Cyrus overturned the Babylonian state, taking it from Nabonidus, his grandfather. In its place, he substituted his own realm of Persia, which tolerated the religions and gods of people it conquered. Time truly does change situations, though, for the remnant of Persia's empire is ruled at this date **(2002 AD)** by religiously non-tolerant Clerics in Tehran, which is located among the desolate desert dunes dubbed Iran.

Cyrus played the main part in the return of Jews to the land. He set out on his crusade to rebuild Jerusalem and its temple somewhere close to **536 BC**, three years after Babylon's fall.

The campaign dragged on, but it wasn't until the dominance of Darius, Cyrus' successor, that things really started heating up. People against a rebuilding of the temple grew so aggravated they sent letters to Darius asking him to search the records to find out if Cyrus truly did authorize the rebuilding of the city and temple, and also, if the laborers and their families were supposed to receive government money.

King Darius not only located decrees written by Cyrus, he threw in a few provisions aimed at those afflicting workers in Jerusalem . . .

6:6 - Leave them be, I say, and let them continue laboring on the house of God. I also order you to give the elders involved in building a part of the funds put away for the king. All this money will be taken out of tax revenues created on your side of the river so the workers receive more than they need to defray their expenses, and so building does not grind to a standstill.

11 - I say that anyone who attempts to alter this decree will suffer the following fate: a wooden beam will be ripped from his home and stood up in his yard and he will be nailed to the beam and left hanging there until he is dead. Also, I want his residence turned into a shit-pile because he had the nerve to oppose my decree.

I pray that the God whose name dwells in Jerusalem will destroy anyone, whether they be king or commoner, who tries to delay reconstruction of his temple. I, Darius, have released this proclamation, and I, Darius, am ordering that it be carried out now.

14 - The Jews continued to rebuild, and they had much success because prophets such as Haggai and Jeremiah were living there with them.

So the reconstruction initiated by the God of Israel, and carried out by Cyrus, Darius, and Artaxerxes, all kings of Persia, was completed by the third day of the month of Adar, in the sixth year of king Darius' reign.

Historians and Bone-diggers agree there are good reasons to believe four significant edicts were given by kings of Earth over the hundred or so years it took for Jews to wholly return to Jerusalem.

They will agree this all came to pass five hundred or so years before the (supposed) life of that dreamer who claimed he was God's son.

What they find hard to handle is the proposition the return came to pass because Abraham's God was behind the scenes making it happen.

Scholars assume the return of the Jews came about because humans finally matured and outgrew the tendency to be peevish with each other.

Scholars think the soothing effects of Enlightenment, in conjunction with that outstanding Trinity of Art, Literature and Science had forced humans everywhere to stare right into the mirror of History, the number one Enlightener, and face the Music.

Scholars believe during this newly-dawned period of Illumination and Maturity ill-bred, ill-mannered and infantile humans had no other option than to admit that before then they'd been brutish beasts.

Scholars believe humans were forced to admit they were nothing but gnarly, horrific, animal-acting creatures which weren't being very gentle with some of the other creatures, or even with themselves.

Scholars believe humans were shown they were not actually "people" at all, but they were "poople".

In a New Age, it's disclosed, everything would be changed. In a New Age, humans would shmutz up really close to other humans. Each of the humans would hug away on one another like crazy, especially with family, neighbors, and chums, all humans quivering like willows in the wind awaft and aw whirl under the sensate spell of Education and Enlightenment.

But enough of the fantasies . . .

540 BC - Cyrus sent Jews to Judah to rebuild the temple. (**Ezra 1:1**)

522 BC - Darius circulated orders enforcing Cyrus' dictum. (**Ezra 6:1**)

469 BC - Artaxerxes released his first decree. (**Ezra 7:13 / 25**)

456 BC - Artaxerxes provided **Nehemiah** with written authority to take Jews to Jerusalem to rebuild its wall. (**Neh 2:9, 18 / 3:8 / 4:7**)

In a book bearing her name, **Esther**, the queen of Xerxes, broke up a conspiracy to eliminate the Jews. And she backed her husband's plan to allow Abraham's seed to return to their land under **Nehemiah**.

Nehemiah is believed to have reached Jerusalem in **456 BC**.

Also, it's believed **456 BC** is a most likely starting point for the time-period seen in **Daniel's** vision of an appearance and death of the Messiah seventy (symbolic) weeks after release of an edict to rebuild the city of Jerusalem. If four hundred ninety years - seven times seventy symbolic weeks of years - are added to **456 BC** the product is **34 AD**, the year in which that guy from Nazareth is said to have died and rose.

Haggai, Nehemiah, Ezra, and Jeremiah remained with the workers in Jerusalem, spurring them on as they rebuilt the city and temple.

Daniel continued to advise rulers of the world.

Things appeared to be going well for the children of Israel. Not long after, however, the Hebrew people again went into shock when a copy of the covenant between Yahweh and their fathers was located and read in their presence.

Neh 8:1 - All the people assembled in the street coming from the water gate, and they beseeched Ezra, the scribe, to bring out the book of laws from Yahweh, the one they received through Moses.
Ezra brought the book of laws out to the people, to both men and women, to all who could understand.
As he read, the people listened closely.

6 - Ezra praised Yahweh, the mighty God.
The people all shouted, Amen! So be it!
They raised their hands to Yahweh.
They bowed their heads, honoring Yahweh, their faces to the ground.
The Levites taught the people Yahweh's laws, reading from the book.
They interpreted as they went so the people could understand.

9:32 - Oh Yahweh, oh our majestic, mighty and magnificent God, we beg you not to take our suffering to be of no value. We have suffered much, all of us, our kings, princes, priests, prophets and leaders, every last one of us from the time of Assyria's kings to today.
You are perfectly justified in everything you have done to us.
You are justified for sure and we are the ones who did wrong.
Our kings, princes, priests, and elders never even tried to obey your law.
They ignored the statutes and testimonies you sent to warn them.
They refused to serve you in the kingdom you gave them.
They would not serve you, though you rained goodness down on them.
They would not serve you, though you gave them a large and fertile land.
The worst thing is they would not turn from their wicked ways.
That is why we pray you will consider our situation.
That is why we pray you will see we are no more than servants now.
That is the reason we are slaves today, enslaved in the land you gave our fathers so they could eat of its fruit and treasure its other good things.
We know our rebellion is why those you set over us now enjoy the bounty of our harvests. They manipulate our bodies and our livestock, and again we find ourselves in great distress.

Yahweh appears to have answered them, for not too long after, their great-grandchildren reportedly lived autonomously by tearing free from Rome during a time the empire was evolving from bad into baddest. The Roman empire was way too busy with its struggle to survive to spend any effort suppressing a throng of troublesome tribal-types camping beside some old caravan trail leading from Nowhere to Nowhere Else.

It seems that little horn with a filthy mouth and eyes like a man had a memory as well, since when the Roman's riotous rage ran itself ragged, the rowdies took note of the Jews, and before they knew what hit them the Jews were slaves again. Frankly, they were worse than slaves, since they morphed into a braggy bunch, pushed around by a pride of pompous,

power-grubbing princes, politicians, professors and priests, each of which presumed the proper pathway to perpetuating his pitiful position was to prevent the peons from rocking the Roman barge. And they did that by harassing the herd with what remained of their ridiculous religion.

How could they not remember what happened to Assyria's army?

It may be better to ask: Seeing that one angel of Yahweh eliminated roughly two hundred thousand Assyrian troops in a single night, would it not be possible the same angel or another like it should have no problem dealing with any number of Romans deployed in the area?

The answer: Why yes, an angel could also wipe out the Romans.

The Jews seem to have forgotten, but this can be said in their favor: they'd been thoroughly influenced by the subtleties of Greek and Roman rationality. Thanks to a sweet life in Babylon, together with a wonderful wallowing in Grecian wickedness, on top of a rank and randy rut through rough and ribald Rome, Jews had been liberated from the regulations of the covenant between God and their fathers.

Jews were free to question.

Jews were caught away in the past-time of proposing propositions.

Jews sat around after, slinging the bull about their proposals.

Jews slang bull just as well as people in other nations slang it.

Jews, in short, had become civilized.

Jews had become so civilized that, when Yahweh's promised liberator finally did come, ready, willing, and able to give them true freedom, they murdered him. And that deed earned the Jews a most severe thrashing, the worst retribution a nation could ever receive at Yahweh's hand.

Since their land was not totally depopulated as a result of the defeat by Babylon, especially if one bears in mind the generation after the next returned to live upon their land, it's hard to admit the scattering by the Babylonians was the final scattering foretold by Israel's prophets.

The prime purpose of the devastation visited on the Jews by Babylon was to erase all evidence of the kingdom and throne put in Israel's care, as well as to down-size the bloodline spawning Israel's kings.

The purpose of the holocaust visited on the Jews by God, Christ, and Rome was decisive. It would take the Jews twenty centuries to again be a substantial presence in the land. If the scattering in Roman years was the scattering foretold by the prophets, isn't it possible the bedraggled bunch hunkered down in the land of promise at the end of World-war II indicated a beginning of the final gathering written about by those same prophets? It helps explain how so few Jews, encircled by life-long foes on all flanks, could be transformed in forty short years into the military and industrial goliath standing tall in the land today.

Other attempts to account for it go nowhere, chiefly the idiotic idea Israel has the land today through the benevolence of its allies, the good

folk of the free world. If Israel's dear allies hadn't forced her to cease slaying Arabs, by threatening to cut off military supplies, a large part of Africa, Arabia, and Europe would now speak Hebrew.

Lev 26:1-13 - The covenant's blessings are listed.

14-32 - The curses follow.

33 - I will scatter you among the heathen and send a sword after you. Your land will become desolate and your cities wasted.

44 - I will not wholly cast them away while they are among their enemies. I will never hate them enough to completely destroy them. I will never violate the covenant I made with them.

Dt 30:1 - After the blessings and curses have come upon you, after you remember them in the nations in which Yahweh, your God, has exiled you, if you and your children go back to Yahweh, your God, and adopt him with your whole heart and soul, in keeping with what I mentioned to you today, Yahweh, your God, will return you to your rightful position. Also, Yahweh will shower blessings down on you. He will come back and extract you out of all the nations into which he dispersed you. He will gather each one of you. Even if you were forced out into the farthest country under heaven, Yahweh will return you from there to your own land, the land he swore to give your fathers. And after you are living in the land, Yahweh will cause you to prosper far above your fathers.

Zech 8:13 - In the same way I made you a curse among the gentiles, oh Israel and Judah, I will save you.

I will save you, and you will be made a cause for blessing.

Yahweh of hosts says, In the same way in which I did not repent after I decided to punish you when your fathers angered me, so too, I will favor Jerusalem and Judah in the future, and of this I will never repent.

Once more, it's necessary to draw a distinction between the truth as seen in the Bible and the freaky fabrications flown by fool-headed false-christians. All of false-christendom's dimmest bulbs will concur that the God of the scrolls promised Jews they'd have their land back again some four hundred years before an appearance of their Messiah. Among them are a few who can recite whole chapters applying to literal Jews.

"B-but," they stammer, "there are verses that pertain to other Jews, to 'spiritual' Jews. These Jews must not be mixed up with those terrible old 'Jewish' Jews who made our God so angry."

Have you figured out who the 'spiritual' Jews are yet?

Good guess! Take one giant step forward, for the anti-christians will eagerly reveal the 'spiritual' Jews are their own dear selves.

How do you know a verse applies to 'spiritual' Jews?

How do you know it doesn't mean those terrible old 'Jewish' Jews?

"This is so simple," anti-christians gush, "because if a verse seems to say literal Jews will literally return to the literal land of the literal oath where they will again become literal ambassadors of a literal God to this literal world . . . well, uh, those verses are actually stating spiritual Jews will spiritually return to their spiritual land of promise which (spiritually speaking) is literally in Heaven. And if a verse even hints it is in any way probable God is not totally done with Jewish Jews, or that God will ever set up a literal kingdom on the literal Earth with the literal Jesus, aided by literal people from a literal judgment literally ruling that kingdom . . . well, hmm, that verse is actually stating spiritual Jews will be spiritually ruling a spiritual realm which (spiritually speaking) is literally in Heaven."

Whew!

'Spiritual' Jews (anti-christians themselves) are the only respectable ones in the Bible, say anti-christians, and literal Jews needn't apply.

It's a fool-proof system, user-friendly to the most ignorant dunce.

Anti-christian Reverends and Scholars, the greatest dunces on Earth, say ordinary people should be careful when they deal with verses stating Abraham's seed will be gathered and taken to the literal land of promise. All who stumble over verses like that are advised to drop everything and let their Reverend have a closer look because Reverends aren't so easily fooled by what verses appear to be saying.

"The eyes of Reverends are wise eyes," Reverends cackle.

"The verses are really talking about us," Reverends caw.

"They assure us our dear souls will ascend up into that Promised Land of Heaven. We are fully convinced our dear, precious souls once dwelled in Heaven above so we will truly be going back Home! Praise the Lord!!"

What anti-christians really believe is this: bad verses refer to literal Jews and good verses pertain to themselves, the 'spiritual' Jews.

In effect, they say, "God will have nothing more to do with the literal Jews. They're not God's people anymore. We're God's people now."

Why not shake free from anti-christian delusions, dear souls?

Why not use your own minds and ignore the lunacy that crams pseudo-christian craniums?

Sift through the following verses, then ask yourselves how they could possibly refer to gentiles . . .

The Gathering

Ps 106:47 - Save us, oh Yahweh, our God.

Bring us out from among the pagans (goi, gentiles) so we may give thanks to your holy name and glory in our praise of you. (1000 BC)

Is 11:12 - On that day, Yahweh will once more reach forth his hand and recover the residue of his people from the nations (goi, gentiles).
Yahweh will bring back the outcasts of Israel.
Yahweh will return the exiled ones of Israel from the ends of the Earth.

12:1 - In those days, you will say, I praise you, oh Yahweh.
In those days, you will say, Although you were angry with me before, you have turned away your wrath and now you comfort me instead.

54:7 - I, Yahweh, deserted you for just a moment, but now I will gather you with great mercy.

Yahweh, your redeemer, says, I hid my face from you because of a little wrath, but now I will have mercy and age-lasting kindness on you instead.
(800 BC)

Mic 1:12 - Do not doubt I will gather you, oh Jacob.
Do not doubt I mean to assemble the residue of Israel.
Do not doubt I will gather you as sheep are gathered in Bozrah.
Do not doubt you will be safe as a flock tucked in its shelter.
On that day, this whole place will be filled with the sounds of my people.

4:6 - On that day, I will gather all those I maimed.
On that day, I will gather all those I exiled and afflicted.
On that day, I will cause the ones I maimed to be a remnant.
On that day, the ones I exiled will become a mighty nation.
Do not doubt Yahweh will reign over them on mount Zion for all time.

7:8 - I will work wonders before the eyes of my people.
I will work wonders like I did when I brought Israel out of Egypt.
Nations will see and be ashamed.
Nations will forfeit all their power.
Nations will put their hands to their mouths and their ears will be deaf.

18 - What other God is like you?
What other God forgives sin and pardons the evil of his heritage?
You will not remain angry forever, since you value mercy.
You will return and have pity on us.
Yahweh will trample our evil under his feet.
Yahweh will cast our sins into the sea.
Yahweh will display his truth to Jacob and show forgiveness to Abraham, just as he swore by an oath to our fathers in days of old. (750 BC)

Zeph 3:14 - Sing it loud, oh daughter of Zion.
Shout it out, oh Israel.

Be glad and rejoice with all your heart, oh Jerusalem.
Be glad, for Yahweh will release you from your punishment.
On that day, he will throw off your enemies.
On that day, Israel's king will be with you and you will not see evil again.
On that day, Yahweh will tell Jerusalem, Do not be afraid.
Yahweh will say to Zion, Let your hands be strong.
Yahweh, your God, is with you and his mighty one will save you.
Yahweh takes great pleasure in you.
Yahweh will comfort you in love and rejoice over you with singing.

19 - On that day, I will deal with those who tormented you.
I will save those who were maimed.
I will gather those who were scattered.
I will bring you fame and glory in all the lands where you were disgraced.
When I have assembled you and returned you to your own land, everyone
on Earth will glorify and bless you, for I will retrieve your exiled ones in
front of their very eyes. (625 BC)

Zech 10:6 - I will empower the house of Judah and deliver the house of
Joseph. I will return and rebuild them. I will have mercy on them and it
will be as if I had never cast them off.
I, Yahweh, their God, will hear them.

8 - I will hiss for them, gather them, and redeem them. (525 BC)

Jer 23:3 - I will gather the remnant of my flock.
I will bring them out of all the nations into which they were scattered.
I will return them to their fold and they will be fruitful and multiply.

30:10 - Yahweh says, There is no reason to fear, oh Jacob, my servant.
I see no reason to doubt, oh Israel, since I will free you from afar.
I will ransom your seed from the lands in which they were exiled.
I will ransom your seed and they will live in peace and safety.
I assure you, says Yahweh, no one will ever cause you to fear again.
I will be with you and save you.
Even if I destroy every other nation into which I exiled you, I will never
bring an end to you. I must punish you, however, but only with a correct
measure of the proper punishment.
Hear Yahweh's word, all you nations.
Be aware of Yahweh's word, all you far off isles.
Be informed the one who scattered Israel will gather him.
Be informed he will tend them as a shepherd tends his flock. (31:10)

31 - Yahweh says, A time will come when I will make a new covenant with
the house of Israel and Judah, different than the one I made with their

fathers after I extracted them from Egypt. The nature of the new vow I will swear to them is this: I will write my law upon their hearts. I will be their God then and they will be my people.

32:37 - Yahweh, the God of Israel, says, Watch, for I am going to bring my people out of every country into which I scattered them in anger and in fury with great indignation. I will bring Israel back here, where I will see that they live safely.

Israel will be my people and I will be their God. (450 BC)

Ezk 11:17 - Yahweh says, I will remove Israel from all nations. I will bring them out of all the lands into which I dispersed them. I will set them up again in the land of Israel. I will surely bring them back. I will remove all hateful and disgusting things from their land. I will give them one hope and one mind. I will remove their heart of stone. I will replace their obstinate heart with an heart of flesh. I know they will obey my laws then. I know they will listen to my commandments and do them. I can promise you this: they will be my people and I will be their God.

20:33 - By my very life, says Yahweh, I swear with a mighty hand and an outstretched arm I will reign over you. I will send out my fury and bring you into the wilderness of nations and judge you face to face.

I will judge you as you pass beneath the rod, and I will bring all the ones who make it back into the bond of my covenant. Rebels will be rooted up among you. I will gather them out of the nations in which they lived, but they will not be allowed inside the land of Israel. Instead, they will just realize they have finally met Yahweh. (37)

I will accept you as a sweet offering after I have released you from the nations, after I have extracted you from all the lands in which you were exiled, and after I have revealed to all nations that I am in you.

You will see at last it was I, Yahweh, who returned you to Israel's land.

You will see I brought you to the same land I promised your fathers.

When you are in exile, all the things you have done to soil yourselves will enter into your minds, and you will despise yourselves for all the evil you have committed. You will realize it is I, Yahweh, when I have judged you according to my holy name's sake and not according to your evil thoughts or conduct, oh house of Israel. (41)

28:25 - When I have released Israel's house from all the lands where I scattered them, when I am seen with them by the nations, the ones who were descended from Israel will live safely in the land I swore to Jacob, my servant, where they will build houses and plant vineyards.

Israel will live in the land safely after I deal with the pagans around her, the ones who hated her, and she will know Yahweh, her God.

34:11 - I will both require and seek out my flock. I will search for them as a shepherd searches for his lost sheep. I will search for all my sheep, the ones who were lost in a time of darkness and cloud. I will bring them out from among the pagans. I will collect them from all lands. I will lead them back to their own land, and I will care for them upon the mountains, beside the rivers, and in all the habitable areas of Israel.

36:17 - Son of man, do you remember when Israel lived in her own land? Do you remember how she perverted her land and acted according to her own thinking? Do you remember that the thoughts of Israel became like the blood of a woman on her period to me? Do you remember how I rained down my rage on them over all the blood they spilled in their land, and because of all the illusions by which they polluted their land? If you can, you should remember I judged them according to their deeds alone. You also know how after they entered the pagan lands in which they would be banished, they dishonored my name even more by allowing the heathen to think they were just a group of Yahweh's people who had chosen to leave the land, the land Yahweh gave them. Still, I showed them mercy for my holy name's sake, the same name they sullied among the pagans wherever they went. So tell the house of Israel this: Yahweh says, Do not think it is for your sakes that I do this, oh house of Israel. It is for the sake of my holy name, the name you disgraced while in the nations into which you were scattered that I will do it. I will sanctify my great name, the name on which you brought such disgrace when you were with the heathen. The Lord God says, The pagans will know I am Yahweh after I have been sanctified in you before their very eyes. They will know it after you are removed from their midst.

I will bring you out of the nations before I restore you to your own land. I will wash you in clean water and you will be freed of all your impurities and your false gods. I will furnish you with a new heart and a new spirit. I will pluck out the heart of stone that is now in you and exchange it for an heart of flesh. I will put my spirit in you and you will walk in my ways. You will submit yourselves to my laws the entire time you are in the land I promised your fathers. You will be my people and I will be your God.

37:21 - Yahweh Elohim says, If you are looking, you will see me take the seed of Israel out of all nations, no matter where I find them. I will harvest them from every side and return them to their own land. I will make them one nation in their land, one nation upon the high places of Israel. They will have but one ruler over them, and they will never be divided into two nations or kingdoms again.

Israel will never defile itself by idols again.
 Israel will not do any of the other disgusting things they once did.
 I will bring them out of the lands where they sinned and cleanse them.
 Israel will be my people and I will be their Elohim (God).
 Israel's king will be David, my servant.
 Israel will have only one shepherd.
 Israel will walk in my law, hearing and doing all that I ask.
 Israel will live in the land I promised my servant, Jacob, the very land in which the fathers lived. They will live in it: they, their children, and the children of their children throughout the ages.
 David, my servant, will rule them for the ages.
 I will make a vow of peace with them, an age-lasting covenant.
 I will establish them and cause them to multiply.
 I will put my sanctuary among them for all ages.
 I will dwell with them.
 I will be their God and they will be my people.
 All the pagans will know Yahweh himself has blessed Israel.
 All the pagans will know it for sure when they perceive my sanctuary has come to Israel to stay.

39:25 - I will return Jacob from captivity.
 I will have mercy on the whole house of Israel.
 I will be jealous about my holy name after Israel has served its sentence and after it has experienced the dishonor it deserves for sinning against me all the years it lived in its own land and feared no one.
 When I have led them out of the nations, after I have brought them out of the lands of all their enemies, and after I have been glorified in them in the heathen's presence, they will know Yahweh, their God, was the one who sent them off to exile in alien lands.
 Israel will also know I, Yahweh, was the one who removed them from the lands of the heathen, leaving none of them behind.
 Israel will know because I will no longer hide my face from them.
 Israel will know because I will pour out my spirit on their house.
 Israel will know because I, Yahweh, promised it.

Plainly, the verse above (written around **450 BC**) can't apply to Jews living before **1948 AD**. The reason this verse can't apply to Jews living prior to **1948 AD** is because between **588 BC** and **1948 AD** Jews were missing a land to return to.

The Hebrews were in exile and had no place of their own.

There was no land of Israel.

The verse can't refer to anti-christians, either.

Anti-christians living in any age (past, present or future) haven't the least thing to do with Yahweh's covenant. Because that's a fact, there's no purpose dealing with them at all.

Only two Hebrew prophets remain to be heard.
One comes from Nazareth, the other from Tarsus.

Mt 23:37 - Oh Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you murder your prophets.
You stone all those I send you.
How often would I have gathered your children, just like a hen gathers
her brood beneath her wing, but you would not have it?
Because of this, your homeland will become desolate.
I am telling you now that you will not see me again, not until you say, We
embrace the one who has come in Yahweh's name.

Lk 21:20 - When you see Jerusalem under siege by armies you will know
its destruction is close. If you are anywhere near Judah that day, go to
the mountains. If you are in Jerusalem, leave at once. And if you are in
the country, you had best not go to the city. It will be the day of wrath
which will fulfill all things written. This land will suffer great affliction
and all the anger of God will come down upon these people. Most will die
by the edge of the sword, with those left taken prisoner into all nations.
And Jerusalem will be trodden down by gentiles until gentile times end.

Rom 11:1 - Has God cast off his own nation? God forbid! If he did, he
must also have cast me off, for I am an Israelite, from Abraham's seed
and Benjamin's clan. God would not cast off people he knew beforehand.
Are you not neglecting what was written concerning Elijah, and the time
he complained to God against Israel? It seems you are missing the fact
Elijah said, Oh Yahweh, they have murdered your prophets and knocked
down all your altars and I am the only one still alive. And now they want
my life, too.

Do you remember God's answer?
Yahweh comforted Elijah by saying, Elijah, I have above seven thousand
of my own people here who have not yet bent their knee to Baal.
Likewise, even now (in **50 AD**) God has reserved a remnant in mercy.

7 - So what am I saying?
I am saying that while the people of Israel in the main did not get what
they were searching for, those who were chosen from Israel are now in
line to receive it. The remainder of Israel's people were hardened, and
it was done just like the scriptures said it would be.

11 - I ask you this: will Israel's stumble result in a permanent fall?
God forbid! It was Israel's blunder that brought the heathen salvation,
and it was done in a way that would provoke Israel to jealousy.
Mull this over: if Israel's fall means riches for the world's nations and if
Israel's loss means advantage for gentiles, how much more profit will be
seen at the time of Israel's fullness?

15 - If Israel's rejection reconciled the world (the kosmos) to God, what else could Israel's acceptance bring but life from the dead?

Look upon yourselves as wild olive branches, grafted into Israel's tree to take the place of branches cut off by God, like you are now a part of the tree with the Jews that are left, all sharing nourishment from the exact same root. Do not imagine you are more worthy than branches which are gone. If you imagine that, you should reflect on this: the root feeds you and you do not feed the root. (17)

Some say, The old branches were cut off so we could be grafted in.

Surely, it is true, but they are no longer here because they had no faith. You were grafted in because you had faith and it is your faith alone that is keeping you grafted in. Do not permit your heads to become too huge. Instead, be watchful, for if God did not spare the natural branches, you should know there is a chance he may not spare you.

It is the perfect example of the goodness and severity of God. God was very hard on the ones that fell, but he has shown great goodness toward you. And that he will continue, as long as you continue to merit goodness. Otherwise, you will be cut off, also. And those other branches, the ones who were chopped off earlier, will be grafted in again, as long as they do not continue in disbelief. Surely, you do not doubt God could graft them in again, do you?

25 - It is no longer a secret, brethren. I trust you do not consider yourselves more important than you really are. Blindness (hardness of heart) will only remain on Israel until every gentile God selects has entered the covenant. Then, all those who remain from Israel will be saved, as David and Isaiah said: Our Savior will come forth out of Zion and take away all Jacob's ungodliness. In saying this, it is clear they mean a part of God's covenant with the Jews requires him to eventually forgive their sins.

Jews are adversaries when it comes to the gospel, though when it has to do with their election, they are loved by God because of the fathers.

God never holds out a gift and refuses to give it. You had no faith in the past, but you were given kindness because the Jews let go of their faith. We are convinced that though they do not believe now they will be given kindness in the future because of God's mercy toward you.

In this way, God will have turned both Jews and gentiles into unbelievers so he might then have mercy on all.

How many gentiles remain to be called isn't known, but it's clear every day brings the last gentile convert that much closer.

Is 54:7 - I deserted you for a moment, but I will return with mercy.

62:2 - Gentiles will acknowledge your righteousness and glory.

You will be called by a new name, one Yahweh himself will give you.

Jer 31:37 - Yahweh claims, If the heavens above can be measured, and if the foundation of Earth can be uncovered below, then I will also bring an end to the seed of Israel for all they have done.

Yahweh says, There will be a day when Jerusalem will be consecrated to Yahweh from the tower of Hananeel all the way to the corner gate.

Her border will run from the hill of Gareb the whole way to Goath.

All the valley of Gehenna, with all the fields extending over to the brook Kidron, then eastward to the horse gate, will be holy to Yahweh.

And the city will not be thrown down ever again through all ages.

Has this happened yet?

Is the Jerusalem of **2002 AD** a city dedicated to Yahweh?

If not, there are only two things worth considering. The first is the possibility the prophecies above have still not come about. The other is that Jeremiah really was a bullfrog, only one more dumb old hopper with no more savvy about the future than any other croaking amphibian.

Go ahead, it's your call.

Is today's Jerusalem anything like the Jerusalem below?

Mt 5:35 - Do not vow your vows on Jerusalem.

Do not, for Jerusalem is the city of the great King.

Is 4:1 - On that day, seven women will embrace one man, saying, We will supply our own food and clothes if you will just permit us to be called by your name, and if you will just take away our shame.

At that time, Yahweh's branch will be beautiful and glorious.

At that time, the bounty of the land will be the survivors of Israel.

All who remain from Zion will be known as holy ones.

And Yahweh will wash away the filth of the daughter of Jerusalem.

Yahweh will bring forth a spirit of judgment and fire.

Yahweh will remove all traces of the blood poured out in Jerusalem.

Yahweh will drape a covering over Mount Zion to shield those assembled on it. It will be like a cloud during day (as smoke) with a brightness just like fire in the night. It will safeguard all the glory, being a shelter and shade from heat during day, as well as a refuge from storm and rain.

27:13 - Yahweh will begin an harvest then, from the Euphrates river to the wadis of Egypt. You, oh Israel, will be gathered up one by one while a great trumpet sounds. Those who are wasting away in Syria's land and those who are scattered throughout the land of Egypt will come to pray before Yahweh atop his holy mountain in Jerusalem.

33:20 - Look at Zion, the city of our festivities.

Look, for you will see Jerusalem a place of peace.

52:7 - How lovely upon the mountains are the steps of those who assert good news, those who declare peace, those who preach the gospel of joy, those who make known the time of salvation, those who proclaim to Zion, Your Elohim rules!
Hear, for your watchmen will lift up their voices, shouting together with joy when their own eyes see Yahweh has returned to rebuild Zion.

Rejoice and shout together.
Shout it out, all you desolate places of Jerusalem.
Yahweh has comforted his people and redeemed Jerusalem.
Yahweh has bared his holy arm before all nations.
Yes, all the Earth will see the salvation of our Elohim.

62:8 - Yahweh has vowed by his right hand and the strength of his arm. He says he will never again let your enemies have your grain for food. Yahweh has sworn he will never again permit strangers to drink the new wine, wine for which you labored. From that day on, people who harvest the grain will eat it, giving gratitude to Yahweh. And people who gather the grapes will drink wine in the courts of Yahweh's temple.
Pass through.
Pass through the gates and prepare a way for my people.
Build up.
Build up an highway and remove every obstruction.
Raise up a sign for all nations.
Yahweh has sent out a decree to the whole planet.
Inform Zion's daughter, Your savior is here and his reward is with him.
Tell Zion he brought his retribution with him, too.
Tell Israel they will be called a holy people, redeemed by Yahweh.
Tell Jerusalem she will be called a city sought for, no longer barren.

66:22 - Just as the new heaven and Earth I make will endure before me, so will your name and your seed also endure, says Yahweh. From one new moon to another, and from one sabbath to another, all people who live on Earth will come to bow before me, says Yahweh. And when they go, they will see the bodies of the dead, the ones who rebelled against me. (24)

Joel 2:32 - Those who name Yahweh's name on themselves will be saved. Yes, they will be delivered, for on mount Zion and in Jerusalem salvation will appear, just as Yahweh promises the people he calls.
In that day, mountains will drip with new wine.
Hills will stream with milk.
Judah's rivers will all be full of water.
There will be a flow from Yahweh's house to water the valley of Shittim.
The land of Egypt will be wasted.
The land of Arabia will turn back into wilderness. (3:19)

This will happen because of all the atrocities they did on Judah's people.
This will happen because they spilled innocent blood in Judah's land.
The land of Judah will be inhabited for all ages.
The city of Jerusalem will be inhabited throughout all generations.
This will happen when I take revenge because of their blood.
This will happen when I take retribution for blood not yet avenged.
This will happen because I, Yahweh, intend to dwell in Zion.

Zech 1:14 - The angel said, Tell them Yahweh of hosts proclaims, I have grown very jealous about Jerusalem and Zion. I am especially enraged at all who look away, thereby adding to the affliction of my people.
Yahweh swears, I will return to Jerusalem in mercy.
Yahweh swears, My house will be built.
Yahweh swears, I will lay out the exact dimensions of the city myself.
Proclaim the good news once more.
Proclaim that the cities of Yahweh of hosts will be full of goodness.
Proclaim that it will be just like before.
Proclaim that Yahweh will again come to Zion's aid.
Proclaim that Yahweh will again comfort Jerusalem.
Yahweh will possess Judah as his portion in the holy land.
Yahweh will again dwell in Jerusalem. (2:12)

13:1 - A fountain will be made available to the house of David, and to all who are in Jerusalem, to cleanse them from sin and guilt.
It will come about, swears Yahweh of hosts, that I will propel the names of idolatry out of the land and they will no longer be remembered. I will drive all their seers and all their unclean ways out of my land. A prophet that preaches of things which are past will be struck through by his own father and mother as he speaks.

Mal 3:4 - Yahweh will be pleased by the gifts of Judah and Jerusalem.
It will be the same as in days of old, as in years past.
I will draw near to judge you, says Yahweh.
I will be a certain witness against the sorcerers, adulterers, liars, those who defraud workers out of their pay, those who are opposed to widows and orphans, and those who turn to follow alien ways and not my way.

Rev 3:11 - When I do come, I will come quickly.
Hold tight to the things you received so no one else takes your crown.
Hold tight, for I will make the ones who overcome pillars in the house of my God, and they will never have to leave it again. I will scribe the name of my God on them. I will scribe the name of my God's city on them, the name of new Jerusalem, coming down from my God out of heaven. And I will also name them with my new name.
Whoever has ears, let him hear.

21:9 - One of the seven angels that had poured out the seven bowls full of the last seven plagues spoke to me, saying, Come with me. I will show you the bride, the Lamb's wife.

He carried me away in spirit to an high and exalted mountain, and on top I saw the holy city, Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven.

23 - The city will not need the sun or moon to shine on it.

The glory of God will illuminate it with light flowing through the Lamb.

The survivors will walk in its light.

The rulers of Earth will surrender their authority and power to it.

The gates of the city will not be shut because it will never grow dark.

The capability to govern all nations will be united in it.

Those who are dirty, who behave repulsively, and who lie will not enter.

Those who enter will have names written in the Lamb's book of life.

Yahweh's plot to reveal himself in a cadre of elite ones, called forth from the trillions who've existed since the fiasco in Eden, has been out-worked by the ongoing development of individuals who'll eventually face a personal judgment to determine their worth.

These people are potential partakers of Yahweh's name and nature.

They're led to awareness of the truth, then they obey or ignore it.

This developmental process is acted out during their mortal lives.

The process isn't necessarily apparent to people they meet, but it's crystal clear to Christ. It's crystal clear, for he'll ultimately ascertain which is worthy and which is not.

A world-wide manifestation of these elect ones can only come about after their king has returned to raise, judge, and complete them.

When he has finished, the Elohim now helping him manage Earth will relinquish their positions.

Job openings created by promotion of the Elohim are to be filled by the elect, those judged worthy to wear Yahweh's name and nature.

Ultimate manifestation of Yahweh's name can only come to pass after the (so-called) millennium has ended and the faithful crop cultivated during the thousand (supposed) years is harvested.

Only then can Yahweh be manifest in each human.

Only then, for nobody will be living who didn't pass judgment.

Only then, for nobody will be living who wasn't judged worthy to take part in advancing the divine name and nature.

This is where the Bible ends, since what follows isn't revealed.

Those who want to know will take pains to be there.

Those who don't won't.

1 Cor 15:24 - The end will come after he hands the kingdom over to his God and Father. This can only happen after Christ has dethroned all the opposing systems, governments, and powers, since he must rule until God

puts his enemies beneath his feet. The last enemy he will crush is death. God will put all things beneath the feet of the Christ, but when it is said 'all' things will be put beneath the Christ, it obviously does not pertain to God, the one who first subjected everything to Christ. And after all things really are subject to Christ, the son himself is going to be subject to God, the one who put everything under him. In that day, God will truly be all in all.

Is it possible to read the Bible and fail to see the chief reason it was written was to reveal God's intention to manifest himself in certain elect members of the human race?

Is it possible to read the Bible and fail to see the reward held out to humankind isn't to flutter away in the moment of death to some nebulous and gaudy realm beyond the sky?

It seems the questions above have to be answered in the affirmative if the subject's judged according to the amount of humans who think the reward for their "good deeds" will be the opportunity to bend their dear and blessed knees in the presence of a gray-haired old geezer who feels he's also his own sorrowful son, not to mention his own holy essence.

Obviously, people who believe that fantasy don't know Yahweh.

Obviously, people who believe that fantasy aren't overly attracted to the word of Yahweh, either.

Mal 3:6 - But those who loved Yahweh's word continued to communicate among themselves. When Yahweh heard, he took note, and he ordered a book of remembrance to be kept in his presence, a book full of names of people who loved Yahweh and prayed to him.

Yahweh of hosts says, They will be mine on the day I make up my jewels.

I will spare them like a man spares his own son who cares for him.

You will see the difference between the righteous and wicked then.

You will know who loves God and who does not.

Ab and **aboth** are the Hebrew words from which "father" came.

Father isn't the only implication, since these Hebrew words can also mean mother, ancestor, origin, or source. Thus, English Bibles would've introduced "God, the Mother" assuming the Scholars manhandling them were nuns.

"God, the Parent" or "God, the Significant Other" might've appeared if the uni-sex, gender-bending bunch around today had showed up a few hundred years earlier.

There is no "God, the Father".

There is no "God, the Son".

These two beings don't exist, not in the Bible, anyway.

The Ultimate Spirit-power of this universe did engender a particular male offspring, though.

THE SON

He Becomes

Mt 1:1 - This is the genealogy of Jesus, the Christ.
He is the son of both David and Abraham.

Abraham begat Isaac . . . Jacob begat Joseph, the husband of Mary.
Mary gave birth to Yeshua, the one called the Christ. (16)

In the verses above, **Matthew** follows the lineage of Joseph way back to Abraham. Because he was Joseph's adopted son, Jesus was in line for a share in God's covenant through Abraham, David, and Joseph.

Mt 1:18 - The (genesis and) birth of Jesus Christ occurred this way: his mother, Mary, was engaged to Joseph, but before their pledge was final, it was found she was bearing a child by *hagios pneuma* (holy spirit). Joseph, her betrothed, did not want to embarrass her publicly so he decided to put her away in secret, but while he thought about it, Yahweh's angel appeared to him in a dream.

God's angel said, Joseph, of David's seed, do not refuse to take Mary for a wife. Mary's child was conceived by *hagios pneuma* (holy spirit) and she is going to have a son. You will call him Yeshua (Jesus, savior) for he will release his people from their sins. It is being done in this manner so the words of Isaiah, God's prophet, can be fulfilled, the words he wrote, saying, A virgin will bear a child.

Mary's son will be called Immanuel.

An interpretation of his name is 'God with us'.

Joseph, after he woke out of sleep, did just like Yahweh's angel told him to do. He took Mary for his wife and he did not know her until after she delivered her firstborn son, the child named Yeshua.

The prophecy the angel cited was spoken by **Isaiah (7:14)** in the days of Ahaz, an Hebrew king. **Isaiah** wasn't the only prophet riding the stiff neck and stubborn heart of the nation of Israel: **Hosea**, **Amos** and **Micah** were also members of a knot of prophets that showed up not long before Israel was rounded up and carried away captive into Assyria.

800 BC to **700 BC** was a disaster to the ten-tribed part of the Jew's kingdom. Before that century reached its end, near **720 BC**, the capital of the northern kingdom fell, its people either killed or taken captive.

The angel who appeared to Joseph applied only a small portion of the prophecy to Christ's birth. The rest applied to Israel's ruin. As always, Abraham's God offered hope to those of his people who cared.

Is 7:10 - Isaiah spoke again with Ahaz, saying, Ask Yahweh, your Elohim, to give you a sign. Pick whatever sign you want. Ask Yahweh to perform it in the deep, or even in the heavens above.

Ahaz said, I will not ask, nor will I provoke God.

Isaiah replied, Hear this, you people of David: is it not enough to try the patience of your fellow man? Will you now test the patience of God (the Elohim)? Therefore, Yahweh will pick a sign for you himself. Watch and see: a virgin will conceive and deliver a son, one she will call Immanuel.

Luke recorded the fulfillment of the prophecy . . .

Lk 1:26 - God sent his angel, Gabriel, to Nazareth, a city in Galilee.

God sent Gabriel to visit a virgin named Mary.

Mary was pledged to a man known as Joseph, from David's family line.

Gabriel came to her, and said, Yahweh is with you, Mary.

God regards you highly, and you will be blessed above all women.

When Mary heard him, she was astonished by what he said.

She began searching her mind, trying to make sense of his greeting.

Gabriel said, Do not doubt, Mary. God will truly bless you if you will just trust me. You will conceive a son in your womb, then deliver him. He will be named Yeshua. He will be great, and known as the son of the Highest. Yahweh Elohim will give him the throne of his father, David. He will rule the house of Jacob for all ages and his kingdom will have no end.

Mary asked Gabriel, How can this be? I am still a virgin.

He answered, Hagios pneuma (holy spirit) will come on you and the power of the Highest will overshadow you. This is why the one you bear will be special, fit to be called God's son.

His Birthplace

The little town of Bethlehem played a major role in Israel's history.

The scroll of **Judges (17:6)** tells of a young man from Bethlehem.

The young man was hired as a priest by the Hebrew, Micah.

The situation among Abraham's seed at that time was this: the people of Israel had no king so they did whatever they thought was right. They were living a thousand years before Christ and God had already begun to manifest a son embodying the persona of priest and king.

1 Samuel (16:11) claims that Yahweh commanded **Samuel**, one of his prophets, to go to Judah, being he'd located his own king among the sons of Jesse, the one living in Bethlehem.

It was at Bethlehem where the young man named **David** was anointed (christ-ened) king of the Jews.

Micah, the prophet, lived two hundred years later.
He lived in the last days of the ten-tribed part of the Jew's kingdom.
Micah foretold the birth-place of the future Jewish king.

Micah 5:2 - Bethlehem Ephratah, you are considered to be nothing when you are measured according to other Judean cities; and yet, the one who rules Israel for me will come from you.

Mt 2:1 - Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, during the reign of king Herod. Wise men arrived in Jerusalem out of the east, asking, Where is he who was born to be king of the Jews? We see his star in the dawning and we have come to honor him.

When king Herod found out, he was troubled with the rest of Jerusalem. Herod called for the chief priests and scribes of the people. He ordered them to tell him where the Christ would be born. In Bethlehem, of Judea, they told him, since the prophet wrote: You, oh Bethlehem, of Judah's land, are not least among Judean towns, since the ruler of my people, Israel, will come from you.

Lk 2:4 - Joseph left the city of Nazareth in Galilee. He was headed for Bethlehem in Judea, David's city, for he was from David's house and line.

Jn 7:40 - The people, when they talked about Jesus, said, He has to be a prophet, maybe the one promised by Moses. (**Dt 18:15**)
Many said, He is the Christ.
Some wondered aloud, Will the Christ come out of Galilee?
Others added, Scripture says the Christ will come from David's line.
One said, He will come from Bethlehem, David's city.
All the people were divided concerning him, with some demanding that he be arrested, but no one was brave enough to lay hands on him.

The Son of God

Mk 1:1 - The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, God's son.
He grew, and his spirit also grew. (**Lk 2:40**)
He was filled with wisdom, for God approved of him.
He increased in wisdom, stature, and favor with both God and man.

Matthew reports an event in the beginning of Jesus' life typifying an old testament scripture. When Egypt's Pharaoh refused to defer to the demand that he release Israel, Israel's God issued an ultimatum.

Ex 4:22 - Yahweh says, Israel is my son, my firstborn.
I order you now to release my son so he can serve me.
If you do not, I will slaughter all your firstborn sons.

Hosea 11:1 - When Israel was a child, I loved him.
When Israel was a child, I called my son out of Egypt.

Mt 2:13 - Yahweh's angel appeared to Joseph in a dream, and said, Rise!
Take the child and his mother to Egypt. Stay there until I come to you,
for Herod wants to kill the boy.
Joseph rose. He woke the child and his mother and they went the same
night to Egypt, remaining there until Herod died.
In this way, Yahweh's words came about, his words through the prophet
who wrote, I called my son out of Egypt.

Again, **Matthew** applies no more than a part of the two prophecies to
the early years of the Christ. The rest applies to an unfaithful son, the
nation of Israel.

Not everyone in Israel lacked faith, though. As the day predicted in
Daniel drew near, the period during which God said his son would appear,
faithful ones began to converge on Jerusalem.

Lk 2:25 - A man named Simeon came to Jerusalem, a man who was moral
and dedicated, a man who just desired the salvation of Israel. The holy
spirit was on him, and it was holy spirit which informed him he would not
die before he saw Yahweh's Christ.

Simeon entered the temple in the spirit; and, when the parents brought
in the child, Jesus, to be circumcised, Simeon held him aloft in his arms,
and praised God, saying, Lord, you may take your servant in peace as you
promised, for my own eyes have now seen the salvation you provided for
all nations, a light to reveal knowledge to the gentiles, and the praise of
your people, Israel.

36 - There was a prophetess named Anna, the daughter of Phaneul, from
Asher's tribe. She refused to leave the temple; rather, she served with
fasting and prayer all night and day.
Anna walked into the temple with Simeon, giving thanks to Yahweh.
And after, she began speaking of the child to all those seeking salvation
in Jerusalem.

Yahweh promised that before his son's appearance, he'd bring forth
a prophet, one a lot like prophets of old. He swore to reveal his son to
this prophet, who'd then introduce God's son to Israel.

Mal 3:1 - I will send my messenger to prepare the way.
The lord you seek will quickly enter (bo, come into) his temple.
This is the messenger of the covenant you say you love.
Then watch, for he will return, says Yahweh of hosts.
Though who will remain alive the day he comes?
Though who will be left standing the day he appears? **(400 BC)**

Lk 1:5 - During Herod's tenure as ruler of Judea, there was a particular priest called Zacharias. His wife, known as Elisabeth, was a daughter of Aaron. They were both upright in God's eyes. They had no children, for Elisabeth was barren and they were well on in years.
While Zacharias was executing his duties as God's priest . . .

11 - Yahweh's angel appeared to him, standing near the right side of the altar of incense. When Zacharias saw, he was uneasy and frightened.
Have no fear, Zacharias, said the angel. Your prayers are answered, and your wife, Elisabeth, will give birth to a son. You will name him John and he will provide you true joy and happiness. Many will rejoice in the birth of your son, for he will be grand in Yahweh's sight. He will be filled with holy spirit from his mother's womb and a large number of Israel's people will commit to Yahweh, their God, because of him.
He will pave the path of God's anointed one through the spirit and power of Elijah, preparing the people to meet their Lord.

57 - Elisabeth brought forth a son.
His father, Zacharias, filled up with holy spirit, and started to prophesy, saying, Give honor to the Lord God of Israel, since he has visited us, and since he has rescued his people, raising an horn of salvation for us in the house of David, his servant, the same way he promised us through all his holy prophets ever since the beginning of this age.
He said he would save us from our enemies and deliver us from the hand of all those who hate us. He also said he would bring about the kindness he promised our fathers, and remember his holy covenant, the oath that he swore to our father, Abraham. **(67)**

76 - You, my child, will be known as the prophet of the Highest, and you will go before the face of the Lord (anointed one) preparing his way and bringing the people knowledge of salvation so their sins may be forgiven.

80 - The child grew and became strong in pneuma.
He remained in the wilderness until the day he appeared to Israel.

Mk 1:1 - The beginning of the good news concerning Jesus Christ, God's son . . . as it is written in the prophets: Be aware, for I am going to send my messenger before you to prepare your way.

He will be as one whose voice cries out in the wilderness.
He will say, Prepare the way for our Lord and walk his path properly.
John immersed in the wilderness, preaching that baptism was necessary
in order to demonstrate repentance and forgiveness of sins.
People from Judea, and even some from Jerusalem, came out to John to
confess their sins and be baptized by him in the Jordan river.

After he baptized his cousin, Jesus, the sign he'd been instructed to
watch for was shown to John; of all who were present at the baptism of
Christ, John alone heard and understood the words of God's voice.

Mt 3:1 - This is my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased.
I, John, heard it, and I am a witness that he is God's son. (**Jn 1:34**)

Matthew, Mark and Luke all reported what went on when Jesus was
transfigured with the glory reserved for the Christ.

Mt 17:1 - Jesus chose Peter, James, and John, his brother.
He led them up an high mountain and was transfigured before them.
Jesus' face flamed as the sun, his garment was white as light, and there
was a bright cloud overshadowing them all. They heard a voice from the
cloud, saying, He is my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased.

1 Ptr 1:16 - We did not follow cunningly devised tales when we informed
you of the energy of the manifestation of our Lord Jesus as Christ. We
were eyewitnesses of his glory. We witnessed that God, our Father, has
granted him praise and honor, since the excellent and glorious voice that
spoke out of the cloud, said, He is my beloved son, by whom I am greatly
pleased. We heard this voice as if it came out of the very heavens, as if
it was speaking to us when we were with Jesus on the holy mount.

Jesus identified himself as the son promised in the old testament.

Lk 2:49 - I must be about my Father's business.

Jn 2:16 - Do not turn my Father's house into a place for peddlers.

5:43 - I have come in my Father's name, but you will not accept me.

8:29 - The one who sent me is always with me.

My Father will never leave me, for I always do things that please him.

15:23 - Those who hate me also hate my Father.

16:28 - I came forth from the Father.

10:30 - I am one with the Father.

17:11 - Holy Father, please save through your own name those you have
given me. Let them be one like we are one.

Jn 12:23 - Jesus said, The hour has come in which the son of man will be glorified. I am concerned, but what should I say: Save me, oh Father, in this hour of need? It is the only reason I came to this hour. What I am saying is, Oh Father, glorify your name.

Again, the voice came from heaven, saying, I have glorified it before and I will glorify it once again.

People who were near heard the sound of the voice.

Others said, It must have thundered.

Some even said, An angel spoke to him.

Mt 26:63 - The high priest shouted at Jesus, saying, I order you by the name of the living God, tell us if you are the Christ, God's son, or not!

Jesus replied, You said it. And I will tell you that in the not-too-distant future, you are going to see the son of man enthroned at the right hand of power, returning in the clouds of heaven.

Rending his garment, the high priest said, The man speaks blasphemy so why do we need more witnesses? You heard his heresy so what say you? He is guilty, they shouted. He deserves death!

And they spit in his face and punched him.

Some slapped him with the palms of their hands, taunting him while they sang out, Prophecy to us, you who claim to be Christ . . . who hit you?

Again, they asked him, Do you still claim to be God's son?

You say I am, he replied.

What more do we need, they asked?

We hear it from his own mouth, they said. (**Lk 22:70**)

23:34 - Forgive them, Father, for they know not what they do.

Father, into your hands I entrust my spirit. (**46**)

Jn 20:30 - Jesus revealed many other signs when in the presence of the disciples, signs which are not reported in this book, but these signs have been recorded in hopes you might believe Jesus is the Christ, the son of God, and also, that because you believe you might have life in his name.

1 Jn 5:20 - We know the son of God has come.

We know the son of God has given us an understanding of the truth.

We know we are in the truth.

We know we are in the son of God, Jesus, the Christ.

We know this pertains to the true God.

We know this pertains to eternal life, too.

The Son of Man

Ps 80:17 - Place your hand on your right-hand man.

Place your hand on the son of man you made strong for yourself.

Ezk 12:1 - The word of Yahweh came to me.

The word of Yahweh said, Son of man, you live among a disloyal people.

They have eyes to see, but they will not see.

They have ears to hear, but they will not hear.

Truly, they are a rebellious house.

Dan 7:13 - I saw visions of the night, visions in which one like the son of man came in the clouds of heaven and approached the ancient of days.

He was brought to his side.

He was given power, dignity, and a dominion.

He will be served by all people, nations, and tongues.

His dominion will continue throughout the ages.

His kingdom will never pass away or be destroyed.

A man came toward the place where I stood. **(8:17)**

When he reached me, I was afraid and I fell on my face.

He said, Hear me, son of man, these visions concern the time of the end.

Mt 11:18 - John comes, neither eating or drinking, and they say, He has a demon (daimonia). The son of man comes eating and drinking alike, and they say, Look at him, a man who has an appetite, a drinker, and a friend of both publicans and sinners.

12:40 - In the same way Jonah spent three days and three nights inside a whale, so too, the son of man must remain three days and three nights in the heart of the Earth.

16:13 - Jesus arrived at the borders of Cesarea Phillippi.

He asked his disciples, Who do men say I, the son of man, am?

Some say John, the Baptizer, they replied.

Some say you are Elijah.

Some say Jeremiah or one of the other prophets.

So who do you say I am, asked Jesus?

Simon Peter replied, You are the Christ, son of the living God.

The Christ

Jn 1:41 - We have found the Messiah, which interpreted is the Christ.

Mt 16:20 - He made his disciples promise not to tell anyone he was that particular Jesus, the one who was Christ (the anointed savior).

Mk 12:35 - When Jesus was preaching in the temple, he wondered aloud, How can the scribes say Christ is David's son? David himself said by the holy spirit, Yahweh told my Lord, Come sit here by my right hand while I turn your adversaries into your footstool.

In view of the fact David calls the Christ his Lord, how is it possible the Christ can be David's son?

Jn 11:27 - She confessed, Oh yes, my Lord, I believe you are the Christ. I believe you are the son of God who is to appear in the kosmos (world).

The King

Mt 2:2 - Where is the one born king of the Jews?

Mk 11:9 - Those before him and those following, shouted, Hosanna!
Blessed is the one who comes in the name of the Lord.
Blessed is the kingdom of our father, David, coming in the Lord's name.

Lk 19:38 - All his disciples began to rejoice, praising God.
And they shouted, Blessed is the king coming in the name of the Lord.

Mk 16:43 - Joseph, of Arimathea, an honored counselor, one who waited for the Kingdom of God, went to Pilate, boldly asking for Jesus' body.

His Kingdom

Rev 11:15 - This world's kingdoms have now become the kingdoms of our Lord and his Christ, and they will rule for ever and ever (for all ages).

Ps 2 - Why do the heathen rage?
Why do their people expect vain things?
Kings of Earth set themselves, and rulers plan together against Yahweh and his Christ, but Yahweh will yet place his king on the holy hill in Zion.
Only ask, and I will give you the heathen for your inheritance.
Only ask, and I will give you the ends of the Earth for a possession.
So be wise now, you kings.
So be instructed, you judges of Earth.
Serve Yahweh with humility.
Salute Yahweh with trembling.
Embrace the son before he becomes angry and you perish from the way.
Embrace the son, since his wrath will soon flare.
Embrace the son, for all who trust in him will be blessed.

72:1 - Give your judgments to the king, oh Elohim.
Present your righteousness to the son of the king.
He will judge his people with equity.
He will break their oppressors into pieces.
He will be feared as long as the sun and moon endure.
He will rule for all generations, having dominion from sea to sea.

He will have dominion from the river to the ends of the Earth.
All kings will bow before him.
All nations will serve him.

Is 9:6 - A child has been born to us.
We have received our son.
And the government will be on his shoulders.
He will be named wonderful, the counselor, the mighty God (gibbor El, he who gets strength by way of El) the everlasting father (ad ab, continuing source) and the Prince of Peace.
His government will never cease increasing and there will never be an end to David's throne or his dominion, to order and grow it in judgment and in justice from that day to the end of the age.
The zeal of Yahweh Tz'vaoth (one who will be strength) is going to do it.

Jer 11:1 - A rod will emerge from the stem of Jesse.
A branch will grow out of Jesse's root.
And the spirit (pneuma) of the Lord will be upon him, the spirit of insight, knowledge, understanding, and strength; and because he has a spirit with love for Yahweh, he will judge properly.

23:5 - A day will come, declares Yahweh, when I will raise up a righteous branch to David and a king will rule and prosper.
He will bring judgment and justice to Earth.
He will deliver Judah and Israel will dwell safely in those days.
He will be known as Yahweh, our righteousness (Yahweh Tsedeq, one who brings justice).
Yahweh declares the day is coming when it will no longer be said that the Yahweh who freed the seed of Israel from Egypt is the living God.
It will be proclaimed in those days that Yahweh, the one who led Israel's seed down out of the north-country, and out of all the other countries in which he dispersed them, is the living God. And it will also be proclaimed that Yahweh has empowered them to live in their own land again.

Amos 9:11 - I will rebuild the tabernacle of David at that time.
I will rebuild the tabernacle that has fallen and mend all its breaches.
I will rebuild all its ruins and it will be just like it was in the old days.

Zech 6:12 - Behold the man called the Branch.
The Branch is the one who will build Yahweh's house.
The Branch will receive glory as he sits and rules on his throne.

Lk 1:31 - A child will form in your womb and you will bear a son. You will call him Yeshua. Your son will be splendid. He will undeniably be the son of the Highest, for God will give him the throne of his father, David.

His throne will govern Jacob's house for all ages.
His kingdom will never end.

Mt 4:23 - Jesus passed throughout all Galilee, preaching in their houses of worship and teaching the gospel of the kingdom. He also cured every kind of sickness and disease among the people.

6:9 - You should pray in a way such as this: Our Father in heaven, whose name is hallowed, we yearn for your kingdom to come so your will is done on Earth as it is in heaven.

Lk 12:29 - Do not be concerned about what you will eat or drink. Have no doubt in your mind, for these are things people in the world are concerned about, but the Father knows what you need. If your first concern is the Kingdom of God, all else will come to you. Do not fear, little flock, our Father is happy to give you his kingdom.

13:28 - You will see Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, with all the prophets of the Lord, enter the Kingdom of God, but you will be ejected. They will come out of the north, south, east, and west. They will come from all directions. They will come and you will see them inherit places in God's kingdom.

17:20 - The Pharisees demanded that Jesus tell them when the Kingdom of God was to come, but he said, God's kingdom is not seen with the eyes. Nobody will say, Look, here it is. Nobody will say, Wrong, it is over there. Wake up! The Kingdom of God is always right here in your midst.

19:11 - After these things were finished, Jesus told them a parable. He told it because they were closing on Jerusalem and the disciples had convinced themselves the kingdom would come when they arrived. Jesus said, There was a certain nobleman who went off to a far country to receive a kingdom and return sometime after.

22:14 - When the hour came, he sat down with his twelve apostles. He said, With a great longing I have looked forward to partaking of this passover with you before I suffer. I swear to you I will not eat it again, not until it is all fulfilled in the Kingdom of God.

29 - He held up the cup, and he gave thanks, saying, Take this and divide it up among you. I swear to you I will not drink fruit from the vine again until God's kingdom has come. You will be given dominion then, just as I was given by my Father. You will eat and drink at my table in my kingdom.

Acts 1:3 - He showed he was yet alive after his death by a multitude of infallible things and he was seen by his disciples in excess of forty days, staying with them as he taught them about the Kingdom of God.

And, when they all came together, they asked him, Lord, is now the time to restore the kingdom to Israel?

Jesus replied, It is not for you to know the times or seasons the Father has put in his own power. (6)

8:12 - When they believed Philip's teachings regarding the things of the Kingdom of God and Jesus Christ, its king, they were baptized.

19:8 - Paul joined their synagogue, where he spoke boldly for the period of three months, reasoning with them and trying to convince them about the Kingdom of God, but some of them hardened their mind and refused to agree with the things Paul had taught them, and when they poked fun at his words in front of the crowds, Paul left them.

28:23 - When they appointed him a time, many came to the house where Paul was staying. He spoke to them, witnessing about God's kingdom and enlightening them about Jesus from Moses' law and the prophets all day starting at morning and going to night. Some believed and some did not. Paul stayed for two years in his own rented lodging. He welcomed those who came to him there and he taught them about God's kingdom and the Lord Jesus Christ in all confidence, with no one preventing him. (30)

Jesus used figurative language when teaching those who came to him and he always taught with parables. In parables, he compared events or situations his audience was familiar with to spiritual enigmas seen in the old testament. The parables were identified now and again. Most often, however, they weren't. Authors of the following verses plainly proclaim Jesus never spoke in public at all without using parables.

Mt 7:24 - Persons who have heard my words and acted I will compare to a rational man who built his house on a rock. When the rain and flooding came and wind blew and pummeled the house, it did not collapse, since it was built on a rock.

And persons who have heard my words and refused to act I will compare to a foolhardy man who built his house on some sand. When the rain and flooding came and wind blew and pummeled the house, it fell.

Mk 4:1 - Again, Jesus spoke at the seashore, but the crowd got so huge he had to board a boat and row out a short distance. The people stayed on shore and he taught them many things by parable, communicating the word to the crowd in his own way of speaking.

He said, Listen and think. A sower went out to sow . . .

9 - He finished by saying, Let those with ears hear.

When they were alone, his followers, with the twelve, asked him for the meaning of the parable.

Jesus said, You have received the opportunity to grasp the mysteries of God's kingdom, but these things are presented to others in parables.

It is being done like this so by seeing they will see and not perceive, and by hearing they will hear and not understand unless at any time they will change their minds, be converted, and oblige God to forgive them.

He said, If you do not understand this parable, what makes you presume you will understand any of my parables?

After explaining the parable to his disciples, he said . . .

If anyone has ears to hear, let him hear. **(23)**

He spoke on, saying, Take care what you hear because the same measure you measure out is going to be measured back to you. More will be given to the ones who understand. All those who have more will get even more again. As for people who refuse to learn, even the small amount they do have will be taken from them.

He taught them the word with many such parables and they took in only as much as they were able. But Jesus never spoke in public at all unless he was teaching with a parable.

When they were alone, he explained it all to his disciples. **(33)**

The Prophet

Dt 18:18 - I will raise a prophet up among them. He will rise from their own brethren and be like you, Moses. I will place my words in his mouth and he will repeat all that I tell him. In that day, I will require answers from those who disregard the words he speaks in my name.

Acts 3:22 - Moses told the truth to our fathers by stating, Yahweh will raise up a prophet for you, a prophet like me from among your brethren. You must do all he tells you. Those who refuse to listen to that prophet will be destroyed from among the people.

Every prophet from Samuel's days to the days of the ones who followed, all those that spoke, foretold these days. You are the children of those prophets. You are the children of God's covenant to the fathers, saying to Abraham: Your seed (son) will bring blessings on the nations of Earth. And now, after God raised his own son, Jesus, he sent him to you (Jews) first to bless you by turning you each from your own evil way.

Lk 7:16 - They were all filled with wonder and gave God the glory.

A great prophet has risen up among us, they shouted.

And they also shouted, God has visited his people.

Jn 1:45 - We have found the one written about in Moses' law, and in the prophets. It is Jesus, from Nazareth, Joseph's son.

5:36 - What the Father wants me to accomplish is what I will do.
And when I am done, it will bear witness the Father sent me.

6:14 - After they saw Jesus work the miracle, they said, That has to be the prophet we were told would come into the world.

When Jesus realized they were going to take him by force and make him their king, he climbed up a mountain to be alone.

The Teacher

Mt 4:23 - Jesus went throughout Galilee.
He taught in their synagogues, preaching the gospel of the kingdom.

7:28 - When Jesus finished speaking, the crowd was stunned at what he had told them, for he spoke like he had authority, not like the scribes.

Mk 1:38 - Let us go on to the next town so I can preach there, too.
I must go teach them, for that is what God told me to do.

Lk 4:32 - They were amazed by his words, for they had power.

8:1 - Jesus taught in all their cities and villages.
He spoke the good news of God's kingdom.

Jn 7:45 - They returned to the chief priests and Pharisees.
The officials asked them, Why did you not bring him in?
The officers answered, Because no man speaks like this man.

The Healer

Is 53:4 - He has borne our sufferings and taken on all our sorrows.

Mt 8:16 - When evening came, they brought many who had daimonizomai (were demonized, not in their proper mind) and he cast these spirits out with a word, curing those who were sick, by which means he fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, where it was said: He bore our sufferings in himself and he took on all our sorrows.

14:14 - When Jesus went out, he saw a great multitude.
Because he was touched with pity for them, he healed their sick.

15:30 - Large crowds came to Jesus, bringing him lame, blind, dumb, and disfigured persons, along with many others. Individuals like these were laid at Jesus' feet and he healed them all. People were amazed when they heard the dumb speak and when they saw the crippled made whole. People were awed when they saw the lame walk and blind ones made able to see. And they all offered their gratitude to the God of Israel.

The Nature of Christ

A Man

Mt 26:36 - Jesus and the disciples reached Gethsemane. Jesus spoke to them, saying, Wait here while I go yonder and pray. Jesus invited Peter and the two sons of Zebedee to go with him. Jesus grew very sorrowful and heavy of heart. Jesus said, My soul is totally sad, almost to death.

Mk 3:5 - He glared at the people around him in anger. He glared because he was upset at the hardness of their hearts. Hold out your hand, Jesus told the crippled man. When the man held out his hand, it was restored whole like the other.

Lk 19:41 - He wept for the city when he was close enough to see it.

Jn 11:33 - After Jesus heard her crying, and after he felt the sadness of those who were with her, he groaned in his spirit and was troubled. Where did you put him, he asked? When they said, Come and see, Lord, Jesus started to cry.

Heb 5:7 - He offered up prayers in the days he was flesh, pleading with intense weeping and tears, asking God to deliver him from death, and he was heard because he feared.

Jn 5:19 - The son can accomplish nothing on his own. I am not doing my own will, but the will of the Father who sent me. My doctrine is not mine; rather, it is from the one who sent me. **(7:16)**

12:49 - I have not given you my own teachings, but the Father that sent me told me what to say and teach. I know his teachings are true. I also know they will provide life in the age. I only teach what I received from my Father, and that is all I will teach.

Mt 20:23 - He said, The seats on my right and left are not mine to give. Those seats will go to the ones for whom my Father prepared them.

Mk 10:18 - Why call me good? God is the only good one.

13:32 - No one knows which day or hour, not the angels, and not the son. Our Father is the only one who knows.

14:36 - Abba, Father, all things are possible to you. If there is any way to take this cup from me, please do not make me drink it; and yet, it will not be what I want, for I am going to do whatever you tell me.

Jn 14:28 - My Father is greater than I.

Gal 4:4 - When the fullness of time came, God sent his son. He was formed in a woman and put under the authority of Moses' law.

1 Tim 2:5 - There is only one God.
There is only one mediator between God and humanity.
That mediator is the man, Jesus.

Rom 5:15 - The gift of mercy which came by one man, Jesus, the Christ, has now abounded to many.

Acts 2:22 - Jesus of Nazareth, a man undoubtedly sent by God.

17:31 - God has prearranged a day when he will judge the whole world in righteousness by a man he has ordained.
God gave assurance to all when he raised that man from the dead.

1 Cor 15:21 - We know death entered the world through a man. And we know, too, resurrection of the dead should also enter through a man. All who are in Adam will die, but all those in Christ will be given new life, each one in his proper order: Christ, the first-fruits; and later, the ones who belong to Christ at his coming.

45 - It is written: The first man (adam) was made a living soul.
It is also written: The last man (adam) was made a life-giving spirit.

47 - The first man (adam) was from Earth and was earthly.
The second man (the savior) became the Lord from heaven.

2 Cor 5:21 - God counted the one without sin to be sin for us.
God did it so we could be counted as God's righteous ones through him.

Heb 2:14 - The same way (Abraham's) children are made from flesh and blood, he himself was also likewise formed from the same so by dying he could destroy that which had power over death, the diabolos (devil).

He did it to save those who, since they feared death, were the slaves of ignorance their whole lives.

It is a fact that the son did not possess the nature of angels; rather, he possessed the same nature as Abraham's seed because it was of primary importance that he be like his brethren. Since he has suffered now and been tried, he is able to provide help to all the others who are presently being tested.

4:15 - Our high priest is not untouched by a feeling for our weaknesses. Our high priest was tested in all points like us, yet he did not sin.

5:8 - Though he was God's son, he still learned obedience through things he experienced. And when he was brought to fulfillment, he became the source of eternal salvation to all who obey him.

2 Jn 7 - Many deceivers have entered this kosmos (world) who refuse to believe Jesus Christ came in the flesh, even stating he was not a human being. They are liars and they follow the antichrist.

With many areas of Christ's life having been examined, attention may now be turned to his death. Christ's demise was foretold all through the scriptures. The genesis, sacrifice, death, resurrection, and glorification of God's son are cornerstones of Bible teaching. Lacking this foundation, the Bible would be only one more way to avoid God, just like all the other so-called "religions" of Earth.

It's a fundamental fact the sacrifice of Christ was preconceived and fore-ordained by God. It wouldn't matter that much to the average guy, but it went straight to the bone with Christ.

It told Christ he was born to die young, in an unpleasant manner.

All humans know they'll die . . . someday, someday.

Jesus knew he was slated to die during the passover he turned thirty three years of age, by brutal hands, the hard way.

Jesus knew he must do it if he wanted to please his Father.

Acts 2:22 - Jesus, of Nazareth, a man plainly sent to you by God, proven by the miracles, signs, and wonders that God worked through him in your midst like you know yourselves. Jesus, of Nazareth, sent to you through God's unbendable will and unerring foresight. Jesus, of Nazareth, a man you took in your evil hands and crucified and murdered.

4:27 - In truth, Father, it was against your holy son, Jesus, one that you anointed, who Herod and Pontius Pilate both, along with the gentiles, and with others from Israel, were assembled to do the very things that your hand and wisdom said in advance they would do.

It didn't get any easier as the end approached, either.

Lk 22:21 - Consider that the hand of the one who will betray me is here at the table with us. Truthfully, the Son of man must depart the way it was determined, but woe to the person who betrays him!
And they began wondering among themselves who would turn on him.

41 - Jesus withdrew himself a stone's throw apart; he kneeled then, and started to pray, saying, Father, if there is any possible way you can take this cup from me, please do it - nevertheless, it is not what I want which will be done. What you want is what I am going to do.
An angel from heaven came to strengthen him, but being in great misery he prayed even more earnestly.

Jesus knew by an early age he'd face serious testing if he wanted to please the Father. By his twelfth year, he appears to have accepted he was the son of Yahweh. At the very temple in which he would cause the largest of stirs some twenty years in his future, he acted out the scene below with his mother and Joseph.

Lk 2:46 - They found him in the temple three days later. He was sitting with the teachers. He listened, but he asked questions, too. People who heard him were amazed at his understanding and answers.
Mary and Joseph were amazed, also, and his mother asked him, Son, why have you done this to us? Surely, you knew your father and I were going to be looking for you. You must have known we would be worried.
Jesus asked her, Why be worried? Surely, you know I must get started with my Father's business.
What he told them, they did not comprehend.
Jesus returned to Nazareth with them and subjected himself to both.
His mother continued to hold all these things in her heart.
Meanwhile, Jesus grew in wisdom, stature, and favor with God and man.

Jesus told those in his earthly family more than once his Father had the top slot on his list of priorities.

Mt 12:46 - As he kept teaching, some of the people noticed his mother, along with his brothers, standing outside waiting to speak with him.
One asked, Do you not see your mother and brothers waiting outside?
He also asked, Do you not care that they want to speak with you?
Staring at the man who asked, Jesus replied, Who is my mother?
He also replied, Who are my brothers?
Pointing toward the disciples, Jesus said, There is my mother and there are my brothers. The people who do the will of my Father in heaven are my brothers, sisters, and mother.

Jesus wouldn't need much help gaining meaning from the following old testament prophecies.

Gen 3:15 - I will bring hatred between you and the woman, between your seed and hers. You will bruise his heel. He will crush your head.
(4000 BC?)

22:1 - Elohim tested Abraham, saying, Take your only son, Isaac, the son you love, and get yourselves into the land of Moriah. I want you to offer up Isaac there as a burnt sacrifice atop a mountain I will show you.

Abraham rose early and took two of his young men and his son, Isaac, to cut wood with him for the burnt offering. Not much later, they left for the place to which God had directed him.

When Abraham got there, he bundled some wood for the burnt offering and laid it on his son, Isaac. He carried fire in his hand, and also a knife, when they left, the two of them together.

Isaac asked Abraham, his father, I can see the fire and wood, but there is no lamb for the burnt offering, is there?

Abraham said, My son, God will provide a lamb for the burnt offering.

When they arrived at the place to which God had sent him, Abraham set up an altar. He laid the wood in order, then he bound his only son, Isaac, and placed him atop the wood on the altar.

Raising the knife, Abraham reached out his hand, fully meaning to strike his son, but an angel of Yahweh called to him from heaven, saying, Do not place your hand on the lad. Do nothing to him, since your love of God has been shown in that you did not withhold your only son from me.

Raising his eyes, Abraham glanced around.

Behind him, he saw a ram caught by his horns in some brush.

He slew the ram and sacrificed it as a burnt offering in place of his son.
(2000 BC)

Ps 16:8 - Yahweh is always before me.

Since Yahweh is at my right hand, I will not be moved.

Because of it, my heart is glad and I glory in Yahweh and praise him.

My body will also rest in hope, for he will not permit my soul to remain in hell (the grave) nor will he let his holy one see corruption. (1000 BC)

Is 53:4 - Without doubt, he has borne our pain and taken on our sorrow.

We were sure he was stricken (God-struck) and afflicted, but it was our sins for which he was wounded and our iniquity for which he was bruised. He was disciplined for our welfare.

We will be healed by his stripes.

He was oppressed and afflicted, yet he did not protest.

He was led like a lamb to the slaughter.
 He will be released from confinement (the grave).
 He will be set free from judgment (a sentence of death).
 Can it be possible this is his end?
 He will be cut off from the land of the living.
 He will be killed to cover the sins of my people.
 He will be buried with the wicked. (800 BC)

Dan 9:25 - Know this, then, and understand: from the time a command to raise up and refurbish Jerusalem is issued, until Messiah, the Prince, will be seven (years of) weeks added to sixty two weeks. The street and the wall will be rebuilt, even in troublous times. Then after three-score plus two weeks, Messiah will be cut off, but not for anything he did. (600 BC)

Sure, Jesus knew the scriptures, but sometimes he got his knowledge in the strangest ways, as revealed below.

Lk 9:30 - We saw two men talking to him. For all we knew, they may have been Moses and Elijah because they were glowing gloriously, also, as they spoke to him about the death he had to suffer in Jerusalem.

Mt 16:22 - From that time on, Jesus started to tell the disciples that he must go to Jerusalem to experience great suffering from the elders, the chief priests, and the scribes. He told them he would be killed, but that he would be raised back up on the third day.

Mk 9:32 - They did not understand him, and they were afraid to ask.

Lk 18:31 - Taking the twelve aside, he told them, Watch out, for we will travel up to Jerusalem in order that everything written by the prophets having to do with the son of man can be fulfilled. He will be turned over to gentiles who will mock him, hate him, spit on him, and scourge him. They will kill him, but he will come back to life after three days. The disciples did not understand what he was telling them. They did not, for the meaning of his words was being hidden from them. They understood few of the things he said, actually.

Jn 10:17 - The Father loves me because I am willing to lay down my life. I am willing to lay it down so I may have it back. I will lay down my life myself. I will lay down my life and no one will take it from me. I have been given permission to put my life on the line. I will also be given power to take it back up again. I was told all this by my Father.

His Sacrifice

The sacrifice of Christ (as taught by anti-christians) is but one more rip-off of heathen sacrifices and superstitions, nothing but hocus pocus, a fantasy in which the rage of their anti-christian "deity" is appeased by the offering of an harmless and helpless victim. In this case, the victim is a part of the anti-deity "Himself".

It's an anti-sacrifice, a cryptic creation, featuring an anti-christ who dies instead of the anti-christians, the very ones who deserve to die.

It's like some bleeding-heart boob hot-foots it forward, volunteering to die in place of his ignorant and contrary kinfolk.

It has Jesus saying, "Spare them! I'll pick up their tab."

It also has some extremely large holes.

If the Christ died instead of humans, then humans shouldn't die.

In that case, why do humans still drop like flies every day?

If Christ settled humanity's debt, it's out of line for the anti-god to keep offering forgiveness to people whose sins are forgiven.

If the debt is paid, why does the anti-god still demand payment?

In the Bible, an altogether different story is told . . .

Mk 11:25 - When you stand in prayer, forgive people who have offended you so your heavenly Father may forgive your sins. If you do not forgive people who offend you, your Father in heaven will not forgive you.

Acts 13:38 - Absolution of sins is being preached to you through Christ, through the one by whom believers are released of all things from which Moses' law could not release them.

Eph 4:32 - Look kindly on the others, having tender hearts and forgiving your fellow believers like God forgave you for Christ's sake.

If the Christ paid humanity's penalty (death) he shouldn't have risen, but he rose. And not only that, he hung around a few weeks showing it.

If the death of Christ was substituted for the one owed by humans, there'd be no cause or justification to raise him.

Where's the gain in raising him, for humanity would have to plop back on the old hot seat, still in debt, still owing for sins?

The truth is: Christ died as a **representative**.

The crucified Christ **represented** the whole human race.

The crucified Christ **represented** the destruction of sin.

Yahweh says he'll forgive sinners. In return, Yahweh wants humanity to understand he does not overlook or approve sin.

Christ was made sin - for us.
Christ was treated as a sinner - for us.
In effect, what was done to Christ was done to sin.

2 Cor 5:21 - God counted a man who committed no sin as sin for us.
God did it so we could become God's righteous ones through him.

1 Ptr 3:18 - Christ suffered one time for sinners, one righteous man for all the unrighteous, in order that he might bring us to God.

In Christ's time, punishment by crucifixion was awarded to those who were determined guilty of treason. In the body of Christ, sin (a traitor) was judged, sentenced, and executed.

Rom 8:3 - What the law could not do, God did, sending forth his only son in the likeness of sinful flesh to be a sacrifice for sin.
What God did was to condemn sin in the flesh of Christ.

Gal 4:4 - When the day came, God sent his son, made in a woman and put under the authority of law, to redeem others put under the authority of law so they might also be adopted as children.

Heb 2:9 - Jesus' nature was somewhat lower than an angel's nature.
Jesus' nature was lower so he could suffer death.
Just like Abraham's children partake in flesh and blood he, also, himself, equally took part in the same. **(14)**

17 - Wherefore, in all things it was good and proper that he be just like his brethren so he may be a caring and faithful high priest in areas that pertain to God, and so he might create reconciliation for the sins of the people. Being he has suffered and been tested himself, he is capable of easing the burden for others presently undergoing trials.

Christ gained by his own death.

Phil 2:8 - Christ was in all points like other men, but he humbled himself and continued to the death, even death on a cross. God has exalted him highly because of this and given him a name above all names.

Heb 2:10 - It suited his purpose, the one for whom all things exist, and the one by whom all things exist, when bringing many offspring to glory, to make their captain perfect through suffering.

5:8 - Though he was a son, he still had to learn obedience by the things he suffered.

9:12 - It was not through the blood of a goat or a calf, but it was by his own blood he entered the holy place once, thereby obtaining redemption for all ages.

13:20 - I pray the God of peace, who brought our Lord Jesus back from the dead through the blood of an age-long covenant, will make you whole and full of all good works so you can do his will.

Jesus possessed the very nature which originally sinned. He had the same nature as Adam and Eve, but Jesus didn't eat off his tree. If he'd appropriated God's power to himself, for his own cause, to fulfill his own desires, he'd still have been similar to an angel on Earth, until he died, of course. When this happened, Yahweh would be wrong to raise him, being Jesus would deserve no more than any other reprobate. If God raised a son who was unrighteous, God would be as hypocritical as humans, but he isn't hypocritical and he doesn't lie. If Jesus had failed, that Jesus, the Jesus from Nazareth, all it would possibly mean is that Jesus wasn't the Jesus the prophets were talking about.

The God of the Bible is the quintessence of moral distinction, and his name, what is done in his name, plus the moral attributes of his name, all carry the same weight. Names pertaining to the God of the Bible reveal God's moral attributes. These moral attributes are shown in hopes they penetrate thick human skulls, allowing the owners of the brains in those skulls to comprehend that God is merciful and concerned. But an human must approach this God in a way that defers to his righteousness.

Yahweh will do nothing at odds with ethical principles.

Yahweh places obedience to his righteous laws above all else.

Obey Yahweh's laws, things go well for you.

Break Yahweh's laws, here comes the judge.

By means of Christ's obedience, Yahweh can bestow mercy on sinners without compromising his righteousness or position. Hence, Yahweh may declare obedience to his plan as the single condition needed to receive a shot of mercy. Yahweh's son had to be raised in concert with principles corresponding to rightness. Christ didn't sin, even though he possessed a nature ever-tending toward sin. Therefore, it wasn't possible for God to remain righteous if Jesus stayed in the grave.

Peter and Paul both agree below.

Acts 2:24 - God raised Jesus and released him from the pains of death. God did it because it was not possible that Jesus be held by death.

Rom 4:24 - Righteousness resulting from faith will also be imputed to us if we believe into the one who raised our Lord Jesus from the dead. He was delivered for our offenses and raised again for our justification.

5:10 - If we received acceptance from God by means of the death of his son, how much more in that we are now reconciled will we be saved by his life? And not only that, we have joy in God, also, through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now been given atonement.

6:9 - Because Christ has already been raised from the dead once, he can never die again, for death no longer has dominion over him.

Jesus told his followers he'd be raised from the dead.

Jesus said they could also be raised because of him.

Faith, the kind that is true, comes into play here.

Faith is seen in the Christ, who trusted he'd be raised if he remained true to his Father's will to the end.

Faith is seen in true disciples of Christ, also, but only in the ones who believe they'll be raised because of Christ.

Abraham had hope that defied hope.

Abraham believed God could and would do what he promised.

Abraham believed God and his belief (faith) was considered the same as righteousness to him.

"To us, also," Paul wrote in a letter to the **Romans**, ". . . if we believe".

Jn 14:26 - It is an helper (a parakletos, one called to the side).

It is the holy spirit (hagios pneuma) the Father will send in my name.

It will familiarize you with all things.

It will help you remember everything I told you.

Lk 24:44 - When I was still with you, one of the things I said to you was that everything written about me in the law of Moses, the prophets, and the psalms must be fulfilled.

And he opened their minds so they understood scriptures.

He told them, That is the way it was written.

Because of this, it is proper for Christ to endure suffering, then rise up from the dead on the third day.

Because of this, repentance and forgiveness of sins can now be preached in his name throughout all nations starting at Jerusalem.

Because you witnessed it all, I will send everything the Father has sworn to send you, but you must wait here in Jerusalem until you are filled with power from heaven.

Your Bible identifies beings other than Christ as children of God.

You can learn all about them in **Book 2**.

The Bible For Dummies

A Final Testament

BOOK 2

Children Of God

*Chosen ones, Abraham's faithful seed, are called children of God.
Chosen ones will gain an inheritance through God's covenant.*

Rom 8:14 - If you follow the flesh (live according to the thinking natural to humanity) you will die; but if, through the spirit, you starve the works of the flesh, you will obtain life.

Whoever follows God's spirit is God's child.

We did not receive a spirit of bondage to make us fear again.

We received a spirit of adoption, by which we call out, Abba, Father!

Witnessing with our spirit, God's spirit says we are children of God.

We are heirs because we are God's children.

We are also joint-heirs with Christ because we are God's children.

2 Cor 6:18 - You are the temple of the living God.

You are the temple about which Yahweh says, I will dwell in them.

You are the temple about which Yahweh says, I will walk with them.

Yahweh also says, I will be their God and they will be my people.

You must come out of the world, therefore, and live your life apart.

I will accept you if you do not fraternize with corrupt ones.
I will be a Father to you.
I will adopt you as my sons and daughters, says Yahweh, the Almighty.

Gal 4:1 - I will say this: the heir, during childhood, does not differ in any meaningful way from a servant. Even though he will be Lord of all, he has to stay under tutors and governors until a time chosen by his father. It is that same way with us: as long as we were children, we were subject to circumstances of this world. But after the fullness of time came, God sent forth his son, made of a woman and subject to regulation by the law, in order that we may receive the adoption of children. And being you are God's children, God has sent forth the spirit of his child into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father!

Because he did it, you are no longer slaves.
Because he did it, you are children.
Because he did it, you will receive inheritance from God through Christ.

Heb 12:6 - You have forgotten the words which speak to you as children: My child, do not despise correction from the Lord, and do not grow tired of the Lord's rebuke, for the Lord chastens the children he loves, and he disciplines the children he plans to accept. (**Job 5:17?**)

If you endure the Lord's chastening, he will deal with you as children.
Is there a child that has not been corrected by its father?
If you lack the correction all receive, you are bastards, not children.

Jn 1:11 - He came to his own, yet his own would not accept him, however to people who did accept him, he gave the right to be God's children. He gave that privilege to people who believed into his name, to the ones who were not conceived by blood, fleshly desire, or human will, but by God.

Phil 2:14 - Do everything without complaining or arguments so you will be innocent and harmless, sincere children of God, beyond accusation among a slick and corrupt people against whom you shine as lights in the world.

1 Jn 3:1 - Think how much love our Father must have for us, that we are called to be children of God.
Because the world does not know us, the world does not know God.
Beloved, we are presently children of God. And, even if it is not clear at this time what we will be, we are convinced after Christ returns again we will be like him because we will see him as he truly is.

The following verse is from the old testament.
The verse calls the people of Israel God's children.

Dt 14:1 - You are children of Yahweh, your God.
You are a people holy to Yahweh, your God.
Yahweh has selected you to be a people of his own.
Yahweh has set you far above every other nation on Earth.

Angels

Job 38:1 - Yahweh replied to Job out of the whirlwind, saying, So where were you the day I laid the foundation of Earth, when the morning stars sang together and the sons of Elohim (God) shouted for joy?

The verse above does not say the "sons of Elohim" are angels.
The verses below do not say angels are children of God.
They say angels speak for God and often claim to be God.

Gen 22:11 - Yahweh's angel called to him out of heaven.
Yahweh's angel said, Abraham, Abraham, now I know you revere God (the Elohim) since you did not withhold your only son from me.

31:11 - God's angel spoke to me in a dream, saying, I am the El of Bethel. I am the El (God) of the place where you swore your vow to me. Wake up now and leave this land. Go back to the land of your ancestors.

32:1 - Jacob went his way, and the angels of El (God) met him.
Jacob saw them, and he said, It is God's host.
On account of this, Jacob called the place Mahanaim.

48:15 - Jacob blessed Joseph, saying, Let God bless the lad, the God my fathers, Abraham and Isaac, served, the same God who has sustained me all my life to this day . . . the angel who saved me from all evil.

Ex 3:2 - Yahweh's angel was manifested to Moses in the midst of a bush which appeared to be burning, but was not consumed.
When Yahweh saw that Moses had turned aside to see, God (the Elohim) spoke to him, saying, Moses, Moses.
Moses answered, Here I am.
Yahweh said, I am your fathers' God (Elohim). I am Abraham's God.
Moses hid his face because he was afraid to look at God.
And Yahweh (the Lord) said . . .

Jdgs 6:1 - The children of Israel did evil in Yahweh's sight.
Yahweh sold them to the Midianites for seven years because of it.

7 - Israel's children cried out to Yahweh about the Midianites so he sent them a prophet, and that prophet told them, Yahweh Elohim says, It was

I who brought you out of Egypt. I was the one who freed you from lives of slavery. I was the one who took you out of the hand of the Egyptians. I took you out of the hands of all those who abused you. And too, it was I who caused them to flee from you so I could give you their land. With a God like me, Yahweh, why would you fear the gods of the Amorites?

11 - Yahweh's angel came to Gideon while he was harvesting some wheat he had grown by the winery, hoping to hide it from the Midianites. Oh mighty man of valor, Yahweh is with you, said the angel. Gideon said, My lord, if Yahweh is with us, why did all this come on us? Yahweh said, I will be with you and you will smite the Midianites. **(16)**

22 - When Gideon realized he was Yahweh's angel, he cried out, Alas, oh Yahweh! I will die, for I have seen Yahweh's angel face to face. Yahweh said, Take it easy. Why be afraid? You are not going to die. So Gideon set up an altar there and dedicated it to Yahweh. He named the altar Yahweh-shalom (May Yahweh send peace).

13:1 - Once again, the children of Israel did evil in Yahweh's eyes so he delivered them into the hands of the Philistines for forty years.

A certain man from Zorah, one who belonged to a family of Danites, one who was called by the name Manoah, had a wife that was barren and not able to have a child.

Yahweh's angel came to the woman, and said, Hear me, then accept what I tell you. I know you are presently barren, and you presume you cannot have a child, but I also know you will soon conceive and bear a son. I am asking that you not drink wine or any other strong drink for this reason, and I am also asking you not to consume anything that is unclean.

6 - The woman ran to tell her husband, saying, A man of God came to me today. His appearance was as one of God's angels, so awesome I was not able to ask him where he came from and he was not willing to tell me his name. What he said was, Believe me, you will conceive and deliver a son.

8 - Manoah called to Yahweh, and said, Oh my Lord, may the man of God you sent return to tell us what to do with the child who will be born. God (the Elohim) accepted Manoah's request, and the angel of God came back to the woman.

She quickly ran to tell her husband.

Manoah asked the angel, Was it you who first spoke to the woman?

I spoke to her, said the angel.

Manoah said, I pray your words come to pass, but are you able to tell us what kind of child he will be and what he will accomplish?

Yahweh's angel said, You must do as I told the woman.

17 - Manoah asked Yahweh's angel, What is your name? The only reason I ask is so after your words are fulfilled we can give you credit.

The angel of Yahweh said, Because you asked about my name, I will show you it is full of wonder.

Manoah took a young goat for a meat offering, then offered it on a rock to Yahweh. As he did, the angel executed an amazing act. With Manoah and his wife watching the fire from the altar ascend up into heaven, the angel of Yahweh also rose in the flames. When Manoah and his wife saw this, they fell with their faces on the ground. It was not until the angel of Yahweh vanished from sight that Manoah and his wife finally knew he was Yahweh's angel.

Manoah told his wife, We are going to die, for we have seen God.

His wife said, Yahweh would not have accepted a burnt offering or meat offering from our hands if he wanted to kill us, and he would never have revealed what he told us today, either. Really, he would never have said a thing to us in the first place.

Later, the woman gave birth to a son and named him Samson.

Yahweh blessed the boy as he grew; and after, Yahweh's spirit began to move him from time to time in the camp of Dan.

Ps 34:7 - Yahweh's angels encircle those who respect Yahweh.

Yahweh's angels save those who hold Yahweh in awe.

Yahweh has prepared his throne in the heavens.

Yahweh's kingdom rules over all.

Praise Yahweh, all you angels, you who excel in strength.

Praise Yahweh, you who execute his will and obey the sound of his voice.

Praise Yahweh, all his host, you his ministers who do his will. **(103:19)**

Occasionally, angels doing Yahweh's will bring great discomfort upon humans standing in the way. Two reports of angels who were downright hostile to certain non-Hebrew children of Adam follow.

Ex 33:2 - I will send my angel to guide you and drive out the Canaanites.

I will not go up with you, for I fear I might consume you in the way.

My presence will go with you. **(14)**

2 Kng 19:33 - Pertaining to Assyria's king, Yahweh declares he will never see a way into this city, he will shoot no arrows into this city, he will not stand before this city with shields, and he will build no ramparts against it, either; rather, the king of Assyria will leave the way he came.

Yahweh says, The Assyrians will never move against this city, since I am willing to defend it. I am going to save this city for my own sake. And I am also going to save it for David's sake.

An angel of Yahweh sallied forth that very night, killing one hundred and eighty five thousand in the Assyrian's camp. When the rest awoke early the next morning, all they could see were dead bodies.

The Bible affirms Yahweh's **Elohim** are beings who manifest (embody) Yahweh. The primary meaning of **elohim** is: "a being who manifests God". This is true whether **elohim** signifies an angel, the obvious manifestation of God; or Jesus, who became the complete manifestation of God by way of his glorification; or the elect, who will manifest God in the future.

Jesus was the first being from Adam's race to be awarded the state of immortality, the first one to be born from the dead.

What Jesus went through to get there is found in the Bible.

What the fortunate few who are chosen when Jesus takes over must go through can also be found.

What will not be found is a statement saying that angels once lived in the same miserable mortal state in which humans now live and they were the ones saved from their age.

It sure is possible, though, isn't it?

Lk 20:34 - Jesus said, People in this age marry and are given in marriage, but people judged worthy to receive places in the future age by way of a resurrection from the dead will not marry or be given away in marriage. These people will die no more, for they will be equal to angels. These people will be God's children, for they were born by resurrection.

Rev 1:1 - This is the revelation given to Jesus Christ by God. It is to show his servants things that will surely come to pass. It was given in symbols by Jesus' angel (angelos, messenger). It was given to his servant, John.

22:8 - I, John, saw these things and heard them. When I heard and saw, I dropped down and began to grovel at the feet of the angel who showed me the vision, but he said, Stop! Get up! I am only a fellow-servant with you and your brothers, the prophets, and with anyone else who keeps the words of this book. Bow to God if you want to bow to someone. **(19:10)**

Angels don't have total knowledge of God's plan.

Mk 13:32 - No one knows the exact day or hour; not the angels in heaven and not the son, but the Father only.

When Christ takes his kingdom, angels will be part of the action.

Mt 13:40 - As tares (weeds) are gathered up and burned in a fire, it will be at the end of this age, also. The son of man will send forth his angels

and they will pluck anything offensive, including all those who do evil, out of his kingdom and chunk it all into a furnace of fire, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

16:27 - The son of man will appear in his Father's glory, along with all his holy angels, and then he will reward his chosen according to their works.

24:31 - The son of man will send out his angels with the sound of a great trumpet and they will bring back his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

25:31 - When the Son of man appears in glory with his holy angels, he is going to sit on the throne of his glory, then all (responsible) people from every nation will be assembled before him. He will divide them one from another like a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats. He will set the sheep on his right hand and the goats on his left. He will say to the ones on his right, Come, you who have been blessed by the Father, it is time to inherit the kingdom God prepared for you since the foundation of this world (kosmos, arrangement of things).

Then Jesus and those he elects will be the new Elohim of Earth.
They'll be the God who has become, the new Yahweh.
They'll always be one in nature, purpose, and endeavor.
They'll be Earth's angels.
They've been promised that by the Bible.

Anti-christianity's angels come from another source altogether. The Bible doesn't affirm angels have wings, but anti-christianity's angels flit around like foo-fighters, varying in size from tree-top tall titans, having wings the size of those on jumbo jets, to the rosy-cheeked, chub-armed little cherubs seen in the paintings of pagans of yore.

Delusions of that kind originate in the addled minds of people lacking knowledge of the scrolls. Anti-christians think there are angelic rebels, as if something like rebel angels can really be. Nowhere in the Bible is it said God's literal angels ever rebelled and were booted out of the divine presence. For humans to be equal to angels, but still possess in them an ability to rise up against God, isn't much of a triumph over their current evil nature, is it? How can anybody who hopes to be one with Christ and the angels miss this point?

Lucifer, an invented instigator of false-christianity's invented war in its invented heaven, only appears once in the Bible.

Lucifer can be found in the fourteenth chapter of **Isaiah**.

Is 14:12 - You have fallen from heaven, oh Lucifer, son of the morning!
You have been thrown to the ground, you destroyer of nations!

You said in your heart, I will rise up into heaven and exalt my throne far above the stars of God, far above the tops of the clouds.
You said, I will be like the Most High.

If this verse appears to support the fantasy of a rebel angel ("Satan, the Devil", to be precise) it's because just this verse was examined.
Why not look at other verses in the chapter?

Is 14:15 - You will be dashed down to the sides of the pit. All those who see you will peer at you closely and contemplate you, saying, Can it be the man who made Earth tremble, the man who rocked kingdoms?

18 - Kings of all nations rest in their glory, each in his own tomb, but you have been ejected from your grave like some abominable lump.

It's hard to believe an angel of God is featured here.
If not one of God's angels, who?
Is there any reason not to look at the fourth verse and see?

Is 14:4 - Take up this parable against the king of Babylon.

10 - They will speak to you, asking, Have you become frail like us?
They will say, Look, you are now as feeble as us.
They will say, Your pomp has gone down to the grave.
They will say, Maggots and worms crawl all around you.

Another anti-christian lie bites the dust.
"Are there any verses in the Bible that literally say Babylonian kings got in trouble with God because of pride and haughty behavior?"
The answer: how about the verses below?

Dan 4:28 - All that follows came upon the king of Babylon . . .
And the king spoke, saying, Is this not great Babylon, which I built to be a palace for my kingdom? Did I not build it with my own vigor and power for my own honor and majesty?

Before the words were out of the king's mouth a voice from heaven said, Oh King Nebuchadnezzar, this word is to you: The dominion will be taken from you. You will be turned away from humanity to live with the beasts of the field until you realize the Most High rules in the kingdoms of men and gives them to whomsoever suits him.

34 - When my punishment was over, and when I, Nebuchadnezzar, lifted my eyes up to heaven, my understanding was returned to me. And it was then that I thanked the Most High.

36 - When my sanity returned to me, my kingdom was also returned, and even more majesty was given unto me. Because of this, I now praise and worship the Ruler of Heaven, whose every way is true and just. Because of this, I worship the one who destroys people that walk in pride.

Like grandfather, like father, like son . . .

Dan 5:1 - King Belshazzar had a great feast for more than one thousand of his lords, and he drank wine before the party-goers. When he tasted the wine, he commanded the gold and silver vessels Nebuchadnezzar, his father, had looted from Jerusalem's temple be brought to him.

3 - The king, his princes, his wives and his concubines all drank from the cups. They drank wine and glorified the images of gold and silver, brass, iron, wood, and stone. But at that same hour, the finger of a man's hand was seen writing on the stucco of the wall of the king's mansion, and the king's attitude was suddenly changed, with the joints of his loins getting all loose and his knees each banging against the other.

13 - Daniel was brought in before the king.

Daniel said, Hear me, oh king. Your father, Nebuchadnezzar, gained his kingdom, majesty, glory and honor from the Most High God. Because of his position, all people, nations and languages trembled. **(17)**

His mind grew stiff with pride when he raised up his heart, then he was deposed from the royal throne. Now you, Belshazzar, his son, refuse to humble your heart, also. Though you know all this, you still go on raising yourself up against the Lord of heaven. **(20)**

25 - This is what was written: Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin.

Here is what it means . . .

Mene: God has numbered the days of your kingdom.

Tekel: You have been weighed in the balance and found wanting.

Peres: Your kingdom has been given to the Medes and Persians.

30 - That same night, Belshazzar, Chaldea's king, was assassinated.

At dawn, Darius, the Mede, was ruling the world.

The scrolls contain one verse having to do with a war in heaven.

This war ends with the losers being ejected.

The verse is in the twelfth chapter of the **Revelation**.

The **Revelation** contains a series of warnings presented in symbols.

The warnings were given to **John**, the apostle.

They were given by an angel.

Those who are wise go to the beginning of the scroll.

They know they must start there before drawing any conclusions.

Rev 1:9 - I, John, was taken (in spirit) to the day of the Lord.
I heard a loud voice behind me, a voice that sounded like a trumpet.
I heard the voice say, I am alpha and omega, the beginning and end.
I also heard the voice say, Write everything you see and hear in a scroll.
Include it all, then send it to the seven churches in Asia.
I turned to see who spoke and I saw seven golden candlesticks.

Does it seem like **John** is being asked to jot down literal events?
Doesn't it seem like **John** is seeing symbolic things, things which have
to be interpreted before their true meaning is known?

Rev 4:1 - When I looked, I saw an entrance opened into heaven.
I heard the voice again, the one that sounded like a trumpet.
It said, Come up here and let me show you what will happen in the future.
I was immediately in the spirit and I saw a throne set up in heaven.

Several chapters later, **John** is still seeing things the angel said were
going to happen after.
Is it likely these things happened before **John** saw them?
Is it likely **John** saw the visions before the world began?
If **John** saw the visions around **70 AD**, however, none of the things in
them could have happened before that, could they?

Rev 12:1 - A great wonder (a mega semeion, symbol of power) was visible
in the heavens: a woman, clothed in the sun, the moon beneath her feet.
She wore a crown with twelve stars on her head.
She was in labor and agony.
She cried to be delivered of her child.

Does anyone feel **John** was talking about a real woman?
Don't feel it, for **John** wasn't talking about real things at all.

Rev 12:3 - Another sign (symbol) appeared in heaven. It was a great red
dragon that had seven heads, ten horns, and seven crowns on its heads.
It cast a third of the stars in heaven to Earth with its tail. And it stood
before the woman preparing to give birth, wanting to devour the child as
soon as it was born. She gave birth to a manchild, one that would rule all
nations with a rod of iron, one on the same level as the Elohim.

7 - There was a war in heaven, whereupon Michael (one like God) with his
angels, battled the dragon. The dragon and his angels resisted, but they
lost and could no longer find themselves places in heaven.
And that great dragon was driven out, the old serpent, the diabolos (liar)
that satan (adversary) who was deceiving all the world. It was this satan
that was cast down to Earth, and his angels were cast down with him.

Still can't shake the feeling **John** means old What's-his-face?
Shame on you if you feel lonely.
Many people think there are boogeymen out there.
Many people create boogeymen outside themselves.
Most do it to direct attention away from their own ignorance and evil.

The beast **John** saw, with seven heads and ten horns, is like the beast **Daniel** saw. **Daniel's** beast has the exact same heads and horns. There's one very important difference, though: **Daniel's** beast is identified.

Dan 7:7 - I received visions during the night. In them, I saw the fourth beast, an awful and horrible beast, exceedingly strong. It was different from the beasts that came before it because it had ten horns.

15 - I felt pain all over my body.
I was bewildered by the visions in my head.
I leaned closer to one of the ones who stood beside me.
I asked him what it all meant.
The man replied, interpreting as he went.
The man said, The great beasts are four kings who will rise up on Earth.
The fourth beast is the fourth kingdom that will control Earth.
The ten horns of the kingdom are the ten kings who will run it. **(23)**

There are no boogeymen, just politics and politicians.
That's dreadful enough by itself.
There are no rebel angels.
There are no evil spirit beings opposing God's will.
These kinds of things are nothing but frightful fantasies.
They only find shelter in minds foolish enough to entertain them.

Mt 25:41 - He will say to the ones on his left hand, Depart from me, you who are accursed, into the fires of this age, the fires that were kindled for the diabolos (devil) and his angelos (messengers, servants).

Satan and Devil

It would've been better had "Satan" never appeared as a name at all. It wasn't used like that in the original scrolls. The word "**satan**" showed up all over the place, around thirty times in the old testament alone, but when **satan** was converted into English, it was seen in twenty-one verses where it was not translated. Even worse, its first letter got capitalized on the voyage over. Quick as could be, **satan**, an harmless little Hebrew word, was translated into the dread and dire "Satan, the Devil".

Which is too bad, since **satan** simply means . . .

"adversary" (7) "to be an adversary" (5)
"to withstand" (1) Num 22:32 "to resist" (1) Zech 3:1

And that's all **satan** means: an "adversary", "opponent", "enemy".

Satan is a person or thing trying to stop others from doing whatever they need or want to do. It's clearly seen below.

1 Sam 29:4 - The Philistinian princes were troubled by David's presence. Send this fellow back, they cried out. Do not let him go into battle with us, for he may become our adversary (satan) during the fight.

2 Sam 19:22 - David said, What did I do to you, oh sons of Zeruiah? What did I do that you would be adversaries (satans) to me this day?

1 Kng 5:4 - Yahweh, my Elohim, has granted me peace on every side. I have no adversaries (satans) or anything else that can cause me evil.

11:14 - Yahweh stirred up an adversary (satan) Hadad, the Edomite. Yahweh stirred up another adversary (satan) Rezon, Eliadah's son. (23) Rezon was an adversary (satan) to Israel for all Solomon's reign. (25)

Gen 27:41 - Esau could not tolerate (satam) Jacob because their father gave him the blessing, and he said in his heart, The time to weep for my father is almost over. When it has ended, I will kill my brother.

50:15 - Joseph will probably hate (satam) us.

Job 30:21 - You oppose (satam) yourself against me with a strong hand.

Ps 38:19 - My enemies are powerful.

People who hate me are wrongfully multiplied.

People who return evil for good are my adversaries (satans).

(71:13 / 109:4, 6, 20, 29)

Simple to see, easy to understand, and far too clear to try any tricks of translation . . . so **satan** appeared as it was supposed to.

It appeared as an adversary or opponent.

Another time, the word also resisted the tricksters.

Another time, one of Yahweh's angels was the **satan**.

Num 22:21 - Balaam woke up that morning, saddled his ass, and took off with the princes of Moab.

Yahweh's anger was kindled because he went.

Yahweh's angel stood in the way to be an adversary (satan) to Balaam.

32 - The angel of Yahweh asked, Why did you clout your ass these three times? Could you not see it was I who came out to withstand (be a satan to) you?

Again, it's easy to see the nature of the **satan** described above.

What isn't so clear is why translators let their infernal friend play a part in the following accounts of the same event.

1 Chr 21:1 - Satan stood up against Israel. He enticed David to number the people. David told Joab and the leaders of the nation, Go out there and count Israel from Beersheba to Dan, then give me the total.

Nothing wrong on the face of it, though it should be pointed out that the verse itself offers no clue to this adversary's identity so "he" might be any individual or thing.

2 Sam 24:1 - The wrath of Yahweh was again kindled against Israel, and he (Satan) set David against them, saying, Go number Israel.

Who's in charge here!?

Does this mean everywhere Yahweh is seen it could be Satan?

Does it mean everywhere Satan is seen it could be Yahweh?

No wonder the anti-christians are waffling. They suppose Satan was Yahweh's angel. They suppose Satan battled the "Heavenly Host". They suppose he lost, then got booted out of Paradise. And they also suppose Satan has no more to do now but seduce weak, dim-witted humans to sin.

What's wrong with the idea is there's no verse in the Bible asserting literal angels ever rejected God's supremacy.

What should be apparent to all is there's no evidence proving humans need any help opposing God's will, either.

Translators had to have consulted some other source than the Bible to deduce David's **satan** was their old friend, "Satan, the Devil".

Job 1:6 - There was a time when the sons of God met before Yahweh. A satan (adversary) also came along with them. Yahweh asked the satan, Where have you been? I have walked to and fro around this Earth, the satan said. I have also been up, down, and through it, he added.

1:8 - Yahweh asked the satan, Have you set your heart against Job, my servant? There is nobody like Job on Earth. Job is a good and perfect man, one who fears God and avoids evil. You think Job loves God, said the satan to Yahweh, but it does not mean a thing, for you have planted an hedge around him, and his house, and all

he controls, since you bless whatever he does and his substance has now multiplied in the land, but if you just reach out and touch all that he has, he will curse you to your face.

Yahweh told the satan, Okay, everything he has is in your hands.

Yahweh also said, Just do not lay a finger on Job himself.

So Job's satan left Yahweh's presence.

The tale goes on to say **Job** quickly lost everything he had: his herds, his flocks, and all his servants, sons, and daughters.

What did **Job** think was going on?

Job 1:20 - Job rose, shredded his clothing, shaved his head, and he fell on the ground, worshipping, and calling, I came out of my mother's womb in the buff and I will leave the same way.

Yahweh gave it and Yahweh took it back.

Yahweh's name is still blessed over all.

Job did not sin or foolishly accuse his God by saying any of this.

Not exactly what the adversary was thinking, but he wasn't a bit shy and he convinced Yahweh to crank the heat up on poor old **Job**.

Job 2:1 - There was another time God's sons came and presented themselves before Yahweh, and the satan presented himself, too.

3 - Yahweh asked the satan, Why are you still going at my servant, Job? Job is doggedly holding to his integrity, even though you have pitted me against him by asking me to destroy him without cause.

Reacting to Yahweh, the satan said, Hey, skin for skin, Yahweh. You are aware a man will exchange all he has to keep his life, but just reach your hand out now and touch his bone and his flesh and you will see him curse you to your face.

Yahweh told the satan, Okay, he is in your hand, but do not take his life.

And the satan departed Yahweh's presence, striking Job with sore boils from the soles of his feet to the crown of his head.

Picking up a shard of pottery, Job used it to scrape himself.

And after, he sat down in the ashes.

Now that is cranking up the heat!

Still, there's nothing in the text revealing the **satan's** identity.

A possible suspect is introduced in the next verse, though.

Job 2:9 - Job's wife asked him, Are you still holding to your integrity? She said, Get off it, Job . . . go curse God and die.

Apparently **Job's** home-life wasn't all that heavenly.

Job 2:10 - Job answered, You sound like all those other ignorant women. Do you imagine we should receive good from God's hand, but not evil? In all this, Job did not sin with his lips.

The scroll says **Job** wasn't wrong to blame Yahweh for the evils which came on him. Considering the **satan** in **Job** to be Satan, that rebel angel, is to tweak the text far out of shape. Not only does this force people to ignore other Bible scrolls, but it misrepresents words in **Job**.

"How does tweaking text misrepresent words in **Job**?"

The answer: like this . . .

Job 1:6 - The sons of God came to appear before Yahweh.

God's sons can be found among the children of Israel.

God's sons can be found among all who worship the true God.

Angels (the **Elohim**) are manifestations of God.

Angels are never out of God's presence.

Why would angels, who are always in Yahweh's presence, have need of a special day to appear before God?

Mt 18:10 - Take care you do not spurn any of these little ones, for I am telling you their angels in heaven always look upon the face of my Father who is also in heaven.

Jesus most likely knows what he's talking about, wouldn't you think? People who want to say he doesn't may go right ahead, just wait for the rest of us to move a couple miles up-range before you say it, okay?

The children of Israel could present themselves before Yahweh (the Lord God) and they didn't have to go to "Heaven" to do it.

Ex 16:9 - Moses told Aaron, Order the congregation to gather together here before Yahweh, for he has heard their complaining.

Dt 19:17 - The two men involved in the argument must stand before the Lord (Yahweh) which is to say before the priests and judges.

26:4 - A priest will receive the basket from your hand and set it before the altar of the Lord, your God.

You will speak then, confessing your sins before the Lord, your God.

2 Sam 6:14 - David danced before the Lord with all his might.

2 Kng 19:14 - Hezekiah got the letter from the messengers. He read it, then walked up to Yahweh's house.

Hezekiah rolled the scroll out before Yahweh.
He prayed before the Lord, saying, Oh Lord God of Israel . . .

Gen 4:16 - Cain went out from the Lord's presence.
Cain moved to the land of Nod, east of Eden.

Jonah 1:3 - Jonah attempted to evade Yahweh's presence by sailing off to Tarshish. He left for Joppa, found a ship, then paid the passage. He boarded, hoping to sail with them to Tarshish, far from the presence of Yahweh. And Yahweh sent out an horrible wind. A great storm covered all the sea, a storm so bad it was like the ship would be torn apart.

Ex 33:12 - Moses said to Yahweh, You asked me to free your people, but you have not told me who you will send with me. If, I pray, I have found favor in your eyes, please clarify your plan to me. I will comprehend you that way, and I will truly believe these are your people.
Yahweh said, My presence will go with you.
Moses said, If your presence does not accompany us, it would be better if we did not go at all.

Is 63:9 - Through all their suffering, God also suffered.
He suffered and the angel of his presence saved them.
He redeemed them because of his love and pity.
He lifted them up.
He sustained them throughout the old days, but they rebelled and they vexed his qodesh ruach (one set apart, the angel of his presence).

To accept that **Job's** adversary was "Satan, a rebel angel" one must also accept that "Satan" waltzed right back into the same heaven from which he was previously ousted for attempting to thwart God's plan.

One mustn't forget, though, this is one of anti-christendom's greatly favored illusions. To believe, good little anti-christians must admit that their "rebel angel" bamboozled Yahweh into slipping the shaft to one of his good guys, namely Job. They must agree Yahweh chuckled, and said, "Oh hot damn (no pun intended, Satan, old boy) let's give him hell!"

It isn't all that surprising, for many beliefs approved by worshippers of anti-christianity's anti-god are prejudiced against the true God.

It's clear the adversary appearing in **Job** isn't identified.
It could've been **Job's** wife.
It could've been the jealousy of one of **Job's** so-called buddies.
It could've been **Job** himself behind the figure of personification.
It could've been Yahweh, too.
It could've been Yahweh giving **Job** a chance to become stronger.

As always, translators decide to save the reader time and trouble by disclosing the identity of the **satan**.

As always, they insert something not seen in the Bible, something of no purpose in any logical plan, something that shows their anti-god is as stunned as his anti-worshippers.

The last old testament appearance of **satan** is next.

Zech 3:1 - The angel in the vision showed me Joshua, the high priest, in the presence of Yahweh's angel, and his **satan** (adversary) standing close to his right hand to resist (be a **satan** to) him (be an adversary). Yahweh told the **satan**, May the Lord reprimand you, oh adversary. Yahweh said, May the Lord who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you.

We find ourselves on familiar ground again, since after every place in the old testament where **satan** appears is examined, no proof supporting the existence of a "rebel angel and tempter of humans" can be seen.

Why is this, one wonders?

Why do so many billions of people believe the Bible proclaims certain things, yet the things they believe aren't even in the Bible?

If that kind of thinking is adopted, the Bible proves the existence of the Tooth Fairy.

"How?"

The answer: simple, the Tooth Fairy isn't in there, either.

Satan (the word) appears thirty seven times in the new testament.

Translators of King James' Bible surely enjoyed saving time for their old testament readers because they brought "Satan" straight into their new testament, which also saved tons of time for these readers.

Bringing a word into another language without translating it is known as transliteration. It's not abnormal and it's not a bad thing, either, just as long as readers know the terms are transliterated, and just as long as readers know the meanings of original words. **Satan**, though, wasn't just transliterated into Greek; rather, everywhere **satan** was used in the new testament the word was capitalized. A translator must cease to care on occasion what future readers believe after reading his translation.

"Why must he stop caring?"

The answer: he's too busy saving time to care.

Satan is not transliterated in the following verses.

1 Cor 5:1 - It is publicly stated fornication is rampant among you. It is said to be a type of fornication not even mentioned by the gentiles. It is a fornication in which a son has his father's wife.

3 - I have already come to a decision concerning the person who did this. In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, I charge you to turn all those who approve of this thing over to the adversary (the satan).

7:1 - Concerning one thing you asked me about: it is better for a man not to have touched a woman; nonetheless, to avoid fornication, a man should have only his own wife and a woman should have only her own husband. Do not deprive one another, except if it is for a time and it pleases both partners, then you may devote yourselves to fasting and prayers. After, you can come together once again to keep adversity (satan) from testing you because you abstained. **(5)**

2 Cor 12:7 - To keep me from being elevated above measure, I was given a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of adversity (an angel from satan) to buffet me. I cried to the Lord three times for this thing to go from me. My mercy should be enough for you, the Lord said to me, for infirmity is the only condition in which my strength can be perfected. Very gladly, therefore, I will much rather glory in my infirmities. I will glory as long as the power of Christ continues to rest upon me.

In these cases, **satan** was translated.

The adversaries in these verses aren't hard to identify.

They are (1) the outside world of unbelievers (2) sexual cravings, and (3) whatever physical problems Paul suffered.

There's nothing in any verse saying evil beings were involved.

A pair of early believers, Ananias and Sapphira, needed no more than their own greedy selves to think they could pull a fast one.

Acts 5:1 - Ananias, with his wife, Sapphira, sold some land he owned. Ananias kept back part of the profits, of which his wife was aware, too, and later, he brought in a certain amount, laying it at the apostles' feet. Peter said, Ananias, why did the adversary (satan) fill your heart? How could you lie to the holy spirit, and hold back part of the money you got for that land? When you owned it, was it not yours? And even after it was sold, was it still not yours? Why did you devise this in your heart?

Peter knew how harmful thinking could fill an human heart and drive a person almost crazy. **Peter** knew how humans could do all types of inappropriate things for what they felt were all the right reasons.

Mt 16:21 - After this, Jesus explained to his disciples that he would go to Jerusalem to suffer great humiliation from the elders, chief priests, and scribes. He also said he would be killed and come back to life again in three days.

Peter pulled him to the side and began opposing him.
Peter said, Have some pity on yourself, Lord. You must not do this!
Jesus turned, and told Peter, Get behind me, you adversary (satan).
Jesus also told him, You disgust me, Peter, because you do not value the things of God, just the things of man.

Poor **Peter**! All he wanted was to convince Jesus to take it easy with the stuff everyone could see was going to wind up with Jesus dead.

Trouble was, Jesus knew Yahweh wanted him to continue.

Trouble was, Jesus knew Yahweh would request even more extremist behavior in the future.

Like **Peter**, Jesus knew how adverse thinking could overwhelm human hearts because he had to deal with it after the spirit-power of God was thrust upon him and changed his life forever.

Mk 1:12 - The spirit (pneuma) soon drove him into the wilderness.
He passed forty days in the desert being tried by his adversary (satan).
Since he was surrounded by wild beasts, angels watched over him.

Jesus threw **satan** into the faces of Jewish religious leaders.

Mk 3:22 - Some scribes came down from Jerusalem. They had said this about Jesus: He has Beelzebub and casts out daimonion (devils) through the prince of daimonion (devils, demons).

Answering them in parables, Jesus wondered aloud, Why would an adversary cast himself out? A kingdom divided against itself cannot continue. An adversary that opposes himself and is divided will not be around very long. His end is near. **(26)**

Jesus likely knew who Beelzebub was: he must have stumbled across the name while reading the second book of the Hebrew kings.

2 Kng 1:2 - King Ahaziah was injured when he fell through the lattice in the upper chamber. Before he sent his messengers, he said to them, Go ask the god of Ekron, Beelzebub, if I will recover.

Yahweh's angel told Elijah, Arise now and intercept those messengers of Samaria's ruler, and ask, Is it because there is no God in Israel that you go to Beelzebub, Ekron's god (the Lord of the Flies)?

Jesus used the Hebrew word **satan** to illustrate the blindness of the people who believed his power came from the pagan deity, Beelzebub. A certain sign they were blind was they alleged Jesus was in the pocket of Beelzebub while healing people Beelzebub had supposedly afflicted.

How is Jesus at fault if ignorant people steal his parables to use as a foundation for their own fantasies?

He isn't . . . not then and not now.

Mk 4:13 - He asked them, Do you understand the parable? If you do not, how will you understand any of my parables? Its meaning is this: a sower spreads the word. That first seed, the one sown on the path, symbolizes people who hear, but after they have heard, the adversary (satan) comes in quickly and steals away the words sown in their hearts.

I have given you the meaning of the parable of the sower: as far as ones who hear about the kingdom, but do not comprehend, it is as if some evil thing came into them and took away the word planted in their hearts. A person like this is represented by seed on the path. (**Mt 13:18**)

Translators try to make it appear Jesus used the words "wicked one". What Jesus actually meant was: "Evil influences of the world rise up and neutralize the good influence of the word the person heard."

Lk 13:11 - A woman was laid down in front of them, one who had had the spirit of infirmity (a pneuma of asthenia, an illness, physical trouble) for more than eighteen years, a woman bent over, unable to raise herself up. Jesus saw her, and said, Woman, you will now be cured of your affliction (asthenia). As soon as Jesus laid his hands on her, she stood straight up and gave glory to God. This caused the leader of the temple to boil with fury, for he was upset that Jesus healed her on the sabbath.

15 - The Lord replied, You hypocrites! Each of you will release his ox or his ass out of the stall and take it to water on the sabbath. Why is this woman, a daughter of Abraham, one which is constrained by adversity (a satan) also not worthy to be freed from her misery on the sabbath? As soon as Jesus had finished speaking, his adversaries (anti-keimai, the people who opposed him) were ashamed.

Luke had nothing to say about evil spirits, only that Jesus delivered a woman from her enemy, a malady which had plagued her over many years, an adversary keeping her from doing what she wanted and needed to do.

Only translators say her adversary was "Satan, the Devil".

New testament writers personified adversaries because they wished to flesh-out the kind of thinking that destroys people. They didn't do it because they thought the adversaries were real living beings.

Acts 18:5 - Paul was pressed in the spirit, and he witnessed to the Jews that Jesus was the Messiah, but after they began to oppose themselves (when they grew anti-keimai) and blasphemed, he said, Your blood is now on your own heads. I am free of it, for I am going to the gentiles.

Gal 5:16 - Walk in the spirit (pneuma) and you will not want to fulfill the desires of flesh. Fleshly desires oppose spiritual desires and desires of the spirit oppose desires of the flesh. These are contrary (anti-keimai) entirely opposed to each other so you can seldom do the things you wish, but you are not bound by the law if you are led by the spirit.

1 Tim 1:9 - Laws were not made for a righteous man (the man who tries to live morally). Laws were created for unruly and noncompliant sinners, with everything else contrary (anti-keimai) to sound doctrine. Laws are for those such as Hymeneus and Alexander, that pair I gave to the adversary (satan) so they might learn not to blaspheme. (20)

5:11 - When the younger widows grow weary with life in Christ, they will marry, become lazy, and go from house to house. Not only will they grow inert, they will turn into gossips and busybodies, too, gabbing about what they ought not. It is my wish, therefore, that younger women marry and raise children, guiding their households and giving no opportunity for the anti-keimai (those who oppose us) to speak of us in the disrespectful way they do of the ones who already left to serve the adversary (satan).

Jewish religious leaders were the greatest adversaries (**satans**) that true believers faced. The Pharisees and Scribes were their **satans**, and Romans and other infidels only fought the truth when it starting dipping into their wallets. Before this, these "strange beliefs" were considered to be the latest batch of looniness from the Hebrews. Pagans and Jews often joined just to see what made the loonies so loony.

Paul said the Jewish high priest and his henchmen were **satans**.

1 Cor 11:3 - I fear lest in any way like the serpent beguiled Eve with its subtlety, your minds might also be poisoned from the simplicity in Christ. If anybody comes teaching a Jesus not already taught you, or if you give ear to a doctrine you have not yet accepted, or a gospel you have not yet believed, I suppose I can see how those teachers might impress you, but I do not consider myself in any way behind the best of them.

13 - They are false apostles and liars, changing themselves into apostles of Christ. This is no reason to marvel, for their leading adversary (chief satan) has also transformed himself into an angel of light. Therefore, is it odd if his servants act like ministers of righteousness, too?

Are they Hebrews? So am I.

Are they Israelites? So am I.

Are they seed of Abraham? So am I.

Are they ministers of Christ? So am I.

Am I beginning to sound like a fool? (22)

In his letter to the Thessalonian believers, Paul applied **satan** to the Jewish officials, identifying them as adversaries.

1 Ths 2:13 - When you received God's word from us, you did not receive it as words of men, but as it truly is, the word of God. You, my brethren, became followers of Christ Jesus, along with all God's churches in Judea. You suffered at the hands of your own countrymen, too, because you had to endure the same things believers in Judea endured by the hand of the Jews that killed the Lord Jesus, along with their own prophets, the same ones that now persecute us. They do not please God, and they go against humanity, too, because they ordered us not to speak to the gentiles. So even though I, Paul, would have come to you once or twice myself, our adversary (satan) impeded us. **(18)**

In a different letter to Thessalonica, Paul applies **satan** to the pagan power prophesied by **Daniel**, the one that would rise and persecute Jews and true believers alike, the one that would have spiritual authority over all Earth until it was destroyed at Christ's return.

2 Thes 2:7 - The mystery of iniquity (that lawless one) the one the Lord will consume in the brightness of his appearance (parousia, presence) . . . the one whose arrival (parousia, presence) is the outcome of an inworking of our adversary (satan) with all power, signs, and lying wonders. **(9)** Because of it, God will send them strong delusion (a fierce wanting inside themselves to receive false teachings) so they will accept the lies and so the Lord can damn them for not believing the truth. **(11)**

The other places **satan** is found in the new testament are: **Lk 10:18** / **22:3** / **Jn 13:27** / **Act 26:18** / **Rom 16:20** / **2 Cor 2:11** / **Rev 2:9**, along with **Rev 2:13, 24** / **3:9** / **12:9** / **20:2, 7**.

Look them up and study them.

Don't be influenced by capitalization and transliteration.

Read "adversary", "enemy" or "that which opposes" rather than **satan**.

Do it, for this is what **satan** meant to God's people.

Would a word's meaning change because ignorant and ungodly gentiles substituted a name for their favorite fantasy in place of the word's true implication? It did this time. And the significance of other Hebrew and Greek words changed, too, when gentiles rendered them with "devil" and "demon". Proof that it really happened appears below.

The Devil

Webster defines the English word "devil" as a spirit of evil; the ruler of Hell; Satan; a wicked person.

The English word "devil" isn't in the old testament as a singular at all, but it does show up in the plural as "devils". In four places, "devils" was used to replace two different Hebrew words: **shed** and **sair**.

Sair was born into the same clan as Pan, the cute little flute-tooting deus the pagans portrayed as half-goat and half-man. **Sair** is seen over fifty times in the old testament, where it was translated "goat" or "kid" in more than forty places, but four times it was treated differently.

Lev 17:1 - Yahweh said to Moses, I have instituted it so Israel's people may sacrifice to me instead of offering in the open fields. I did this so they will no longer offer sacrifices to their **sair** (devils) to the ones after which they have gone whoring. (7)

2 Chr 11:14 - The Levites moved from the suburbs and they left behind all that they had in the kingdom of Israel to go to Judah and Jerusalem. Jeroboam and his sons had discharged them so they were no longer able to fulfill their duties as Yahweh's priests. Jeroboam himself ordained priests for all the high places to service the **sair** (devils) and golden calves he had set up. Because of it, out of every tribe of Israel, people who had dedicated their hearts to follow Yahweh, Israel's God, traveled to Jerusalem with the Levites. Once they arrived, they all offered sacrifices to Yahweh, the God of their fathers.

Is 13:19 - Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the glow of Chaldea's renown, will be overturned like Sodom and Gomorrah, and it will not be inhabited again. Wild beasts from the desert will live there, and Babylon's houses will be full of doleful creatures. Owls will dwell there, with **sair** (satyrs, wild goats) cavorting among them. Feral creatures from the islands will wail in their forlorn homes and jackals (dragons) will screech from their pleasure palaces. Her time draws close, and after it has come, her days will not be prolonged.

34:14 - Wild beasts of the desert will gather with wild beasts from the isles. **Sair** (satyrs) will cry out to their mates. And screech owls (night monsters) will also live there.

It's easy to see the identities of the **sair** above.
It's clear they are idols and wild animals.
It's apparent nothing else is meant.

Shed was another Hebrew word translated by "devils". Do you recall that it was the root-word from which **shaddai** comes? It's of very little surprise to learn that a word chosen by Bible writers to represent their God is also used by translators to signify their friend, "Satan".

Dt 32:17 - Israel turned its back on the God that made it.
Israel took for granted the rock of its salvation.
Israel made God jealous by following alien gods.
Israel brought about the rage of God by abominations, sacrificing to the devils (shed) not its own God, offering sacrifices to gods (elohim) unseen in the past, new and modern gods the fathers never feared.

Ps 106:34 - They refused to destroy the pagans Yahweh had commanded them to wipe out, but they mingled with the heathen and they carried on in the pagan way, bowing to heathen idols that became snares to them.
They offered up both sons and daughters to shed (devils).
They spilled the innocent blood of their children.
They offered up their young to the idols of Canaan.

The verses where **shed** can be found in the old testament (all two of them) report nothing more sinister than pagan idols. They don't say the first thing about evil spirit beings lurking behind the scenes.

"Satan" the "rebel angel" is a nightmare.

"Satan" is a lie that only lives in ignorant minds.

"Satan" is nothing but a stick-man.

"Satan" is a fantasy figure, a fable, a flop.

One important thing to remember is this: "Satan", anti-christianity's evil god, is not to be seen in the old testament, not even in places where the actual English word "devils" was used.

As a result, what should any who want to obey the truth think of the gods loved by people in the world?

Ps 96:2 - Sing to Yahweh and glorify his name.
Declare his salvation day to day.
Declare his glory among the heathen.
Declare his wonders among all people.
Yahweh is great.
Yahweh should be greatly praised.
Yahweh should be honored above every god (elohim) for gods (elohim) of the nations are nothing but idols.

1 Cor 8:4 - As far as eating what is offered in sacrifice to idols, we see an idol is nothing, not actually. We know there is only one God. Granted, there are things believed to be gods, whether they dwell in heaven or on Earth. There are many gods and many lords. To us, though, there is but one God, the Father (source) from which all things come.

Like in the old testament, where the English word "devil" was used to represent two different Hebrew words, so is it in the new testament, in which the English word "devil" stands for two different Greek words.

One of these words is **diabolos**.

Lk 16:1 - There was a certain rich man who employed a manager who was diabolomai (accused) of wasting the rich man's money.

Jn 6:66 - From that day on, many of Jesus' disciples turned back and did not follow him any longer. He asked the twelve, Will you be leaving, also? Simon Peter said, Lord, to whom would we go? You have the word of age-lasting life and we believe you.

We are totally convinced you are the Christ, they said.

We are totally convinced you are the son of the living God.

Did I not pick you twelve, Jesus asked them, yet one of you is a diabolos (devil, false accuser, betrayer)?

Naturally, Jesus was talking about Judas Iscariot, for it was Judas, one of the twelve, who would betray him.

2 Tim 2:24 - The Lord's servant must not argue; rather, he must be kind to all, willing and able to teach, patiently and calmly instructing the ones who oppose themselves, hoping God will grant them repentance by means of a knowledge of the truth so they can free themselves from the snare of the diabolos (devil, sin) which takes them whenever it wants.

3:1 - You were told the final times will be full of danger and that people will be concerned for themselves only, and they will be envious, boasters, presumptuous, trucebreakers, and diabolos (false accusers, liars).

Titus 2:3 - You must keep saying things in line with sound doctrine.

Older men should be sober, serious, and self-restrained.

Older women should act in a proper and holy way.

Older women should not be diabolos (false accusers).

Older women should not drink too much wine, either.

Diabolos is a combination word, formed out of **dia**, which is rendered "through", and **ballo**, which means "to thrust" or "strike".

Mk 10:24 - It would be easier for a camel to go through (dia) the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom from heaven.

Col 2:8 - Do not be spoiled through (dia) philosophy or some other futile lie, the result of the traditions of men (the thinking presently in control of the world) none of which is according to Christ.

Mt 21:12 - Jesus stormed into the temple of God and cast out (ekballo) the buyers and sellers that traded there, up-ending the tables of money changers and the booths of those who sold doves.

Lk 13:28 - You Jews will weep and gnash your teeth as you see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and all the prophets of God enter the Kingdom of God, but you yourselves thrust out (ekballo).

Add **dia** and **ballo** together and you get . . .
A betrayer and traitor.
A person who'll ram it right through you every time.
A liar, a used-to-be, a gone-bye best good friend.
And yet, **diabolos** was translated by these English words . . .

"devil" (35) "false accusers" (2) "slanderers" (1)

1 Tim 3:1 - If a man desires the office of bishop (episkopos, overseer, a supervisor) he desires a good thing, but the bishop must be blameless, an husband to only one wife. He must be a man who knows how to govern his own home, a man whose children obey him. If a man is not able to run his own house, how is he going to run the house (church) of God?
In addition, he should not be a novice (one newly come to the faith) so he does not become puffed up in pride and fall into the condemnation of the diabolos (devil).
A bishop must maintain a good reputation with those on the outside so he does not fall into reproach and the snare of the diabolos (devil).
In the exact same fashion, wives of bishops should be grave (deferential, humble) not diabolos (slanderers) but sober and faithful in all. (11)

It isn't possible the **diabolos** in the above places can be the imaginary specter dreamed up by anti-christianity, the rebel angel who ranges over the whole Earth tempting poor, innocent humans to sin.

"Why isn't it possible?"

The answer: a bishop that fell into a snare laid by the **diabolos** of the pagans, a bishop puffed up with pride, would be applauded by the pagan's "Devil", not condemned.

The **diabolos** above is the outside world of unbelievers.

The **diabolos** above is whatever would permit a bishop's wife to waste her time flapping her jaws about people she says she can't stand.

Examples follow . . .

Acts 10:38 - God anointed (christ-ened) Jesus, from Nazareth, with his holy spirit and power, and after he did, Jesus went forth doing good and healing those who suffered from the diabolos.

13:8 - Elymas, the sorcerer, was an adversary who only wanted to divert the deputy from learning the faith.

Saul, also known as Paul, was filled with holy spirit and he fixed his sight upon Elymas, saying, You who are full of all craftiness and evil, you spoor of the diabolos, you opponent of everything worthy, will you never cease trying to impede the Lord's faithful way?

Saul also said, Beware, for the hand of the Lord will now cover you.

Instantly, a mist and darkness came over Elymas, and he thrashed about. In a panic, he cried out for someone to lead him by his hand.

Eph 4:25 - Therefore, stop lying.

Let everyone speak truth to his neighbor.

Leave no opening for the diabolos.

Let those who were thieves steal no more.

Let them work instead, using their hands for some good thing.

6:10 - In closing, oh brothers, be strong in the Lord, and in the strength of his dominion, putting on all the armor of God so you may stand against the intentions of the diabolos. Our fight is not with flesh and blood. It is against principalities and powers (arche and exousia, the commands of persons in charge) the regents (kosmokrators, the ones who manage this world's darkness) those who do spiritual wickedness in high places.

Jms 4:1 - What causes all the friction and fighting that appears in your midst? Are your desires not causing it? Are your very own cravings not responsible for all the conflict among your members?

Oh you adulterers and adulteresses, do you not see that friendship with the world is hated by God? Therefore, all who are friends of the people in this world are God's enemies. God is against haughty ones, but he aids all who submit. Accordingly, submit yourselves to God.

Resist the diabolos and it will flee from you.

Draw near to God so God can draw near to you. (4)

1 Ptr 5:8 - Be wary and watchful because our adversary (antidikos, your opponents at law) your enemies (diabolos) prowl around like roaring lions searching for any they may devour.

Bear up to them, being established in the faith, knowing that all the evil you are suffering is also being endured by brethren living in other areas of this kosmos (system of things).

1 Jn 2:14 - I write to you because you have strength and because God's word lives in you, helping you overcome all that is worthless.

Do not love the world or people in the world.

Any who love the world have no love for the Father in them.

As always, there's nothing in what was just covered to indicate evil, non-worldly spirits were involved, let alone that they even exist.

The Bible says the **diabolos** is a thing humans know all too well.

The context of the verses says the **diabolos** is something inside us, a craving, the overwhelming force that compels us think, say and do things that aren't spiritually profitable to ourselves or those around us.

The **diabolos** is a thing in us that kills whatever chance we might have at surviving our present lives by enticing us to think it's fine to slip back and forth between God and the world all day and night.

The **diabolos** is a thing in us that permits us, after we were given the prospect of future life, to let it all go and ooze back into the wallow out of which we were once delivered.

The **diabolos** is a thing in us that allows us to shout: "Don't do what I do! Do what I say!" It's the kind of thinking that blinds a parent to the fact children are fully aware their mommys and daddys aren't reluctant to network with thieves, liars, and other scum of the world at the exact same time they impel the kids to have good, giving, and godly friends.

The **diabolos** is a thing in us that lets us tolerate lying and slander as long as we aren't on the receiving end.

The **diabolos** is a thing in us that, when the lies and slander head our direction, causes us to flutter about, assuring any who will listen that it is only an huge mix-up, just the strategy of a false accuser, a slanderer, a **diabolos**, a no good dirty rotten two-faced liar.

If that's true (by the way, the Bible says it is) what may a person do about the **diabolos** and having to live in the world with it?

It's not a problem, for the Bible says something was already done.

"What was done?"

The answer: Christ finished one of his jobs.

"What did he do?"

The answer: Christ destroyed the **diabolos** (devil).

Heb 2:14 - Like children of God partake in flesh and blood (like they are human) so too, Jesus himself similarly took part in the same (was also an human) so he could overcome the **diabolos** (that which held the power of death) by his own death. It was done like this so he might deliver those who were in bondage all their lives because they feared death.

18 - He is able to ease the load of others that are presently being tried. He can ease their load because he suffered himself and was tried.

9:26 - Now once, in the end of this age, he has been manifest to destroy sin by sacrificing himself.

1 Jn 3:7 - Let no one fool you, for those who do what is right, those who believe and at least try to live righteous lives, are counted by God as the righteous. Sinners are offspring of the **diabolos** because the **diabolos** is the father (originator, source) of sin.

God's son was manifest because of sin.

God's son was manifest to destroy the works of the diabolos (devil).

10 - God's children differ from children of the diabolos this way: those who do not live righteously in the truth are not God's children.

The writer to the Hebrews says Jesus destroyed the **diabolos**.

The others (people who buy into anti-christian lies) claim the **diabolos** is still alive and kicking.

"How can this be?"

The answer: it can because people who are drunk on the wine of anti-beliefs are blind and ignorant.

They don't know that the **diabolos** is actually **sin**, plus whatever is in a person that would cause him or her to go against God.

They don't realize that they are the **diabolos** or "devil" (to use one of their own terms) opposing people who know and love the truth.

Jesus not only tried to live a righteous life, he succeeded, and he did it because Yahweh made the perfect man for the job, then groomed him, pointed him in the right direction, and turned him loose.

When Jesus was struggling with the awareness he'd been granted an immeasurable capacity, the **diabolos** in him (his human desire) reached a level so intense it was like a living being.

It was to **Matthew** and **Luke**, anyway . . .

Mt 4:1 - Jesus was led by the pneuma (spirit) into the wilderness, since he would be tested (proven) by a diabolos. After fasting for forty days and nights, he was very hungry, and the nature of the test became clear the minute he started to say in himself, Turn these stones into bread if you really are the son of God.

Jesus answered, saying, It was written: It is not by bread only that men live, but by words that come from the mouth of God.

Shortly after, the diabolos carried him away to the holy city.

Once there, the diabolos set him down on the apex of the temple.

If you really are God's son, said the diabolos, throw yourself off.

It is written God has ordered his angels to protect his son, he added.

Jesus answered, saying, It is also written that people having any smarts at all do not test Yahweh, their God.

Lk 4:5 - The diabolos took him to the summit of an high mountain and he laid out all the kingdoms of the world before him in a moment of time.

He said, I will give you all their power and grandeur, since this world has been awarded to me and anybody with whom I choose to share it.

He also said, If you do what I say, it will all be yours.

Keep away from me, you adversary (satan) Jesus told himself, for it was written that people must worship Yahweh, their God, and him alone.

13 - After the diabolos had ended all the testing, it left him for a while. Jesus returned to Galilee in the power of the spirit. And news of him sped through all the regions round and about.

Some may say, "But that's exactly how the Devil tempted Jesus!"

Some may say, "It's the same way he tempts us all!"

It must be kept in mind that while the account might illustrate how a wicked spirit being might have tested Jesus, there's no place in any yarn of Jesus' test saying a wicked spirit being conducted the trial; since the tester's identity isn't known, those who believe "Satan" was the one that carried out the ordeal are reading the meaning into the account.

Forcing it into the account is closer to the truth.

There are no verses in the Bible proving "evil spirit beings" exist. Go find some actual evidence that proves there are malevolent spirit beings working against God's will, then feel free to entertain the moronic belief it was "Satan, the Devil" harassing Christ.

There are no verses in the Bible indicating anyone but Christ and the chosen will inherit the world and its kingdoms.

The data in **Luke** and **Matthew** doesn't verify the belief "Satan" ever was or will be the king of anything.

Jesus' **satan** could've been his own human nature.

If it's claimed the testing couldn't have been Jesus' human nature in a struggle with God's will because Jesus wouldn't talk to something that wasn't a living entity, what about the things Jesus spoke to below?

Does anyone believe the things below are living entities?

Mk 4:37 - A great wind storm arose and waves beat against the ship.

Master, they cried, do you not care if we die?

Jesus rose and rebuffed the wind, saying, Peace.

Jesus told the sea, Be still.

At once, the wind stopped and there was a great calm.

Becoming exceedingly frightened, they asked one another, What kind of man is this that even the wind and sea obey him?

Lk 13:34 - Jerusalem, oh Jerusalem, you killed all your prophets and you stoned the ones God sent you. As a result, you will not see me again, not until you say, Blessed is he who comes in Yahweh's name.

So Jesus did speak to non-living things, didn't he?

Some areas of Jesus' testing could use a closer look . . .

Jesus got hungry.

This challenge came: Hey, you're starving. You have power to change these stones into food. So do it already!

Jesus knew the old testament promised God would permit no terminal thing to befall the Christ before it was time to offer up his life.

This challenge came: Wow, you know you're the son of God. God's son can't die before his time. You couldn't kill yourself now if you tried!

Jesus pictured the power and glory to be obtained by the person who ruled Earth and its kingdoms.

This challenge came: Look, you know you're the son promised to David, and that makes you Abraham's son, the Messiah and King. Also, you know the Earth belongs to the promised son, to you, so take it now!

These three lines of thought seem awfully familiar, don't they?

Gen 3:6 - The woman realized the tree was good for food, and it pleased her eyes, and it was a tree that would give a person awareness . . . so she picked some fruit and ate it.

Jms 1:13 - If you are tested, do not say you are being tested by God. Humans are tested when they are carried away by their own lust. Human lust is what tempts humans to transgress. Human lust, when it has conceived, brings forth sin. And sin, when it is finished, brings forth death. Make no mistake about this, my beloved brethren.

1 Jn 2:16 - Everything found in this world (lust of the flesh, lust of the eyes, and pride of life) does not come from the Father, but the world.

Prov 14:12 - There is a way that seems right to humans. Humans have a way that seems right, but it just leads to death.

28:26 - Those who trust their own hearts (emotions) are fools.

Jer 17:9 - The heart is more deceitful than anything else. It is terribly wicked and no one can possibly comprehend it.

Mt 15:10 - Jesus called out to the crowd, saying, Listen and understand. It is not what enters the mouth that defiles people, it is what comes out of the mouth that defiles them. Some disciples came and asked him, Did you notice those Pharisees were really offended when they heard your words? Jesus said, Let them be offended, for they are just blind leaders of the blind. When the blind lead the blind, they all end up in the ditch. Peter said, Explain the parable to us.

Jesus replied, Are you without understanding, also? Do you not yet see? What enters the mouth drops into the belly and exits out the back door. What comes from the mouth originates in the heart. That is the reason humans are defiled.

Jn 8:44 - Jesus said to the scribes and Pharisees, If God truly was your father you would love me, for I was sent by God. I have not come on my own, but God sent me. You do not understand my words because you will not listen to them. It is because you are from your father, the **diabolos**. You only follow the cravings of your father. He caused death to be born. He has not obeyed the rules since the beginning. It is because he has no desire to abide by God's will in him. When your **diabolos** tests you, it has risen up from your own hearts. It is your nature to oppose God's law and you have no other option, since you are your father's true children. That is why I can tell you the truth and you will still not believe me.

Because the man wouldn't back off, the people who could feel it most decided the world was better off without him.

They were in control and they did it.

"What about those who felt the world was fine with Christ in it?"

The answer: it worked well for them, also, since the **diabolos** gave the Big Guy exactly what he wanted: one human being who was determined to live life without once putting his own desires before his Father.

This was much easier said than done.

To top it off, the man died because he did God's will.

The man followed it through to the end, and because of that, the son of God, who never gave in to the **diabolos** (sin) lay dead in his grave.

God's son was stuck in a hole in the ground with a rock rolled over it.

Something was very, very wrong.

Adam and Eve rebelled and learned what it was like to oppose God.

Adam and Eve learned to be **satans**, to be diabolic.

Elohim stated because they sinned they must become mortal.

Elohim stated because they sinned the process of aging to death was about to commence in them, or as the translators of King James' version poorly put it: "In dying, you will die."

Gen 2:16 - Yahweh Elohim gave them a commandment, and said, You may eat and get nourishment from every tree in the garden except one. You must not eat fruit from the tree with knowledge of good and evil, for if you eat off that tree, a process leading to death will begin in you.

Rom 3:23 - All have sinned and come short of the glory of God.

5:12 - Sin came into the world because of one man.

Death came because of one sin.
Death passed on to all humans as a result of it.

18 - Since judgment to condemnation came from the sin of one, the free gift of justification to life also came from the righteousness of one.
Because the disobedience of one caused many to be sinful by nature, the obedience of one made it possible for many to gain a nature free of sin.

Daimon is another word translated "devil" in the new testament.
Daimon is the source of the English word "demon".
Daniel Webster defines demon as an "evil spirit", a "devil".
Dan's definition is close to the truth, but not unless the word "spirit" is understood properly.

Demons

1 Sam 16:14 - When God's spirit left Saul, an evil spirit from God began to terrify him.

19:8 - And once more, there was war.
David went forth to meet the Philistines in battle and defeated them.
He brought such a great slaughter on them the survivors fled from him.

Yahweh's evil spirit was on Saul as he sat in his house, hefting his javelin.
After some time, he began to wonder if he could hurl the javelin through David and pin him to the wall, but David slipped away.

In the verses above, two things are clear: (1) the evil spirit was from God, and (2) it made Saul think and act like he'd lost his marbles.

When **daimonia** (evil spirits, demons) are found in the scrolls, context always depicts madness (a loss of the marbles) as cause and effect alike.
Evil beings and powers won't be found - not unless the "Man-in-the-Moon" is considered an evil being or power . . .

1 Cor 15:40 - There are celestial bodies like the sun and stars.
There are terrestrial bodies like the Earth and moon.
The glory of celestial bodies is one thing.
The glory of terrestrial bodies is a totally different thing altogether.
The sun gives off one light and the moon (*selene*) gives off another.
The stars all twinkle in their own way.
The luster of one star is quite different from that of another.

Above, in the new testament, **selene** was translated "moon".
Below, the **selene** is responsible for lunacy.

Mt 4:23 - Jesus went through all Galilee. He cured every kind of illness (nosos) and disease (malakia) among the people, and his name was spread through all Syria, too. They brought people to him suffering from every known infirmity (nosos) those who were tormented (basanos) the demonized (daimonizomai) lunatics (seleniazomai, the moonstruck) and the ones who were sick with the palsy (paralutikos, the paralyzed). People like these were brought to Jesus and he made them whole.

17:15 - A certain man approached Jesus and kneeled before him, crying, Lord, have pity on my son. He is seleniazomai (lunatic) and heavily vexed and he often falls into fire or water.
When Jesus rebuked the daimonion, it departed.
And the boy was healed that very instant.

An illness mentioned by **Matthew** is lunacy or moon-madness.

Another was **daimonia** or "being possessed by a demon".

A third disease was paralysis.

One vital thing to remember is this: Jesus "cured" persons who were diseased and he "healed" the boy who was a lunatic.

Col 2:16 - Do not let any censure you for eating certain food or drinking certain types of drink or regarding certain holidays or for celebrating a new moon (noumenia) or the sabbath.

The word for "new moon", which started a lunar month, was **noumenia**. Some people believe **noumenia** relates to "mania" (mainomai) the state of mind manifested by maniacs, people who've gone mad.

Examples follow . . .

Jn 7:19 - Jesus said, Moses gave you God's law, but you do not follow it. Why are you looking for ways to kill me?
You have daimonion (you're crazy) the people told Jesus.
And they asked him, Who is looking for ways to kill you?

10:19 - Once again, the Jews were divided by what Jesus told them. Some said, He has a daimonion (he's crazy).
Others said, He is mainomai (out of his mind).

Acts 8:3 - In regard to Saul, he created havoc (lomainomai, went crazy) over the people who embraced the faith. He broke into houses, then he carried off men and women alike and threw them into prison.

12:13 - Peter knocked at a small door in the gate and Rhoda came to see who was there. After Rhoda recognized Peter's voice, she filled up with

joy and forgot to release the latch. Instead, she rushed away to tell all the others Peter was standing out front.
You are mainomai (out of your mind) they said to her, but Rhoda went on insisting she was not nuts.

17:16 - Paul's spirit was stirred in him by seeing Athens so full of icons. Because of it, he debated every day with Jews in the synagogues, those who claimed to be religious, and anyone else he found in the market. Certain philosophers who were associated with the Epicureans (coveters of joy) and Stoics (who stayed aloof from the world's delights) met him. One asked, What is this babbler saying?
Another said, He seems to be setting out strange gods (xenos daimonion, weird doctrines) since Paul spoke of Jesus and the resurrection.
Away they went, off to the Areopagus, the school of Cecrops, a man who had founded Athens, and they said, We want to hear all about these new theories you have introduced to us. You said some very bizarre things in our hearing and we would like to know more about them.
Athenians and visitors to Athens spent the time in no more than hearing or speaking some new thing each day.

22 - Paul stood on the summit of Mars' hill, saying, I see in all things you are way too superstitious (deisdaimon, your thinking is twisted). When I came closer, I saw your devotions and noticed the altar dedicated to the 'Unknown God'. Is it not obvious that the god you ignorantly worship like this is the very God about which I am telling you?

25:17 - The Jews showed up and I, Festus, sat in the judgment seat and I told them to bring Paul out. When his accusers faced him, they placed none of the charges I thought they should and what they did accuse him of just had to do with their own superstitions (deisdaimonia, their weird beliefs) regarding a person named Jesus. They speak about how he died and is now back among the living. That is what Paul says, anyway.

26:11 - I sincerely imagined I should do many things in opposition to the name of Jesus, of Nazareth, and I did these things in Jerusalem.
I sent many saints to prison, having authority from the chief priests.
I gave witness against them before they were put to death.
I tortured them, often in their own synagogues.
I forced many of them to blaspheme.
I was exceedingly wrathful (emmainomai, out of my mind) over them.
I even persecuted them when they fled to foreign cities.

24 - In a loud voice, Festus said, Paul, you are beside yourself (mainomai, you're nuts). Too much learning has driven you mad (peritrepo eis mania, turned you into a maniac).

Paul said, I am not mania (I'm not a loose cannon) most noble Festus.
Paul also said, What I am doing is speaking words of truth.

1 Cor 10:20 - The things gentiles offer when they sacrifice are offered to daimonion (the delusions of their warped minds) and not to God.
I would advise you to have no fellowship with daimonion.
You cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of daimonion.
You cannot eat from the Lord's table and the table of daimonion.

14:23 - As a result, if the whole church has assembled in one place, with everybody speaking in foreign tongues, and somebody without knowledge or somebody who does not believe enters, can you blame him if he thinks you have all gone mainomai (out of your minds)?

1 Tim 4:1 - The truth openly says in the last days many will depart from the faith. It also says they will follow seducing spirits, and doctrines of daimonion (demons, devils). It says they will speak hypocritical lies, just like their conscience were blistered by an hot iron. It says they will not permit some to be married and they will require abstinence from certain foods, foods God has given to be consumed with gratitude by people who know and love the truth.

7 - Refuse common fables and old wives' tales.
Conduct yourself in a godly manner.

Jms 3:13 - Who among you wants to be wise?
Who wants to be filled with knowledge?
May it be shown by good conduct, humility, and wisdom in all that you do.
If you feel bitter envy and strife in your hearts, however, take no glory.
Do not lie against the truth, for that kind of thinking has not come down from above; rather, its origin is the Earth.
It is sensual (psuchikos, comes from human thinking, is natural).
It is daimoniodes (devilish, originates in twisted minds).
Where envy and conflict are seen, you will also find confusion, as well as every other evil act.

If further proof is needed to concede **daimonia** is no more than those adversities presently diagnosed as mental and/or physical sicknesses (or in the much more preferable and socially-correct vein: to be emotionally, mentally, and/or physically challenged) **Luke** submits all the proof a body could possibly want in the next passage.

Lk 8:26 - They approached the land of the Gadarenes, near Galilee.
When Jesus reached shore, he encountered a certain man from the city, a man who had had daimonion for a long time.

He wore no clothing and he owned no home or anything else.
He lived among the tombs instead.

When he saw Jesus, he fell down before him, shouting with a loud voice,
What have I to do with you, oh Jesus, son of the most high God?
He also said, I beg you not to torment me before it is time.
He said it because Jesus commanded the unclean spirits to leave and he
was fearful, since when unclean spirits inside him acted up, people from
the city caught him and bound him in chains and fetters. He was always
able to tear the chains off, but then the daimonion would drive him into
the desert.

Jesus asked the man, What is your name?
The man said, Legion. He said it because (he believed) there were many
daimonion in him and because they had begged the man to ask Jesus not
to cast them into the deep (abussos, abyss, place of the dead).
A pack of porkers was feeding on the mountain, and they begged him to
send them into the herd instead. When Jesus agreed, the daimonion all
left the man and went into the pigs, then the entire pack quickly rushed
down a steep slope, jumped into the lake, and drowned.
After the people who fed the pigs saw what happened, they ran off and
told people in town and in the country around and they all headed out to
learn what had taken place. They saw the man from whom the daimonon
were gone seated at Jesus' feet, fully clothed and in his right mind, and
they all marveled. Those who were present, those who had watched the
event, told them how the man with the daimonion was healed.

The Gadarenes probably weren't Jews from the tribe of Gad.

The Gadarenes would hardly have been living where they lived unless
the Romans let them live there.

One facet of the psychological warfare used by Rome to maintain its
hold on the countries it occupied was to publicly dishonor the religion of
the people. Rome helped the Gadarenes to scorn Yahweh, God of Israel,
by their production of porkers. Under the law given through Moses, the
pig was an unclean animal and the Jews were commanded to have nothing
to do with it. When Jesus caused the hogs to hop in the lake and drown,
he added beef to his contention he was the son of God, a king who would
rise from the Jewish nation to judge the Earth. Whether the people of
Gadarea believed isn't disclosed, but **Matthew** and **Mark** both reveal the
Gadarenes politely asked Jesus to get out of town. It's unlikely, though,
any of them sought compensation for the swine that went swimming.

But most important, there's nothing in the account above of the "evil
spirits" concocted by anti-christians. If the "demons" were servants of
the pagan deity "Satan" they shouldn't have been all that stressed at be-
ing cast into the bad place, the **abussos**, abyss, land of the dead. If the

"demons" were servants of "Satan", the anti-christian's "Devil", wouldn't they be thrilled at the opportunity to spend some time at home in "Hell" with the boss and the rest of the gang? Though they may have fretted "Satan" would chew on them for letting themselves be ousted from that guy from Gadara, it had to beat inhabiting a bunch of boars.

Mentally unbalanced Jews weren't afraid to admit Jesus was the son of David, the coming king. They didn't have a lot to lose, for the Jewish establishment considered them to be the walking dead, right there with lepers, people from pagan nations, and tax collectors.

The man above was said to have been "possessed" by **daimonia**.

This means he was nuts, not full of "evil spirits".

There are no "spirits" opposed to God.

Those who think there were real, living beings in the man because an unreal and/or non-living entity couldn't be "cast out" may want to glance at the following verses . . .

Mt 4:18 - Jesus was walking alongside the sea of Galilee, where he saw two brothers. One was Simon, known as Peter, also. The other was his brother, Andrew. They were casting (ballo-ing) a net into the sea.

Mk 12:41 - Jesus leaned against the building and watched as people cast (ballo-ed) money into the treasury. People who were wealthy cast (ballo-ed) in a lot.

Acts 27:38 - When they had all eaten to the full, they lightened ship by casting (ballo-ing) the rest of the wheat into the sea.

So non-living things may be **ballo-ed**, hmm? They can be cast out, you could say. **Ballo** should be familiar from the examination of **diabolos**, the people who love to thrust it right through you, the ones who are just the same as the demonic Jews who resisted Jesus until Jesus was dead.

For people burdened with the idea that nothing but living beings have ever "departed" or "left", the following may prove interesting.

Is 38:11 - My age has departed, taken from me like a shepherd's tent.

Lam 1:5 - Yahweh has afflicted her for a multitude of sins.
All her children have gone into captivity before the enemy.
All the beauty of the daughter of Zion has departed.

Mt 8:14 - Jesus arrived at Peter's house. He saw his wife's mother laid out sick with a fever. The fever left her when he touched her hand and she rose up to serve them.

Mk 1:33 - As the sun was setting in the evening, they brought him those who were ailing, as well as the ones possessed by daimonion. Jesus healed those suffering from every type of malady and he cast out many daimonion, commanding those that had had the daimonion, the ones he had healed, not to admit they knew who he really was.

40 - A leper approached Jesus, begging and bowing before him. Jesus, the man said, you can make me clean if you want. Jesus, moved with compassion, reached out his hand and touched him. Jesus said, I do want to make you clean. So go ahead . . . be clean. As soon as he said it, the leprosy left the man and he was cleansed.

Acts 19:11 - God worked great miracles through the hand of Paul, for if handkerchiefs or aprons that had touched Paul's body were given to sick people, diseases departed from them and evil pneuma left, too.

So non-living things do "depart" and "leave", don't they?
And the Bible does say those previously possessed by **daimonion** were "restored", "healed", "cured", or "made whole", doesn't it?

Mk 3:9 - Jesus asked his disciples to find a small boat so he could detach himself from the multitude, lest they throng him. Because he had healed so many, others who had plagues (mastix, torments) pushed toward him in an effort to reach him. Those who had unclean pneuma, after they saw it was him, fell down before him, crying out, You are the son of God! Jesus, however, sternly charged them not to make him known.

15:22 - They saw a gentile woman approaching, crying out to Jesus, Have mercy on me, Lord, oh son of David. My daughter is in great trouble, for she is being tormented by a daimonion. Jesus said, Oh woman, your faith is great. He also said, It will be just as you ask. And that very moment, her daughter was made whole. (28)

8:16 - They delivered many to him who were possessed by daimonion and he cast the pneuma out with a word. He healed all the sick in order that Isaiah's prophecy would be fulfilled, the prophecy where Isaiah said, He has taken our illnesses upon himself, and he has assumed our infirmities.

12:22 - They brought a man to him, a man possessed by a daimonion, one both blind and dumb. And after Jesus healed him, the dumb man talked. After Jesus healed him, the blind man saw.

Lk 11:14 - Jesus kept busy casting out daimonion. One of the daimonion was a dumb one, and the dumb man spoke after the daimonion left.

No mention anywhere of anti-christianity's favorite fiend, only the ill: people with **daimonia**; the deaf, dumb and blind; ones having epilepsy; and crippled, insane, and delusional ones . . . in short, the walking dead.

Jesus, Yahweh's son, healed them all.

Jesus was able to heal them because he knew the Bible.

Jesus wasn't stuck with anti-christian lies.

Jesus knew his Father was the origin of all disease and sickness.

Jesus also knew only his Father could bring permanent healing.

Ex 4:10 - Moses told Yahweh, Oh my Lord, I am not articulate.

Moses asked, Why can you not see I am slow of speech and tongue?

Yahweh replied, Who made the human mouth?

Who makes human mouths dumb?

Who makes human ears deaf?

Who gives humans sight and makes humans go blind?

Why can you not see it is I, Yahweh?

2 Kng 5:7 - The ruler of Israel finished reading the letter, then he rent his robe, asking, Does he presume I am God? Can I kill? Can I bring one back to life? How can this man expect me to heal someone of leprosy?

It was Yahweh who sent forth the torments (spirits of **daimonion**) to plague this present world.

Yahweh is also the one who will send forth far worse **daimonion** (hard times) on gentiles when gentile days are ending.

Rev 9:20 - The men who were not slain by the plagues refused to repent.

They did not stop honoring the works of their hands.

They did not stop honoring damonion.

They did not stop honoring images of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood.

They did not stop honoring idols that could not see, hear, or move.

They did not stop murdering, lying, fornicating, or stealing, either.

16:13 - I saw three unclean spirits that looked like frogs.

They came from the mouths of the dragon, beast, and false prophet.

They are spirits of daimonion.

They will work wonders.

They will be sent out to kings of the Earth, to every king in the world.

They will assemble them for battle on the great day of God Almighty.

Take care, for I will come as a thief.

Those who watch will be blessed, for they will keep their garments.

They will not be seen naked, with everyone aware of their shame.

The kings will be brought forth to a certain place.

They will be led to the place the Hebrews call Harmageddon.

They will be led to the valley of Meggido, not far from Jerusalem.

18:1 - I saw another angel come down out of heaven.

It was an angel with great power, one whose glory illuminated the Earth. In a forceful voice, a voice that was full of strength, this angel shouted, Babylon, the great, has fallen. Babylon has fallen, and she has become a dwelling-place for daimonion, an hold for every foul spirit and a cage for all unclean and hateful birds.

It was because the nations drank wine from the wrath of her carnality.

It was because the leaders of Earth committed fornication with her.

It was because the people who traded with her all became wealthy.

It was because of the abundance of her precious things.

Not only is the anti-christian "devil" not in the Bible, even if he was a real being he'd have little to do. He (the Devil) would have little to do in light of the fact the Bible says "Hell", his invented "kingdom", is in truth the grave, the common abode of all dead humans.

The verses below are twisted by anti-christians in their vain attempt to promote the illusion of a "rebel-angel-devil", tormenter and tester of all humankind.

Read these verses, taking care to observe their context.

Methodically study what is not said and you'll be set free.

Gen 3:4 - Serpent in the garden.

6:2 - Sons of God marry daughters of men.

Job 1:2 - Satan also came among them.

Is 14:12 - Lucifer fallen from heaven.

Ezk 28:13 - You were in Eden.

Zech 3:2 - The Lord rebuke you, oh Satan.

Mt 4:1 - Jesus tested by the devil.

12:43 - Seven other spirits.

Lk 10:18 - Satan fell like lightning from heaven.

22:3 - Satan entered Judas.

31 - Satan wants you.

Jn 12:31 - The prince of this world.

13:2 - The devil put into the heart of Judas.

27 - Satan entered him.

14:30 - The prince of this world comes.

16:11 - The prince of this world is judged.

2 Cor 11:14 - Satan changed into an angel of light.

Jms 2:19 - Demons believe and tremble.

1 Ptr 5:8 - Your adversary, the devil.

2 Ptr 2:4 - Angels that sinned.

Jude 6 - Angels that did not keep their first estate.

9 - Michael, the Archangel, contending with the devil.

Rev 12:7 - War in heaven.

If you wish to be set free regarding humanity and its nature and role in the Big Guy's plan and purpose, continue reading.

Humanity

Do human beings survive death?
Yes or No?

The Yes side states, "Without a doubt, there's life after death. It's apparent to everybody. The knowledge human beings live on after death was put in us by God Himself. It's one of the few things people on Earth agree about. Every religion on the planet says we survive death."

The No side says, "We die. That's it. It's over."

Is one side wrong or are both wrong?
Is it possible both sides are right?

A number of humankind's religions link their origins to the book called the Bible. They pledge their allegiance to the Bible because they assume its pages are packed with passages proving people are perpetual.

The best way to maintain that fantasy is to avoid reading the Bible.
This is why . . .

Job 4:17 - Can a mortal man be more righteous than God?

Rom 6:12 - Do not let sin reign in your mortal bodies.
God will grant life to your mortal bodies. **(8:11)**

1 Cor 15:53 - Our corruptible bodies must put on incorruption.
Our mortal beings must put on immortality.
After our mortal bodies have put on immortality, then this prophecy will be fulfilled, the one that says, Death is now swallowed up in victory.
Oh Death, where is your sting?
Oh Grave, where is your victory?

2 Cor 4:11 - Those of us (apostles) yet living are constantly put to death for Jesus' sake so Jesus' life can then be seen in our mortal flesh.
We are killed so mortality can be swallowed up by life. **(5:4)**

The verses above are the only places in most English Bibles where the words "mortal" and "mortality" are found. So far, people who support the belief of life after death haven't got much to shout about. Maybe things would perk up if "immortal" and "immortality" were looked into. Not a lot of time or effort will be needed, for "immortal" and "immortality" appear a total of six times in the whole King James Bible.

Rom 2:6 - God will award humans in accord with their acts . . .

To those who do well, the ones who are searching for honor, dignity, and immortality (aphtharsia) God will award eternal life, but to the ones who are contentious, those who refuse to conform to the truth, God will give only indignation and wrath.

1 Cor 15:53 - This mortal (thnetos) must put on immortality (athanasia). After this mortal has put on immortality . . . **(54)**

1 Tim 1:17 - The King eternal, immortal (aphthartos) and invisible.

God, who only has immortality (athanasia) in and of himself.

God, who lives in light no human can approach.

God, who no human has seen or can see. **(6:16)**

2 Tim 1:10 - Jesus, the Christ, put away death. By means of his death, he manifested life and immortality (aphtharsia) through the gospel.

The position of the Yes side is less stable. Something that may help is a study of Greek terms from which the English words derived. Study of the Greek words is actually the only thing that can help, since if this search is stopped now, the Bible must be eliminated as a means to prove humans presently possess an immortal nature. If this search stops now, humans have only fluttery little feelings in their hearts to go on. And a feeling isn't much when the issue in question is Life or Death.

In Paul's letters to **Timothy** above, "immortality" was used to denote two different Greek words: **aphtharsia** and **athanasia**.

Euthanasia is an English word encountered by many.

Euthanasia is said to mean "mercy-killing" or "death with dignity".

Euthanasia is formed out of two Greek words: **eu** (a prefix) implying "well done" and **thanasia** (from **thanatos**) meaning "death".

Euthanasia is "a good death" or "dying done well".

"Immortality" was translated from **athanasia** in the verses above.

Athanasia is formed from the prefix **a**, meaning "no" or "not", as well as **thanasia**, which stands for "death" or "dying".

Athanasia means "no death" or "non-dying".

One of the verses above says only God has **athanasia**, that God alone is non-dying. One good thing Jesus brought to light is this: God vows to award **athanasia** to certain select human beings. That way, persons who gain God's favor can also experience a non-dying existence.

The Bible says flesh-and-blood humans (as they are now constituted) don't have what it takes to inherit places in God's kingdom.

Readers are told it's because humans are presently subject to death, but those who get places in God's future kingdom must live on. They must live on if they're going to rule in upcoming ages.

The English words above are grand as far as they go, but it would've been better if other English words were used in the verses.

"Incorruptible" would've been better.

"Why?"

The answer: because this is the meaning of the Greek word Paul used in two of the verses. The word is **aphtharsia**, another combination-word the Greeks made to connote an incorruptible thing, something not apt to turn into dust and ashes.

The Bible says God will give new life in the new age to people he finds worthy, and this is no less than praise, honor, and incorruption.

It's no less than a preservation of mind, heart, and body.

It's the very truth Jesus brought to light through the gospel.

"Incorruption" is a great way to translate **aphtharsia** and **aphthartos** for another reason, which is because "incorruption" was picked to render **aphtharsia** below, where Paul adopted it to signify the exact opposite of corruption.

1 Cor 15:35 - You ask how the dead are raised, and in what type of body they will appear. You fool! Planted seeds do not undergo metamorphosis unless they die first. Seed that was sown is not the plant it will become. A seed is sown in hopes it will become wheat or another useful grain. Are you not able to see it is the same in the resurrection of the dead? A body is sown (brought forth) in a corruptible state (in phthora). After, it is elevated into a state of incorruption (into aphtharsia). A body is brought forth in a dishonorable state. After, it is elevated into a state of honor. A body is brought forth in a weak state before it is raised into power. A body is sown as a natural being before it is raised into immortality.

50 - Flesh and blood cannot inherit (a place in) God's kingdom. Corruptible (phthora) beings cannot inherit incorruption (aphtharsia). I will now try to solve a mystery for you: we will not all sleep, but we will all be changed . . . in an instant, in the blink of an eye, at the final trump. Believers found worthy will be elevated after the trumpet has sounded. Believers will be raised up into the state of incorruption (adiaphthoria). Only then will they really be altered, since their corruptible (phthartos) body has to don incorruption (aphtharsia). Only then, since their mortal (thnetos) being has to don immortality (athanasia). We see now it is not before these corruptible (phthartos) bodies are dressed in incorruption (aphtharsia) that the words of prophesy can be fulfilled.

It is only after these mortal (thnetos) beings put on immortality (athanasia) that death can be swallowed up in victory.

Phthartos was translated "corruptible" above.

Aphthartos was translated "immortal" below.

1 Tim 1:17 - He is our King, eternal (aionian) immortal (aphthartos) and invisible (aoratos) the only God with awareness.

Paul might have stuttered when he was excited, but he didn't stutter here. It's not likely Paul was trying to pass on the astounding truth that God is immortally immortal or everlastingly everlasting.

What Paul wants to get across is that the King of ages is not subject to decay, nor can he be seen, etc.

Aphthartos appears as "sincerity" in the verses below.

Eph 6:24 - I pray mercy will come upon all those who love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity (aphthartos).

Titus 2:7 - As for yourselves, show a pattern of good works in all things. As far as doctrine, reveal only noncorruption (adiaphthoria) honesty, and sincerity (aphthartos) putting out teachings that cannot be contested so all who are against you will be ashamed because they have nothing bad to say about you.

Above, in a letter to Titus, Paul chose **adiaphthoria**, a compound-word created from three Greek words that (combined) mean "through" and/or "in" a spirit of uncorruptness.

Adiaphthoria was used seven times in the Bible, and it was translated by four English words: "uncorruptness", "incorruptible", "noncorruptible", and "uncorruptible". The words are identical - or to put it more properly, they are four words used to convey the same concept.

The other six appearances of **adiaththoria** follow.

Rom 1:18 - God's wrath will be sent forth from heaven against all unholy humans who hide the truth behind unrighteousness.

After they were given an awareness of God, they did not worship him as God, nor were they thankful; rather, they allowed their thinking to grow vain, and because of it, God further darkened their crazed hearts. Now whenever they profess to be wise, they are nothing but fools, since they traded away the truth given by the uncorruptible (adiaphthoria) God for things made by corruptible (phthartos) humans. Some even bowed themselves before statues of birds, four-footed animals, and creeping things and that is why God sold them over to the impure desires of their filthy hearts. (21)

1 Cor 9:24 - Everybody is aware each runner in a race runs, but only one gets the prize. Run that way so you will be victorious. People who strive for mastery are restrained in all things, and they do it in order to gain a corruptible (phthartos) crown. The reason we run is so we might receive an incorruptible (adiaphthoria) crown. That is how I run, with no holding back, and that is how I fight, not like people who beat at the air; rather, I keep my body down and bring it into subjection. I do this lest, after I have taught others, I myself might be cast away.

15:51 - I will now reveal a secret: the dead ones who are judged worthy will be elevated into the state of adiaphthoria (immortality).

1 Ptr 1:4 - The God and Father of the Lord Jesus Christ should receive acclaim for his bounteous mercy. He should be held in honor, for he has put hope for a new life in us by raising Jesus, the Christ, from the dead up to an incorruptible (adiaphthoria) and unsullied inheritance which will never fade away, an inheritance that is now reserved in heaven for us, a reward which will be given to all who are preserved by way of the power of faith until the last day when God's righteousness will be revealed.

22 - Because you have purified your souls by obeying the spirit of truth, and by truly loving your brethren, you should also make sure you keep on loving one another. You have to love each other with chaste and fervent hearts, showing that you were not newly born of corruptible (phthartos) seed, but of incorruptible (adiaphthoria) seed, showing you were born of the word of the living God, which was given to last through the ages.

3:4 - Let it come from the hidden man of the heart.
Let it come from that which is not corruptible (adiaphthoria).
Let it come from the adornment of an honest and calm spirit.
Let it come from that which has great value in God's eyes.

It should be clear by now that the Bible has the only true solution to surviving the demise of the death-ridden and decaying human body.

"What solution?"

This solution: raise the human body into the state of **aphtharsia**.

Turn it God-like, equal to the Elohim.

Take it to the same level Jesus attained at his glorification.

There's no mention in the Bible of a "true person", a "spirit-creature" which sheds its body at death, and rises ever upward, sailing off to plop into some ethereal and infinite sea of life out past the sky. Books other than the Bible must be consulted to discover this type thinking. Scrolls in the Bible guarantee a new life in a new body, a body that will never go extinct, a body that is **aphthora**, a body not subject to corruption, since it will be **athanatos**. And that's all the Bible offers.

Let's be up front here - thus far, absolutely nothing was seen for the Yes side to connect with. Examination of every appearance of the words linked to mortality and immortality reveals nothing to prove humans have non-dying natures at present. An examination has also revealed no verse opposing the belief that the only ones who will ever be given immortality are the ones Christ approves at judgment. Remember: every word which relates to mortality and immortality was examined.

"But couldn't there still be some verse somewhere in the Bible saying humans are presently immortal?"

The answer: sure, but it would have to be a symbolic verse.

A symbolic verse can be twisted to mean anything.

One thing it would mean is the Bible contains contradictions.

If a contradiction is found in the Bible, it wouldn't deserve anybody's trust, since if a real contradiction is seen, the only value the Bible would possibly have is as a source for horrid little stories parents could tell to scare their kids into behaving.

If a contradiction is found in the Bible, the Bible isn't worth wagering one's life on, but real and genuine contradictions are meant here, not the senselessness and superstitions of those too braindead to work out what God is saying.

One other thing revealed in the verses above is this: it's possible that mortal humans can receive immortality. Jesus' teaching brought the way to light and nothing can contradict that, either.

If anything does: "Hey, kids! Have you heard how Daniel was chucked into that hole full of hungry lions 'cause he didn't do what he was told?"

Perhaps it's best to start in the beginning . . .

Gen 2:7 - Yahweh Elohim (angels of God) made the human from the very same elements obtained on the Earth. And, when the breath of life was introduced into its nostrils, the human became a living soul.

17 - The day you eat fruit off that tree, a process will start within you. It will be a process that leads to your death.
You were formed from dust (the elements).
You will return to dust again. (**3:19**)

22 - To prevent his humans from picking fruit from the tree of life and eating it and living forever, Yahweh Elohim drove them from the garden in Eden.

Job 4:17 - Can a mortal man be more righteous than God?
Can a mortal man be more pure than his creator?
Do you not know God does not always trust his servants?
Do you not know God sometimes considers his messengers fools?

How much less trust will he put in those living in houses of clay?
How far will he trust those who came from the dust?
All day long they are destroyed.
Age after age they die, yet no one seems all that concerned.

10:8 - Your hands made me and fashioned my entire being.
Why are you destroying me now?
Will you please remember you formed me from the dust?
What are you doing now, trying to turn me into dust again?

21:23 - One man dies in full strength and perfection, feeling completely secure and taking his ease.
Another man dies bitter of soul, with no chance to enjoy pleasure.
Both of them will lie down in the dust.
And worms will cover them both, too. (26)

39:23 - I know you will bring me to death.
You will bring me to the house you have appointed for all the living.

Ps 30:9 - What advantage is there in my blood (life)?
What advantage if all that awaits me is a journey down into the pit?
Will dust glorify you?
Will dust proclaim your truth?

103:14 - He knows our thoughts.
He remembers we are just dust.

104:29 - When you hide your face, they are troubled.
When you take away their breath, they die and return to their dust.

Eccl 3:19 - The same thing that happens to humans happens to animals.
The same thing happens to both.
The one dies like the other, for they both have the same breath.
Those who believe humans are better off than animals are vain.
They forget all living things go back to their source.
They are all from the dust and they all turn to dust again.
Then why is it said human spirits go up and animal spirits go down?
There is no one with the right to say that.

1 Cor 15:47 - The first human was formed from the same elements that make up the Earth. He was natural.

Rom 5:12 - Sin entered the world because of one man.
Death entered the world because of one sin.
Death passed on to all humans, for in effect all humans sinned.

6:23 - Death is the wage paid by sin.

Gen 25:8 - Abraham did not die until he had reached a good age.
He was an old man and full of years when he was gathered to his people.

35:29 - Isaac took his last breath, died, and was gathered to his people.
He was old and full of days when his sons, Esau and Jacob, buried him.

49:33 - Jacob finished his last words to his sons, folded himself up into his bed, breathed his last breath, and was gathered to his people.

Deut 34:1 - Moses climbed from the plains of Moab up to the mountains of Nebo, to Pisgah's peak, a crest near Jericho. Yahweh pointed out the whole land of Gilead and Dan, and all the land of Naphtali, Ephraim, Manasseh and Judah to the far sea. To the south, he showed him the plains and vales of Jericho, the city of palms, and past all the way to Zoar. Yahweh said, This is the land I promised Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. It is the land I said I would give their seed, also. I decided you should see it with your own eyes, but I cannot let you cross over into it.

5 - Moses, the servant of Yahweh, died in the land of Moab.
He died the same way Yahweh said he would.
He was one hundred and twenty years of age when he expired.
His sight had not diminished, nor had his natural force abated. (7)

10 - No other prophet has risen in Israel like Moses.
No other prophet has risen that Yahweh knew face to face, anyway.

2 Kng 2:1 - David spoke to his son, Solomon, at the time of his death.
David said, I am going the way of all the Earth.
David also said, You must be strong and show you are a man, carrying on according to the commands and laws of Yahweh, your God.

10 - David slept with his fathers and was buried in Jerusalem.

Acts 13:36 - David served his own generation in line with God's will.
David fell asleep after, was laid with his fathers, and saw corruption.

Dan 12:8 - I heard, but I could not understand, and I asked, Oh my lord, how long will it be before all this is over?
He said to me, Continue on your path, Daniel, for these words are sealed until the time of the end.

13 - You must travel along your path until you die, then you will sleep.
You will receive your portion of the reward at the end of days.

Heb 11:13 - They all died in faith and none of them gained the promises.
They all knew fulfillment could be a long time coming.
They were convinced by the promises and embraced them.
They considered themselves aliens.
They considered themselves no more than pilgrims on Earth.

39 - None of them received the promise, however they all received good records in so far as their faith, for God has a better thing prepared for us, ensuring that none of them will be made perfect without us.

"But they always told me the Bible says human beings continue to live on after they die. Humans do live on, don't they?"

Job 3:11 - Why did I not die as I came from the womb?
Why did I not breathe my last as I came from my mother's belly?
Now I would be still. I would be resting. I would be asleep. **(13)**
It would have been as if I had never been.
I would have been carried from the womb to the grave. **(10:19)**

Ps 6:4 - Return, oh Yahweh, and save me.
Save me, showing mercy, for there is no remembrance of you in death.
Who will offer you thanks in the grave?

39:12 - Hear my prayer, oh Yahweh.
Give ear to my cry and do not hold back because of my tears.
I am an alien before you, a sojourner, just like my fathers.
Spare me so I may gain strength before I go away to be no more.

146:2 - Praise Yahweh. Praise Yahweh, oh my soul.
I will praise Yahweh while I live.
I will sing praises to my God while I have any being.
Put no trust in princes, for sons of men cannot help you.
They release their last breath and return to the Earth.
That very day, their thoughts perish.

Eccl 9:4 - There is hope for those yet among the living, since a living dog is in a better position than a dead lion. Those who are still living at least know they will die, but the dead know nothing.

10 - Whatever your hand finds to do, do it with all your might, for there is no work, device, knowledge, or wisdom in the grave, your destination.

Is 2:22 - Do not trust in humans.
The life of humans is in their nostrils.
The life of humans brings them no good.

38:18 - Those who are in the grave cannot praise you.
Those who are dead cannot celebrate you.
Those who are in the ground cannot hope for your truth.
The living, those still alive, are the only ones who can praise you.

Jms 4:14 - Wake up, you who say, Today or tomorrow we will go to some city or another, stay for a year, open a business, and get rich.
How do you know what tomorrow will bring?
Is your life not just a vapor?
Is it not a mist that appears for a short time, then vanishes away?

Ps 78:39 - He remembered they were no more than flesh.
He remembered they were nothing but a wind that whirls away.
He remembered they just pass on, never to return again.

103:13 - Like a father pities his children, Yahweh also pities people who love him, for he knows our frame and remembers we are made of dust.
Humanity's days are like the days of grass.
Humanity is like a flower flourishing in a field.
Humanity is like a flower the wind passes over, then it is gone.

144:4 - Humans are full of vanity, their days as a shadow passing away.

Is 40:6 - Flesh is like grass and its glory like the glory of a flower in the field, but the grass withers and flowers fade after the spirit of Yahweh exhales on them. Truly, humans are just like grass.

1 Ptr 1:24 - All flesh is like grass.
All humanity's glory is like the glory of flowers and grass.

"But this all sounds like human life. Everybody knows human life has its end, but human souls live on. The soul is the doorway to spiritual life, isn't it? Souls live on after their bodies die, don't they?"

The Soul

Gen 2:7 - Yahweh Elohim (the angels of God) made the human out of the same elements which formed the Earth, and when the breath of life was introduced into its nostrils, the human became a living soul.

Nothing appears in the verse above on which to base a belief Adam or any of his offspring are immortal. The verse only says it was the breath of life that caused the human to become a living soul.

Genesis 2:7 holds no evidence Adam was a previously-living being who inhabited a body formed from earthly elements.

Even if the verse did say that, which it certainly does not, there's no evidence proving soul-Adam would live on after human-Adam croaked.

The English word "soul" represents the Hebrew word **nephesh**.
The word **nephesh** appears other places in **Genesis** . . .

Gen 1:20 - And Elohim said, May the waters bring forth an abundance of moving nephesh (creatures) having life (soul) and also birds, birds which will fly above Earth in the open firmament of heaven.
Elohim created great whales and other living nephesh (creatures). (21)
Elohim said, May Earth bring forth living nephesh (creatures which have life) after their own kind. (24)
I allot green herbs to be food for beasts of the Earth, birds of the air, and everything that crawls on the ground, all things that have a nephesh (living soul). (30)

9:8 - Elohim spoke to Noah and his sons, saying, I am going to establish a covenant with you today, with your seed after you and the living nephesh which were with you in the ark, the birds, cattle and other beasts of the Earth. This promise is part of the covenant I will establish: no more will all flesh be destroyed by water in a flood and no more will the waters of a flood ravage the whole Earth.
Elohim said, This is the sign of the covenant I will institute with you and every other living nephesh: I have put my bow in the clouds and it will be a token of the covenant between myself and Earth to all generations.

More old testament verses in which **nephesh** appears . . .

Lev 11:10 - Things that live and move in the seas and rivers, things without fins and scales, will be abominable to you.
It is the rule pertaining to beasts, birds, and all the nephesh (creatures) living and swimming in the water and nephesh that crawl on the ground.
You must conform to the difference between clean and unclean, between a beast (chayah, living thing) you can eat, and a chayah you cannot. (46)

24:17 - Anybody who murders another person (takes the life of another human being) must surely be put to death. Anybody who slays a nephesh must make it good, nephesh for nephesh (life for life).

Num 31:28 - Collect tribute for Yahweh from all warriors who went into the fray. Put aside one nephesh (soul) from every five hundred nephesh of humans, cattle, asses, and sheep.

Deut 19:11 - Any person who hates his neighbor and waits in ambush for his neighbor so he can rise up against him and smite him mortally (kill his

nephesh, end his life) and runs away to a city of refuge, must be brought back to the elders in his own city. There, he must be handed over to the avenger of blood, then be put to death. He will be shown no pity, for the guilt of shedding innocent blood in Israel must be purged.

Job 12:9 - Yahweh's hand holds the nephesh (soul) of all living things. Yahweh's hand holds the breath of all humankind.

Up to this point, the Bible seems to be saying humans and animals are souls, not that they have souls.

Nephesh appears over seven hundred times in the old testament.

In the King James Bible, **nephesh** is translated with more than thirty different English words, some of which appear below.

"soul" (428 times) "life" (120) "self" (19)
"person" (30) "mind" (15) "heart" (15)
"creature" (9) "dead (body)" (13)

Verses where **nephesh** relates to God are next.

Lev 26:11 - I will place my tabernacle among you.
I (my nephesh, soul) will no longer abhor you when I walk among you.
I will be your God and you will be my people.
I am Yahweh, your God.

Is 1:13 - Bring me no more useless offerings. Your incense affronts me. I cannot tolerate your new moons or sabbaths. I detest your gatherings and assemblies. They nauseate me, especially your solemn meetings. My nephesh (soul) abhors your new moons and appointed festivals. They are a bother to me and I cannot put up with them much longer.

Jer 15:1 - Yahweh said, Even if Moses and Samuel were to stand before me, my nephesh (mind) would still not return to these people. Cast them from my sight. Get them out of here.

51:14 - Yahweh of hosts has sworn by his nephesh (by himself, or by his soul).

Verses in which **nephesh** relates to humanity . . .

Gen 12:5 - Abram rounded up Sarai, his wife, and Lot, his brother's son, and all their stuff, plus all the nephesh (souls) they had gotten in Haran and they left for the land of Canaan. And into Canaan they came.

Num 35:10 - Talk to the children of Israel, saying, When you are across the river Jordan, and have entered the land of Canaan, you must appoint certain cities for cities of refuge so any who accidentally slay a nephesh (another person) may flee to them.

Six cities will be set aside as a refuge for the children of Israel and all the strangers and sojourners with them, in order that anybody who kills a nephesh (person, soul) accidentally may flee there. (15)

Deut 10:22 - On the day our fathers went to Egypt, they numbered but seventy nephesh (people, souls). And now look, Yahweh has made you as stars in heaven for multitude.

Josh 10:28 - Joshua conquered Makkedah, then struck it with the edge of the sword, completely destroying its ruler, and all the other nephesh (souls) in it. Not one nephesh was left alive.

32 - Yahweh gave the town of Lachish into Israel's hands, and they took it the second day. They smote it with the edge of the sword, then they smote all the nephesh (souls) in it, too.

11:11 - Israel slew all the nephesh (souls) in town with their swords. Israel slaughtered them until none were left alive to breathe. And after, Israel burned Hazor with fire.

Jdgs 16:28 - Samson called out to Yahweh, pleading with him, saying, Oh Yahweh, my God, please take note of me. I pray that you will strengthen me. I ask it just this once, my God. Please do it so I can revenge myself on the Philistines for putting out my eyes.

Samson took hold of the two center pillars, the ones on which that house stood, one with his right hand, the other with his left, and cried out, Let my nephesh (me) die (let my soul die) with the Philistines.

After he bowed himself with all his might, the house fell on all the lords. And the house also fell on those who were inside with them.

18:25 - The people of Dan told him, Do not let not your voice so much as be heard among us lest nephesh (angry) fellows fall on you and take your nephesh (life) together with the nephesh of all your family (your soul, as well as the souls of your whole family).

2 Sam 1:9 - He repeated it, saying, I beg you to stand on me and kill me. I feel the pain growing because my nephesh (life) is still in me.

I did as he told me and I stood on him. That killed him. I knew he could not go on too much longer, not with all the wounds he had suffered, then I took the crown from his head and the bracelet off his arm, and look, I brought them here to you, my lord.

David took hold of his clothes, and he tore them, and the ones that were with him did the same, and they all mourned and wept. They fasted until evening for Saul, and for his son, Jonathan. And they also fasted for all Yahweh's people. They fasted for the entire house of Israel, being they had been destroyed by the sword.

Jer 37:9 - Do not lie to your nephesh (yourself) saying, Those Chaldeans will definitely leave us. They are not going to go at all. Even if you were to defeat the whole Chaldean army encamped here against you, and even if there were only wounded ones left, I promise you those wounded ones will crawl from their tents and burn your city with fire.

Places in which **nephesh** has to do with human intellects, wills, wishes, passions, and needs appear next.

Ex 15:9 - The enemy said, I will follow them and overthrow them, then I will take everything they have for my own. And all my nephesh (lust) will be consumed on them, for I will draw my sword and destroy them.

23:9 - You must not tyrannize an alien. You know the nephesh (heart) of an alien, for you were once aliens in the land of Egypt.

Deut 24:14 - Do not repress hired servants, those who are poor, or ones in need, whether they are of your own, or aliens living in your land safely behind your gates. You must pay them when it is owed. Do not allow the sun to set before they are paid. They need their pay, and their nephesh (hearts) count on getting it. Pay them what they have coming so they do not cry out to Yahweh and bring a sin against you.

2 Sam 16:14 - The king and those with him were weary by the time they arrived so they refreshed (naphash) themselves there.

Job 7:13 - When I presume my bed could comfort me or my couch could lessen my pain, you scare me with dreams and terrify me in visions. I (my nephesh, soul) would prefer strangling and death over life.

18:4 - He tears his nephesh (himself, his soul) in anger.

Ps 78:18 - Israel's people tested El (God) in their hearts, directing that he give them meat to satisfy their nephesh (lust). Israel also spoke out against the Elohim, saying, Can God set a table out here in the wild?

Prov 23:2 - If you find yourself seated for dinner with a dignitary, think about what you are doing. And also, be sure to lay a knife alongside your throat if you are a person consumed by nephesh (appetite).

27:9 - Ointment and perfume gladden the heart.
All value a friend's nephesh (heart-felt) counsel (advice from the heart).

Ez 16:27 - That is why I held my hand out over you.
It is also why I gave you to the nephesh (will) of people who hate you.

Nephesh was also translated "body" and "dead body".

Lev 19:28 - You will not cut your flesh in honor of nephesh (dead ones).
You will have no marks printed on you.

21:1 - Yahweh told Moses, Speak with the priests, Aaron's sons, stating,
None of my people will be defiled by nephesh (the dead).
No one will go in unto any nephesh (dead body).
No one will be defiled because of his father or mother. (11)

Num 5:2 - Command the children of Israel to run the following types of
people out of their camps: lepers, persons with issues, and anybody who
was defiled by nephesh (the dead).

6:6 - The whole time he is separated to Yahweh he will not go close to a
nephesh (dead body).

10 - He must surrender two doves or two young pigeons to the priest by
the door of the tabernacle of the congregation on the eighth day. Then
the priest will offer one as a sin offering, the other as a burnt offering.
In this way, atonement will be made for people who sinned by touching a
nephesh (dead one).

9:6 - Some men were defiled by another man's nephesh (dead body) and
before long, they were told they could not keep the passover. The same
day, they went to Moses and Aaron, and said, We were defiled by means
of the nephesh (body) of a dead man. Is that why we are not allowed to
offer sacrifice to Yahweh on this day appointed for all Israel's seed?
Moses said, Wait here until I find out what Yahweh will do with you.

Yahweh said to Moses, Tell the children of Israel this: If any of you, or
any of your offspring, are unclean by touching a nephesh (dead body) on
a journey far away, you will still keep the passover to Yahweh.

19:13 - Those who contact nephesh (the body of a dead one) and do not
purify themselves have desecrated Yahweh's tabernacle. These nephesh
(souls) will be driven out of Israel. Because water of separation did not
get sprinkled on them, these people will be counted as unclean and their
corruption will remain on them.

Ps 17:8 - Think of me as the apple of your eye.
Hide me beneath the shadow of your wings.
Hide me from the wicked who oppress me.
Hide me from all the nephesh (deadly) foes who compass me about.

Hag 2:13 - Haggai asked, If someone that is unclean because he touches a nephesh (dead body) touches you . . . are you also unclean?
We are unclean, answered the priests.
Haggai told them, Then your people are unclean, too.
Your nation is not clean before me, either, says Yahweh.

To tie it all up: the Hebrew term **nephesh** has been related to God, to humans, and even to animals, but it was related in a totally different way, since none of the verses in which **nephesh** has to do with God reveals any information regarding God's **nephesh**. Every verse that relates to human **nephesh** declares human **nephesh** (souls) are transitory and dying.

There wasn't one verse saying human bodies return to dust, while the "true beings" in them live on. The verses all said "true beings" return to dust (their basic elements) instead.

What else can "You will die" and "You will go back to dust" mean?

Anti-christians (people who falsely believe they know the real Christ) also falsely think the old testament is less reliable than the new. On the subject of the Bible revealing the truth about human nature, all they can do is hiss, "Yesss, old testament writers and prophets had revelations of a divine sort, but they only got part of the truth, for they were not told human beings were immortal. Nobody in the old testament heard a thing about it. The Lord Jesus, who arrived later, spoke of it. It was the new testament writers to whom our Lord Jesus gave the true story on human immortalism."

Really?

So new testament writers agree with the anti-christians, hmm?

Is 42:1 - Observe my servant, the one I will validate, my chosen, the one in whom I (my nephesh) will be satisfied. I will pour my spirit out on him. He will reveal righteousness to the gentiles. (Old testament)

Mt 12:18 - Observe my servant, the one I have chosen, the one I love, a son in whom I (my psuche) will take great pleasure. I will grant my spirit to him. He will show the gentiles my righteousness. (New testament)

Matthew, in paraphrasing **Isaiah 42:1**, picked the Greek word **psuche** to represent **nephesh**, an Hebrew word used by **Isaiah**. The verse above is the only place in the new testament where **psuche** applies to God. The term was used in other places, but it always applies to humans, except in the following two verses which relate it to animals . . .

Rev 8:9 - A third of the creatures in the sea with psuche (life) died.
Every living psuche (soul) in the sea died. (16:3)

Psuche and **psuchikos**, a term derived from **psuche**, are seen about an hundred times in Greek scriptures. The words selected by renderers as stand-ins for **psuche** and **psuchikos** appear below.

"soul" (58) "life" (40) "natural" (4)
"mind" (3) "heart" (1) "heartily" (1)
"sensual" (1)

In the following places, **psuche** is applied to humans and humanity.
It's also applied to human life itself.

Mt 2:20 - After Herod died, Yahweh's angel came to Joseph in Egypt.
He said, Return the child and his mother to the land of Israel. I assure you, the one who wanted to end the child's psuche (life) is dead.

10:28 - Do not be afraid of those who can only kill your body, but cannot destroy your psuche (soul). Show fear, instead, before the one that can wipe out both your psuche (soul) and body in Gehenna.

38 - Any who will not take up the cross and follow after me do not merit being associated with me.
Any who try to preserve their psuche (lives) will lose them.
Any who lose their psuche (lives) for my sake will get them back.

16:25 - Any who try to preserve their psuche (lives) will lose them.
Any who lose their psuche (lives) for my sake will get them back.
What does it profit a man if he possesses the whole world, but loses his own psuche (soul)? And what price would a man take in bartering for his own psuche (soul)?

20:28 - The son of man did not come to be served. The son of man came to serve others and give his psuche (life) as a ransom for many.

Mk 8:34 - Jesus called the people, with his disciples, to join him, saying, Those who want to follow me must deny themselves. They must take up their crosses and live like I live. Any who try to preserve their psuches (lives) will lose them. But any who lose their psuches (lives) for my sake and the gospel's sake will save them.
What does it profit somebody to get the whole world, then lose his own psuche (soul)? What price would one ask in return for his psuche (soul)? Because this is true, any who are ashamed of me and of the truth among this adulterous and ungodly generation are the very ones the son of man

will be ashamed of when he returns in the glory of his Father, having all his holy angels with him.

12:28 - One of the scribes present at the debate knew Jesus answered well, and he asked, Which is the most important commandment of all? Jesus told him, This is the primary commandment of all: Hear, oh Israel, Yahweh, our God, is one Lord. You must love the Lord, your God, with all your heart, all your psuche (soul) all your mind, and all your strength. It is the most important commandment of all by far. A commandment with the second greatest importance is similar to the first, and it is that you must care about your neighbor the same way you care about yourself. A commandment more important than these two will never be found.

Lk 12:16 - He told them a parable, saying, The land of a certain well-off man produced an abundance. He speculated within himself, asking, What will I do now, for I have no place to put all the fruits of my labor? After, he said, I know what to do! I will rip down my old barns and erect even bigger ones. I will put all my fruit and goods inside them, and I will tell my psuche (me) Psuche, you have more than enough laid aside to take care of you for years. Relax. Eat. Drink. Enjoy life. But God said, You fool! Your psuche (soul) will be required from you this very night. Then who will get all that junk you labored for? It will be the same in so far as people who pile up riches for themselves, but are not rich toward God.

22 - For that reason, I tell you to take no thought for your psuche (life) and what you will eat, or for your body and what you will wear. Your psuche (life) is more important than food. Your body is more important than what it wears. Ravens are an example: they do not sow or reap or have storehouses and barns, since God provides food for them. Do you think you have no more value than a bird?

Jn 10:11 - I am a good shepherd. A good shepherd will offer his psuche (life) in place of his sheep. Hired shepherds are not true shepherds and they do not own the sheep. When they see the wolf coming, they desert the sheep and run away. I am a good shepherd. I know my sheep and my sheep know me. I know my Father as my Father knows me. I will lay down my psuche (life) for my sheep. **(14)**

17 - Because I am ready to forfeit my psuche (life) my Father loves me. My Father loves me, since I am ready to receive my life back again, also. No one will take my life from me; rather, I will lay it down myself.

I was given permission to lay down my life.
I was given power to receive my life back again.
I must do what my Father says I must do.

10:24 - The Jews elbowed up to him, roaring, How long will you make our psuche (us) doubt? If you are the Christ, tell us plainly.

15:12 - I implore you to love each other as I loved you. No one can show more love than one who lays down his psuche (life) for his friends. I will count you among my friends if you do as I ask.

Acts 3:22 - Moses related truth when he told the fathers, Yahweh, your God, will raise up a prophet like me from among your own kin, and you will listen to this prophet, for every psuche (soul) that does not conform will be plucked out from among the people.

7:14 - Joseph sent for his father, Jacob, and all his relatives, which was a total of some seventy or so psuche (souls, people).

20:24 - None of it moves me, nor do I count my psuche (life) of value.
All I want to do is continue on my present course.

Rom 16:3 - Say hello to Priscilla and Aquilla, my associates in Jesus, the Christ, who stuck out their own necks for my psuche (my soul, me).

1 Cor 2:14 - The psuchikos (natural) man cannot receive things from the spirit of God, for they seem foolish to him. He cannot understand them, for they must be spiritually discerned.

15:44 - It is sown as a psuchikos (natural) body.
It is raised into a spiritual body.
It is true there is a psuchikos (natural) body and a spiritual body.

46 - The spiritual body does not come first.
The body that comes first is the psuchikos (natural).
The spiritual body comes later.

Jms 5:20 - The person who converts a sinner from his evil ways can save a psuche (soul) from death. He can cover a multitude of sins, too.

1 Ptr 3:20 - Eight psuche (souls) were lifted up by the same water which destroyed all the rest.

Verses where **psuche** implies human minds, wills, passions, desires and needs can be seen next.

Mt 26:38 - He said, My psuche (soul) is full of sorrow. My psuche is near unto death. Will you wait here and watch with me?

He went farther, fell on his face, and started to pray. Oh my Father, he said, if there is a way that I do not have to drink this cup, please remove it. Yet, my will does not matter, for I am going to do whatever you want.

Lk 21:25 - There will be signs in the sun, moon, and stars.
The nations of Earth will be alarmed and uncertain.
The sea and waves will roar.
Their hearts will apo-psucho (fail them) when they see what is coming on the Earth, for the very powers of heaven will be shaken.

Acts 14:2 - Unbelieving Jews stirred up the gentiles.
They filled their psuche (minds) with hatred toward the brethren.

Rom 1:25 - They changed God's truth into lies when they began to adore and serve created things and not their Creator, making God give them to their wicked cravings. Women altered their psuchikos (natural) way into a way that was deviant. Men fore-swore their psuchikos (natural) use of women, and they began to flame with lust for one another, men atop men doing abnormal things. Because of it, they were given within them a just recompense for their foolhardiness, one which fit them perfectly. Also, because they showed no desire to retain God in their thoughts, God sent them the kind of thinking that lacked perception and their ability to see reality became clouded.

Eph 6:6 - Do not just do things that appear good like those who want to impress others; rather, act like you are obedient servants of Christ and work God's will from your psuche (hearts).

Phil 1:27 - Behave yourselves properly, as if you truly believe the gospel of Christ. If you do it, whether I come and see you or remain away, you will continue strong in one pneuma and one psuche (mind) while you labor together in the faith of the gospel.

2:19 - I asked the Lord Jesus to send Timothy to you soon. That way, I (eupsucho, my mind) will be at ease about what I heard concerning your condition. I know there is nobody else who isopsuchos (thinks the way I think). I know, too, there is nobody else who would psuchikos (naturally) be concerned about you and your situation.

Col 3:23 - Whatever you do, do it psuches (with heart).
Do it for the Lord, not to gain anything from humanity.
Do it and the Lord will reward you in accordance with our birthright.

1 Ths 5:14 - Brethren, we order you to warn the unruly.
Comfort the oligo-psuchos (those with feeble minds).
Support the weak and have patience toward all.

Heb 12:1 - Being we are surrounded by such an huge cloud of witnesses, let us put aside every burden, as well as the sins that so easily beset us. Let us run the races we were given with patience.
Let us look on Jesus, the beginning and end of our faith, who preferred the glory placed before him and put up with the cross, entirely ignoring the shame. Because he did, he is now seated by the right hand of God's throne.
Imagine all the opposition Jesus had to put up with, then know it is still possible you may also deal with the same.
Do not grow weary. Do not become feeble in psuche (mind). Remember this: you have not yet resisted with your own blood to oppose sin.

James 1:8 - A di-psuchos (double-minded) man is unstable in all ways.

3:13 - Who is wise? Who has knowledge among you? That person must show it by means of good acts and good conduct, with the humility born of wisdom. If you have bitter envy and strife in your heart, you should not gloat. Do not turn truth into lies. This type of thinking is not from above. It is earthly. It is psuchikos (sensual, natural).

2 Ptr 2:12 - They are like psuchikos (natural) brute beasts.
They deserve only to be taken away and destroyed.
They speak evil concerning things they do not understand.
They will utterly perish in their own corruption.

Jude 10 - They speak evil concerning things they do not understand.
What they do know psuchikos (naturally) they use as brute beasts.
What they do know, they use to soil themselves.

19 - They separate themselves.
They are psuchikos (sensual).
They do not have the spirit of God.

Both testaments state the "soul" (the life, thinking, traits, and so on of the human being) is without doubt mortal. And also, both testaments state the moment of death brings it all to a complete halt.

As always, anti-christians believe the opposite.

"Oh yeah!? Maybe the human soul isn't immortal, but those verses do not even mention human spirits. The Bible states human spirits are true and definite entities. The Bible clearly states human spirits continue on after their bodies die, doesn't it?"

The Spirit

The Hebrew word for "spirit" is **ruach**.

Ruach appears some four hundred times in the old testament.

In the King James Bible, **ruach** is found as "spirit" about two hundred and thirty times. "Spirit" was used to render **ruach** in the verses below. Wherever **ruach** shows up below you can rest assured it was rendered as "spirit" . . . except for the times it wasn't, of course.

Job 32:8 - True, there is a ruach in humans, but it is from the neshamah (inspiration) of the Almighty they receive understanding.

18 - I am full of words and the ruach inside me is forcing me to speak.
I feel as if my belly is full of new wine without a vent.
I feel as if I am going to explode like new wine in new bottles.
I have decided to speak in hopes I find release.
I have decided to open my mouth and reply.
I pray you do not let me respect anyone's status.
I pray you do not let me shower anyone with flattering titles, either.
I pray it because I am convinced my Creator will quickly blow me away if I start laying on the flattery.

Prov 18:13 - An individual who replies to a question before he has heard it almost always appears foolish and brings disgrace upon himself.
A man's ruach will sustain him even in a sickness, but who can deal with a person having a wounded ruach? **(14)**

Is 26:8 - I have waited for you, oh Yahweh.
My nephesh inside me desires only your name.
All I want is to experience you.
All I want is to know you at night with all my nephesh.
My ruach (the spirit) in me will never stop calling out to you, since after your judgments have come down on the Earth, every person in the world will be forced to practice righteousness.

Although the verses above apply to the spirit of and in human beings there's nothing in any verse to lead anyone that has intelligence to think this "spirit" is immortal. There's no verse claiming this "spirit" is a true entity with an ability to depart the meat-ball body, then flitter away to some new "celestial home" in the skies. Anybody who presumes the real human is an immortal and heroic portion inside that survives death must get the fantasy from another book than the Bible.

The next verse connects **ruach** (spirit) with God.

Gen 1:1 - To get it all going, the Elohim (angels) modified the Earth. Earth's atmosphere, as well as its habitable areas, was altered. Earth had been in a chaotic state and could not sustain life. Darkness covered the face of the waters. Ruach of Elohim hovered over the deep. Let there be light, said the Elohim. And (when the atmosphere had thinned sufficiently) there was light.

Following are verses in which **ruach** (spirit) denotes a gift or ability, a pouring out of power from the Big Guy, or the Big Guy himself.

Ex 28:1 - Place your brother, Aaron, along with his sons, apart from the nation of Israel to minister to me in the position of priests. Tailor holy garments for your brother, Aaron, making sure they are glorious. Make sure they are beautiful garments, too. Speak with the wise, the ones I filled with the ruach of wisdom, and ask them to tailor the clothes Aaron will wear when he is consecrated, along with garments he will wear when he performs his duties as priest.

31:1 - Yahweh spoke to Moses, saying, As for Bezaleel, from the clan of Judah, I called him by name and I filled him with the ruach of Elohim in perception, insight and awareness relating to all types of craftsmanship. Bezaleel will sculpt skillful patterns from gold, silver, and brass. Bezaleel will cut and set stones, also, plus carve wood.

Num 11:16 - Yahweh told Moses, Elect seventy men from the leaders of Israel. Choose men you know are true elders, real leaders of the people. Take them to the tabernacle of the assembly and stay with them until I come down and speak to you. I will remove part of the ruach which is on you and put it on them. That way, they can help you with the burdens of your people and you will not have to bear them alone.

24:1 - Balaam understood Yahweh was going to bless Israel. Because of it, he did not go like the other times to meet the enchanter; rather, he directed his gaze into the wilderness. He lifted his eyes and saw Israel camped in tents by tribe and the ruach of Elohim came upon him.

Deut 34:9 - Joshua, the son of Nun, was filled with the ruach of wisdom the moment Moses laid hands on him and the children of Israel followed Joshua and did everything Yahweh had ordered through Moses.

Jdg 3:9 - When the children of Israel cried to Yahweh, he dispatched a deliverer (savior) a man known as Othniel, the son of Kenaz. He was a younger brother of Caleb. Yahweh's ruach filled Othniel and he became a judge in Israel.

6:34 - The Midianites and Amalekites gathered with their eastern allies and crossed over (the Jordan) to pitch camp in the valley of Jezreel. And later, when Yahweh's ruach came on Gideon, he blew a trumpet. Abiezer heard and he followed Gideon. Abiezer sent messengers to everyone in the land of Manasseh. And all the people of Manasseh followed Gideon, too.

9:23 - After Abimelech governed Israel for three years, Elohim sent an evil ruach between Abimelech and the men of Shechem and it caused all the supporters of the Shechemites to treat Abimelech treacherously.

13:21 - When Manoah realized the man actually was an angel of Yahweh, he told his wife, We will surely die, for we have seen God. His wife said, If Yahweh wanted to kill us, he would not have accepted a burnt offering from us. Later, she gave birth to a son and named him Samson. Yahweh favored the child as he grew. Yahweh's ruach began to move him from time to time in the camp of Dan.

1 Sam 10:5 - You will come to the hill of Elohim (God). There, a company of Philistines is deployed. When you reach the city, you will meet a band of prophets descending from the high place with their psaltery, tabrets, pipes, and harps going before them. Yahweh's ruach will come upon you when they begin to prophecy. You will prophesy with them. You will become an whole new man then. You may leave when all these things (signs) have happened to you. You are free to do what you want after that, for God will be with you.

16:1 - Yahweh asked Samuel, How much longer will you be mourning over Saul? You know I rejected him as king of Israel. Rise now, Samuel, and fill your horn with oil, for I am sending you to Bethlehem. You will see a man called Jesse. I have chosen my own king from among his sons. Samuel said, How can I go? Saul will kill me if he hears. Yahweh said, Take a young calf with you. Claim you have come to offer a sacrifice to Yahweh. Invite Jesse to the sacrifice. I will explain all this to you after you anoint (christ-en) the one I have chosen.

11 - Samuel raised his horn of oil. Then he anointed the one Yahweh had chosen from among his brothers. And Yahweh's ruach was on David from that day forward.

1 Sam 16:14 - After his ruach had gone out of Saul, Yahweh sent an evil ruach to torment him. Saul's servants said, Consider this: we all know an evil ruach from God has come on you. All you have to do is command your

servants who live here with you to find somebody that knows how to play the harp. If they are able to find somebody, all that person has to do if God's evil ruach is on you is strum his harp and you will feel better.

Saul said, Find one who plays well and bring him to me now.

A servant of Saul told him, I know the right man. He is the son of Jesse, the one that lives in Bethlehem, and he really knows how to play the harp. It is not the end, since he is a strong man. And he is a valiant man, a man formed during battle. He verbalizes well. He is a good-looking guy. And, best of all, Yahweh is with him.

22 - So Saul sent to Jesse, saying, I pray you will let David stand before me, since he has found favor in my sight.

And whenever the evil ruach from God came on Saul, David picked up his harp. As soon as David stroked it with his hand, Saul was refreshed and he felt better because the evil ruach left him.

18:10 - The next day, when the evil ruach of Yahweh had overcome Saul, he was prophesying before his household, and David began to strum upon his harp as always, but Saul had a javelin in his hand this time.

All at once, Saul hurled the javelin, for he had grown quite fascinated by visualizing that if he could sling the javelin the entire way through David he just might succeed in nailing the kid to the wall. After David avoided him twice, however, Saul started fearing David, for he knew Yahweh was with David and had left him.

19:18 - David escaped, running off to Samuel at Ramah.

David told him all Saul had done to him.

David and Samuel quickly departed, heading to Naioth.

After Saul was asked if he knew David was hiding in Naioth in Ramah, he sent messengers to catch David. But as soon as they saw the assembled prophets prophesying, and Samuel before them, Yahweh's ruach came on the messengers of Saul and they began to prophesy.

When Saul heard, he sent more messengers and they began prophesying. After that, Saul himself left for Ramah, pausing by the well in Sechu to ask those present if they knew the whereabouts of Samuel and David.

Some in the crowd said, Do you not know they are at Naioth in Ramah?

When Saul left for Naioth in Ramah, Yahweh's ruach came on him and he prophesied the whole way from Sechu to Naioth in Ramah.

Saul stripped off all his garments when he arrived and prophesied naked in front of Samuel, lying there nude the whole day and night.

That is why even today you still hear the saying: Did Saul become one of the prophets, too?

David fled from Naioth. He went to Jonathan, asking of him, What have I done? How could I offend anyone? What did I do to your father that would cause him to seek my nephesh?

2 Sam 23:1 - Here are the final words of David, a son of Jesse, the man raised up on high. The man anointed by Jacob's God proclaims, Yahweh's ruach spoke through me and Yahweh's words rolled off my tongue.

1 Chr 5:25 - They sinned against the God of their fathers. Also, they whored after the gods (elohim) of the people that lived in the lands God destroyed before them. Because of it, Israel's Elohim stirred up the ruach of Pul, the leader of Assyria, and also the ruach of Tilgath-pilneser, the leader of Assyria, who carried them all away.

2 Chr 21:16 - Yahweh animated the ruach of the Philistines. Yahweh also riled the ruach of the Arabs living over against Ethiopia. When Yahweh did it, they all came up to Judah. When they got there, they forced their way into the city and carted off everything in the king's house, as well as all his sons and wives.

24:20 - The ruach of Yahweh came upon Zechariah, son of Jehoiada, the priest. He stood before the people, asking, Why do you keep on fighting against Yahweh's laws? Are you not aware your rebellion will fail? Since you have forsaken Yahweh, Yahweh has also forsaken you. The people turned against him, though, and stoned him with stones. They stoned him in the court of Yahweh's house. They stoned him just like their king ordered them.

Ezra 1:1 - In the first year of the term of Cyrus, ruler of Persia, so the word from Yahweh that Jeremiah spoke might be fulfilled, Yahweh fired up Cyrus' ruach, and it made him issue a written proclamation through all his empire, declaring: I, Cyrus, leader of Persia, was given every kingdom upon Earth by Yahweh, the God of heaven. Yahweh has also given me the responsibility of rebuilding his temple at Jerusalem in the land of Judah. I say any of his people among you who want to relocate to Jerusalem and build, may their God be with them.

5 - The fathers leading the people of Judah and Benjamin, as well as the priests and Levites, and all the others whose ruach God had raised, went up to rebuild Yahweh's house in Jerusalem.

Neh 9:20 - You gave your good ruach to teach them. You did not withhold your manna from them. You gave them water to slake their thirst. You sustained them for forty years in the wilderness.

30 - You tolerated them for many years, testifying against them by way of your ruach in the prophets. When they refused to listen, you turned them over to the people of the nations.

You did not completely annihilate or forsake them because of your great mercy, since you are way too gracious and kind to do something like that.

Job 27:3 - I will praise God while my neshamah (breath) is in me.
I will praise God while his ruach is in my nostrils.

33:4 - The ruach of God made me.
The neshamah of the Almighty gave me life.

34:14 - If God's heart turned against humanity, and if God took back his ruach and neshamah, all flesh would die together.
If God did it, every human would return again to the dust.

Ps 51:10 - Oh God, create a clean heart in me.
Renew a right ruach in me.
Do not cast me from your presence.
Do not take your holy ruach from me.
Restore me to the joy of your salvation.
Raise me on high with your limitless ruach.

104:1 - Praise Yahweh, oh my nephesh.
You are very strong, oh Yahweh, my God.
You are clothed with honor and majesty.

4 - The ruach (wind) is his messenger.
Flames of fire serve him.

27 - All living things look to you.
When you give them food, they relieve their hunger.
When you provide, they quickly gather.
When you open your hand, they receive all good things.
When your face is hidden, they know only terror.
When you recall your ruach (breath) they die.
When you send forth your ruach (spirit) they are created.
When you send forth your ruach, you renew the face of the Earth.

139:3 - Oh Yahweh, you know if I am going out or staying home.
You know all my ways.
You know everything I am going to say long before I say it.
Such knowledge is too far above me.
Such knowledge is so lofty I cannot comprehend it.
Where will I hide from your ruach?
Where will I flee from your presence?
If I ascend into heaven, you are there.
If I make my bed in hell (sheol) you are there, too.

If I could fly away on the wings of the dawn and live in the most remote land by the sea, even there your hand would lead me.
Even there your right hand would keep me safe. (10)

143:10 - Teach me to do your will, for you are my God.
Your ruach is good, for it is leading me into the land of righteousness.

Eccl 12:5 - Humans pass on to their long home.
The dust returns to the Earth as it was.
The ruach returns to God, the one who gave it. (7)

Is 4:3 - It will be that all those who are left in Zion, as well as all those who are left in Jerusalem, will be considered holy, even all the ones who are entered into the scroll of life in Jerusalem.
It will take place after Adonai (the Lord) washes away the filthiness of the daughters of Zion.
It will take place after Adonai cleanses the blood-guilt of Jerusalem by the ruach of fire.

28:5 - Yahweh of hosts will be a glorious crown.
Yahweh will be a beautiful diadem for the remnant of his people.
Yahweh will be a ruach of judgment to those who sit in judgment.
Yahweh will be power to those who turn back the battle at the gate.

29:9 - Stop and wonder.
Cry out and wail.
You are drunken, but not with wine.
You stagger, but not with strong drink.
Yahweh has poured out the ruach of deep sleep on you. Yahweh has shut your eyes. He has laid a covering over your prophets, leaders, and seers, and now their words are like writings that are sealed.
It is like a book was given to a learned person and he was told, Read this, I beg you, but he answers, I cannot, for it is sealed.
It is like a book was given to a person without knowledge and he was told, Read this, I beg you, but he answers, I cannot, for I am too stupid.

24 - Those who erred in ruach will understand.
Those who murmured will learn doctrine.

30:1 - Yahweh says, Woe to rebellious children who seek advice, but not from me. And woe to the ones who cover themselves with a cover which is not of my ruach, for they only add sin onto sin.

40:13 - Who directed Yahweh's ruach and who was his teacher?
With whom did Yahweh counsel and who instructed him?

Who taught Yahweh the way of judgment?

Who gave Yahweh understanding?

Who guided Yahweh along the path to knowledge?

Keep in mind that the nations are as a drop in a bucket, as significant as dust on a scale. The isles are trivial to him and dominions are as nothing before him. They are less than nothing, since they have no purpose (are useless, without profit) in and of themselves.

42:5 - Yahweh arranged the heavens and stretched them out.

Yahweh spread forth the Earth and that which comes from it.

Yahweh gives neshamah (breath) to the people of Earth.

Yahweh gives ruach to the people on it.

57:19 - When the enemy flows in like a flood, Yahweh's ruach will lift up a standard against him. Then the redeemer will return to Zion, to every person who avoids transgression in Jacob.

Yahweh has declared, Here is the covenant I will establish with you: the ruach that comes upon you and the word I put in your mouths will not be removed from your mouth. It will not be taken from the mouths of your seed, or the mouths of your seed's seed, either, not from this time until the end of the age. (21)

61:1 - Yahweh Elohim's ruach has come on me, for he has anointed me to announce good news to those who are humble, to soothe all whose hearts are broken, to advocate freedom for all who are captive, to break out of prison all who are confined, to disclose the day has arrived for Yahweh's good pleasure, and to announce the time of our God's revenge.

Yahweh has anointed me to comfort those who grieve.

Yahweh has anointed me to justify all who mourn in Zion.

Yahweh has anointed me to grant them beauty for ashes, oil of gladness for sorrow, and garments of glory in place of the ruach of heaviness.

And they will be called trees of righteousness.

They will be planted by Yahweh for his own glory.

They are the ones who will build up the old wastes.

Jer 51:11 - Polish your shields and gather your arrows.

Yahweh has raised up the ruach of the kings of the Medes.

Yahweh will send them against Babylon to destroy it.

Yahweh will finally get even.

Yahweh will get revenge for the desecration of his holy temple.

Ezk 36:25 - I will sprinkle clean water on you. You will be purified of all your filthiness. I will clean you from all your idolatry. I will grant you a new heart. I will put a new ruach within you. I will take out your hearts of stone. I will give you hearts of flesh. I will put my ruach on you.

You will abide by my laws then.
You will be pleased by my laws and respect them.
You will dwell in the land I promised your fathers.
You will be my people and I will be your God.

39:23 - They will know Israel's house went into exile because of its evil.
They will know I hid my face from Israel because it broke my covenant.
They will know I gave Israel into the hands of its oppressors.
They will know I fed Israel to the sword.
They will know Israel's lies and dishonesty caused me to do it.
They will know the real reason I hid my face from my people.
That is why I will return Jacob from captivity, says Yahweh Elohim.
That is why I will be filled with mercy for the whole house of Israel.
That is why I will be jealous for my holy name's sake.
I will do nothing before they bear their shame, however.
I will do nothing before they have paid for the evils they worked against me when they lived safely in their own land and no one made them afraid.
After I have brought them out of all nations, when I gather them out of the lands of their foes, I will cleanse them before every nation.
In that day, they will know it was I (Yahweh, their God) who let them be taken into subjugation among the pagans in the first place.
They will know I was the one who returned them to their own land.
They will know I left none of them out there among the heathen.
They will know I am never going to hide my face from my people again.
They will remember I promised to pour out my ruach on Israel.

Mic 3:5 - Yahweh Elohim has something to say to prophets who make the people walk in error. Here is what he has to say: you preach peace if you are fed, but conflict if you are not. And because of that, night will come upon you, for you will no longer receive visions. Things will now be hidden from your eyes. You will prophesy no longer. Watch out, for the sun will now set on the prophets and their days will all be dreary.
Seers will be wordless. Diviners will be taken aback. Their hands will go to their mouths because they hear God's word no more.

8 - I am filled with power.
I am filled with strength and wisdom through Yahweh's ruach.
I have come to publicize the sins of Jacob and Israel.
I urge you to hear me, you leaders of the house of Jacob.
I urge you to hear me, you leaders of the house of Israel.
I urge you to hear me, you who hate judgment.
I urge you to hear me, you who distort fairness.

Hag 1:14 - Yahweh stirred up Zerubbabel's ruach.
Yahweh stirred up Joshua's ruach.

Yahweh also stirred up the ruachs of the rest of the people and they all arrived and offered to work on the house of Yahweh Tz'vaoth (the Lord of Hosts) their God.

2:4 - Yahweh says, Be strong, oh Zerubbabel.

Yahweh says, Have no fear, Joshua, son of Josedech, the high priest.

Yahweh says, Have strength, all you inhabitants of the land, for I will be with you if you agree to build. If you do, my ruach will be with you. And it will be as it was under the covenant that freed you from Egypt.

Zech 7:8 - Yahweh's word came to Zechariah, saying, You must discern with honest judgment. Let everyone have love and mercy for others and do not oppress widows, those who are fatherless, the aliens, or the poor. Let no one hold wicked thoughts against others in his heart.

Rather than pay attention, they turned away their shoulders and plugged their ears. They did not listen. Their hearts were hard like granite, and they did not comply with the laws and proclamations Yahweh, the Lord of hosts, sent by means of his ruach in his prophets. This is why Yahweh of hosts has poured out such great rage on us.

When Zechariah prophesied to them, they refused to listen. Therefore, I would not listen when they cried out to me, says Yahweh of hosts.

I will scatter them now like the whirlwind into every nation, nations they are not even aware exist. After that, I will destroy their land to such a degree no one will even want to pass through it.

12:2 - I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling to all nations around her on the day they lay siege against Judah and Jerusalem.

10 - But I will pour a ruach of grace and supplication out on the house of David and on all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and they will look upon me, the one they pierced, and they will mourn for him like one who weeps for an only son. They will experience bitterness because of him, the type of bitterness felt by one who has lost his firstborn.

13:1 - A fountain will be opened up for the house of David in those days, and for all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, to clean away the filth of their sins. Yahweh of hosts has also said, In those days, I will purify the land. All names of idolatry will be gone. They will never enter your mind again, for I will drive those prophets and their unclean ruach out of my land.

In the verses below, **ruach** (spirit) is related to humans.

It's also related to human life.

Gen 41:7 - When Pharaoh woke up, he knew it was only a dream. On the same morning, his ruach was disturbed and he ordered all the magicians

of Egypt and the other wise men to appear, then he told them the dream. When he was done, none of them even tried to decipher it for him.

45:27 - Jacob heard everything Joseph had told them, but it was not until he saw the carts Joseph sent to convey him into Egypt that the ruach of their father, Jacob, was refreshed. He told them, It is enough for me, since I am now convinced that Joseph, my son, is still alive. I am also convinced I will see him before I die.

Ex 6:9 - Moses tried to converse with the people of Israel, but they did not listen because their ruachs were suffering under cruel bondage.

35:20 - The people of Israel all left after Moses was done speaking, but people whose hearts were stirred up, those whose ruachs were amenable, came back carrying gifts to be used for rebuilding the tabernacle of the congregation, as well as all its service and holy garments. So they came, men and women alike. All those whose hearts were willing returned bearing bracelets, ear-rings, finger-rings, necklaces, and every type of gem and gold. And all the people who offered gave a special gift of gold to Yahweh.

Num 5:11 - Yahweh spoke to Moses, saying, Talk to the people of Israel. Tell them this: If a man's wife strays from the way and sins against him, and entices another man to lie with her carnally, and it was hid from her husband's sight, but a ruach of jealousy comes upon him later and makes him suspicious of his wife, he must bring that wife to a priest.

16:20 - Yahweh told Moses and Aaron to move away from the people. Yahweh said he was going to consume them that very instant. Falling on their faces, they cried, Oh El!! Oh Elohim of the ruachs of all flesh, are you mad at the whole congregation over one man's sin??

Deut 2:30 - Sihon, king of Heshbon, would not let us go through his land, since Yahweh, your God, hardened his ruach, and also, he filled his heart with stubbornness so he could deliver him into your hand.

Josh 5:1 - All the Amorite kings on the west side of the Jordan, as well as the Canaanite kings over close to the sea, heard Yahweh had dried up the waters of the Jordan so the people of Israel could cross. When they heard it, their hearts melted and there was no more ruach in them because of Israel's children.

Jdg 15:18 - Because he was very thirsty, he cried out to Yahweh. He said, You have given great deliverance into the hands of your servant, but I am starting to believe you are going to let me die of thirst.

I am starting to believe you will let me fall into uncircumcised hands.
When God gouged an hollow place in Lehi (the Jaw) water rushed out.
When Samson drank his fill, his ruach returned and he revived.

1 Sam 1:15 - Hannah answered, No, lord, I am a woman having a grieving ruach. I drank no wine or any strong drink, but I am just pouring out my nephesh before Yahweh. Do not imagine I am a daughter of Belial, since it was my condition and much grief that caused me to speak.

30:11 - They came on an Egyptian, took him to David, and David gave the Egyptian some bread, which he ate. He was given water to drink, as well as some pieces of a fig cake and two clusters of raisons.
After the man had eaten, his ruach was rejuvenated because he had had no food or water for three days and nights.

1 Kng 10:5 - When the queen of Sheba heard about Solomon's notoriety relating to Yahweh's name, she decided to test him with tough questions. A short time later, the queen of Sheba came to Jerusalem pulling a very great train, one consisting of camels piled high with spices, plus a ton of gold and plenty of priceless stones, too.

Sheba's queen approached Solomon's throne and poured out her heart. Solomon answered all her questions, since nothing was hid from the king. After the queen of Sheba witnessed Solomon's understanding and after she saw the temple he had built, the food atop the table, the thrones of his advisors, the demeanor of his ministers, their clothing, their lackeys and the staircase Solomon ascended to reach Yahweh's altar, she had no more ruach in her.

Must one believe the queen was so blown away by the majesty of the Hebrew king her **ruach** (immortal spirit?) fled her body?

Must one believe her lifeless form flopped to the floor, only a liquidy and limpy lump that lay there alanguish alongside the throne?

Must one believe her immortal essence hovered above the scene as it attempted to compose itself enough to slither back into that sweet sack of skin without seeming too overly-frazzled?

Then one must believe, also, when her **ruach** did drape itself with her beautiful bag of bones, Sheba's queen shot Solomon shy little smiles and snickers as she murmured into the royal ear, "Golly Solly, will ya excuse the scene? I must be having another go-around with the vapours."

And what about Ahab's (immortal?) **ruach**?

1 Kng 21:4 - When Ahab arrived home, he was heavy and displeased over all that Naboth, the Jezreelite, had told him. He threw himself down on his bed, turned his face to the wall, and refused to eat anything.

When Jezebel, the queen, came to him, she said, Your ruach must really be in sad shape if you want nothing to eat.

Job 4:13 - Thoughts from visions in the night, visions that come when an human falls into a deep sleep, brought fear on me.

A trembling caused all my bones to shake.

A ruach passed before my face and the hairs on my flesh stood up.

It stopped moving, but I could not discern its appearance, even though I felt there should be something tangible before my eyes.

Into the silence came a voice, asking me, Is it likely a man would be more just than his God? Is it likely a man would be more pure than his maker?

7:11 - I will not remain silent.

I will protest in the anguish of my ruach.

I will complain in the bitterness of my nephesh.

10:12 - You gave me life and favor.

Your visit saved my ruach.

15:12 - How can you let your hearts drag you away?

How can your eyes not see you have turned your ruach against God?

How can you let words like those come from your mouth?

20:2 - My thoughts caused me to answer, and answer quickly. I know all about the accusation that I am shameful, and yet it was the ruach of my understanding which forced me to reply.

21:3 - Allow me to speak, and when I have spoken, go ahead and mock on.

As far as I am concerned, my complaint is not against humans. If it was, why is my ruach in such chaos?

Ps 31:5 - I put my ruach in your hand and you saved me, oh Yahweh.

You saved me, oh Elohim of truth.

32:2 - Blessed is the man to whom Yahweh attributes no iniquity.

Blessed is the man in whose ruach Yahweh finds no guile.

34:18 - Yahweh is close to those with a broken heart.

Yahweh will save those with a contrite ruach.

51:17 - The sacrifice God considers worthwhile is an humbled ruach.

God is never displeased with a broken and contrite heart.

76:12 - He will cut off the ruach of rulers.

He will be terrible to kings on the Earth.

78:7 - Let them put their trust in God.
Do not let them forget his works.
Do not let them fail to keep his commandments.
Do not let them be like their fathers, a stubborn and disloyal generation
with an unprepared heart, one whose ruach was not right with God.

106:32 - They irritated their God at the Waters of Strife by provoking
Moses' ruach and causing him to speak unwisely with his lips.
Because of it, Moses had to take the heat for them.

142:1 - With my voice, I cried out to Yahweh.
I lifted up my voice and called to him.
I poured out my disapproval before him, bringing him all my woe.
I (the ruach in me) was overwhelmed, but Yahweh knew all about me.

143:7 - Hear me now, oh Yahweh, for my ruach is failing.
Do not hide your face from me or I will be like those going into the pit.

Prov 11:13 - Talebearers reveal secrets.
People with a truthful ruach keep matters concealed.

14:29 - People who are slow to anger have great understanding.
People who are hasty of ruach produce nothing but nonsense.

15:4 - An wholesome tongue is a tree of life.
A tongue with malice in it can break the ruach.

13 - A cheerful heart causes a cheerful countenance.
Sadness of heart causes the ruach to be broken.

16:2 - Human ways are right in human eyes.
Yahweh, however, will judge human ruachs.

18 - Pride comes before destruction, and a proud ruach before a fall.
It is better to have an humble ruach, as people who are modest, than to
share the wealth with those who are proud.

32 - One who is slow to anger is better than one who is mighty.
One who controls his ruach is better than one who captures a city.

17:22 - A merry heart heals like good medicine.
A broken ruach withers the bones.

27 - A person with knowledge does not use many words.
A person with understanding has an excellent ruach.

25:28 - The person who cannot restrain his ruach is like a deserted city without walls.

29:23 - People's pride will bring them down.
Honor will uplift those who are humble of ruach.

Ecc1 7:8 - The end of a thing is better than its beginning.
People who are patient in ruach are better than proud people.
Strive to have a ruach that is reluctant to be angry.
Strive hard, for wrath comes from the heart of a fool.

8:8 - No one has power to deliver his ruach, nor will anybody have power at the time of death. There is no discharge in that war, and evil will not save those who are addicted to it.

10:4 - If your supervisor's ruach raises itself against you, do not depart from your position, for yielding will often cover a great error.

Is 38:16 - Oh Yahweh, I know all these things will bring life.
I know the life of my ruach is entwined within them.
Please give me back my health and let me live again.

54:4 - You must not be afraid.
You will never be disgraced or confounded or put to shame.
Your youthful scandals will never be remembered.
Your suffering in the lonely years will never enter your mind.
Your maker is your mate.
Yahweh of hosts is his name.
Yahweh is your redeemer, Israel's Holy One.
Yahweh will be known as the God of the Earth.
Yahweh called you as a woman forsaken, a woman grieved in ruach.
Yahweh called you as a young wife, one who has been rejected.
It was for only a moment I abandoned you, but I will bring you back with great compassion. I veiled my face from you for just an instant in great rage, but I will have mercy on you with everlasting kindness.

57:15 - The high and lofty one, the one who resides in eternity, the one whose name is sacred, says, I dwell in an high and holy place. I dwell in those who have a contrite and humble ruach.

65:13 - Watch and see: my servants will feast, but you will be hungry.
Watch and see: my servants will drink, but you will thirst.
Watch and see: my servants will rejoice, but you will know shame.
Watch and see: my servants will sing and have hearts filled with delight, but you will cry in sorrow of heart and howl in vexation of ruach.

66:2 - Yahweh says, Heaven is my throne and Earth is my footstool.

What house could you build for me?

In what house would I find rest?

It was my hand that made all these things.

I live in people who are meek.

I live in people with contrite ruachs, people who tremble at my word.

Ezk 13:3 - Woe to foolish prophets, those who obey their own ruach and see nothing. Oh Israel, your prophets are like desert foxes.

18:31 - Cast off all the sinfulness that caused you to err.

Initiate a new heart and ruach within you.

I see no reason for you to die, oh house of Israel.

I take no pleasure in anyone's end, swears Yahweh.

If you would only repent (turn your lives around) you could live.

21:7 - Your hearts will melt and your hands will grow feeble.

Your ruachs will faint and your knees will be weak as water.

You had better believe it, for it is getting closer.

You had better believe it, for I swear it will come to pass.

Dan 2:11 - Nebuchadnezzar dreamed a dream which troubled his ruach.

Nebuchadnezzar's dream caused his sleep to flee from him.

3 - The king thought, I have dreamed a dream and now my ruach is upset because I do not know the meaning of the dream.

4:8 - At the end of the line was Daniel, a man with the ruach of the holy gods. He entered and I, king Nebuchadnezzar, told him my dream.

When I finished telling him, I said, That is the dream I saw; now you, oh Daniel, must give me its meaning. None of the wise men in my kingdom is able to understand it, but I know you can understand because a ruach of the holy gods is in you. **(18)**

5:11 - There is one man in all your empire who has that ruach of the holy gods. In your father's day, light, understanding and wisdom (insight sent from Elohim) was seen in him. Your father, king Nebuchadnezzar, placed him in the position of master of all the magicians, astrologers, Chaldeans and soothsayers. An excellent ruach, knowledge, comprehension, and the ability to interpret dreams, solve complex matters and to diminish doubt can also be found in Daniel. Call him and he will decipher the dream.

6:3 - Daniel was preferred above presidents and princes.

Daniel was preferred because a faultless ruach could be seen in him.

I, Daniel, was grieved in my ruach. **(7:15)**

Wisdom is personified in the verse below and she has a **ruach**.

Prov 1:20 - Wisdom calls out in the streets.

She calls in the leading business sites when the gates are thrown open.
She calls in the cities, and shouts, You morons, how long will your lack of perception amuse you? How long will your shame enthrall you? How long will your foolish hearts reject wisdom? Turn about at my warning, for if you do, I will place my ruach on you and you will know me.

Has anyone seen any "immortal spirits"?

Has anyone seen anything "undying" or "not of this world"?

Nobody could've seen anything like that because there's nothing like that in the Bible.

Other verses in which King James' translators wrecked **ruach** follow.

None of the "immortal" and "unworldly" beings snuggled up to by anti-christians appear there, either.

"accept" (1)

1 Sam 26:19 - I pray, therefore, you will let my lord, the king, hear the words of his servant. If it was Yahweh that moved you against me, why not see if he will ruach (accept) my offering?

"air" (1)

Job 41:15 - His scales are his pride. They are all meshed together with a very tight seal. One scale is so near the others no ruach (air) can pass between them.

"anger" (1)

Jdgs 8:3 - God turned Oreb and Zeeb, the two rulers of Midian, over to you. What could I possibly do in comparison?
When they heard that, their ruach (anger) faded.

"blast" (4)

Ex 15:6 - Your right hand, oh Yahweh, is glorious in power.
Your right hand, oh Yahweh, dashed our enemies to pieces.
You destroyed those who rose against you with your great excellence.
You sent out your wrath and they were consumed like chaff.
Your nostrils gave a ruach (blast) and great waters came together.

2 Kng 19:6 - Here is what you will tell your king: Yahweh says, Do not be alarmed by the words you heard servants of Assyria's king speak to libel

me. I will surely send a ruach (blast) on him. He will hear rumors and go back to his own land, where I will destroy him with the sword.

"breath" (28)

Gen 6:17 - Like I promised, I will send forth a flood, and the waters will cover the Earth, putting an end to everything with the ruach (breath) of life living under the heavens.

Entering the ark, they went to Noah, two by two from each kind of flesh having the ruach (breath) of life. **(7:15)**

And the other flesh perished, all living on the land, all the birds, with all the cattle, also. Everything that moved on Earth, including all the human beings, died. All the flesh which had once lived on dry land died. All the flesh that had ruach (breath) of life in their nostrils died. **(21)**

2 Sam 22:14 - Yahweh thundered from heaven. The Most High sent out his voice. Yahweh shot arrows, also, causing his enemies to scatter with an immense commotion. The channels of the deep were exposed and the foundation of the world was smashed to pieces by Yahweh's roarings, by the neshamah (blast) of the ruach (breath) of his nostrils.

Job 4:7 - Do you remember any innocent ones being condemned?

Do you remember any righteous ones being cut off?

The way I see it, those who plow iniquity and sow evil will reap the same.

They will die by the neshamah (blast) of God.

They will be consumed by the ruach (breath) of his nostrils.

9:18 - Yahweh will not let me draw ruach (a breath).

I am filled with great bitterness because of him.

If I speak of strength, I discover Yahweh is the strong one.

If I ask for judgment, he never gives me time to plead my cause.

If I try to justify myself, my own mouth condemns me.

If I say I am perfect, all it proves is I am perverted.

Even if I was perfect, I would not know the way of my own nephesh.

Even if I was perfect, I would still hate this life.

12:10 - Who knows that the hand of Yahweh did not bring it to pass?

It might be, since he owns the nephesh of all living things.

It might be, since the ruach (breath) of all humankind is his.

17:1 - My ruach (breath) has become corrupt.

My years have come to their end and the tomb is all that awaits me.

19:17 - My ruach (breath) even turned off my wife.

It turned her off, although I asked her for the sake of our children.

Ps 104:28 - When you open your hand, they are filled with good.
When you cover your face, they become distressed.
When you take away their ruach (breath) they die and go back to dust.
When you send out your ruach (spirit) they are created.
When you send out your ruach (spirit) you renew the face of the Earth.

135:15 - Heathen images are silver and gold, no more than the effort of a laborer's hands. They have mouths, but they utter nothing. They have eyes, but they are blind and unable to see. They have ears, but they are unable to hear. They have mouths, yes, but there is no ruach (breath) in them. Those who fabricate them are just like them and those who trust in them are just like them, too.

146:1 - I will praise Yahweh with all my nephesh.
I will praise Yahweh while I am still living.
I will sing praises to my Elohim while I have any being.

Do not put your trust in princes or sons of men, for they cannot help.
Do not, for after their ruach (breath) leaves they go back to the Earth.
Do not, for that very day their thoughts perish.
Happy are those having Jacob's God to save them.
Happy are those whose hope is in Yahweh, their God.

Ezk 37:1 - The hand of Yahweh was on me and he carried me away in the ruach and set me down in the middle of a valley full of bones.
I was asked to walk all around and through the bones.
I saw there were very many bones in a very wide valley.
I saw the bones were extremely dry, too.
I heard Yahweh say, Son of man, can these bones live?
I answered, Oh Yahweh Elohim, who knows but you?
He said, Prophecy over the bones. Say to them, Ho, you dry bones, hear Yahweh's word. Yahweh Elohim says this to the bones: I will place ruach (breath) inside you. You will live, and I will lay sinews and flesh upon you and cover you with skin. I will put ruach (breath) in you. And when I do, you will come to know me, Yahweh.
I (Daniel) repeated the things he had told me.

As I prophesied, I heard a sound and I saw a shaking.
All the bones started coming together, bone to bone.
As I watched, I saw sinew and flesh grow over the bones and I saw skin appear and cover the bones, but there was no ruach (breath) in them.
Prophecy to the ruach (wind, breath) said Yahweh.
Prophecy, son of man, speaking out, telling the ruach (wind) that Yahweh Elohim says, Come from the four ruach (winds) you ruach (breath). Give naphach (breath) to these slain ones. Give them life.

I said what I was told to say and ruach entered the bones.
I saw the bones come alive and rise to their feet like a great army.

Yahweh told me, Son of man, these bones stand for Israel's whole house. It fits them perfectly, for they just love to say, Our poor old bones are all dried. We have lost hope. We are utterly cut off from all our parts. Preach this prophecy to them: Yahweh Elohim says, If you will just wait, my people, I will open your graves and bring you up out of them, then return you to the land of Israel and you will see it was me, Yahweh. Listen, my people, for after I have opened your graves and lifted you up out of them, I will put my ruach in you and you will live; and after I take you back to your own land, you will know it was Yahweh who vowed it and Yahweh who brought it to pass.

Hab 2:18 - What profit is there in carved idols?
What profit inspires their makers to take the time and trouble to carve them? Are the molten images they make able to teach? They must, for people who manufacture them falsely place their faith in the same dumb images they just carved themselves.
Pity those who urge chunks of wood to wake.
Pity those who plead with dumb stones to rise up.
Pity those who pray to be enlightened by them.
So what if they are inlaid with gold and silver?
So what, for it is plain to see they have no ruach (breath) in them at all.

"cool" (1)

Gen 3:8 - When they heard the sound of Yahweh Elohim moving about in the garden in the ruach (cool) of the day, Adam and Eve tried to conceal themselves from the appearance of Yahweh Elohim.
So Yahweh Elohim cried to Adam, Come out, come out, wherever you are!

"courage" (1)

Josh 2:10 - We were told Yahweh dried the waters of the Red sea when you left Egypt. And we also heard what he did to the two leaders of the Amorites, the two kings you completely consumed. After we heard of it, our hearts melted because there was no more ruach (courage) in us.

"mind" (6)

Gen 26:34 - Esau was forty years old when he took Judith, the daughter of Beerli, the Hittite, and Bashemath, a daughter of Elon, the Hittite, to him as wives. They were a grief of ruach (anguish of mind, bitterness of spirit) to Isaac and Rebekah.

Prov 29:11 - A fool speaks all his ruach (mind) at once.
A wise man keeps things inside until later.

Ezk 11:5 - Yahweh's ruach (spirit) was on me, and said, Tell them this: I have heard your words, oh house of Israel. I know what comes into your ruach (mind) . . . all of it.

20:30 - Question Israel's house. Ask them this thing for me: Do you not defile yourselves just like your fathers? Are you not acting out all their filthiness? Do you not carry out all their abominations? When you offer a gift or make your sons pass through fire can you say you are not soiled by your idols to that same day? Now you charge me, oh house of Israel? By my life, vows Yahweh Elohim, I will be accused of nothing by the likes of you. The impulse that has entered your ruachs (minds) will not reside there much longer, the thought that has you saying, We will be the same as the heathen (goi). We will be just like people in other nations, and we will worship wood and stone.
As I live, says Yahweh Elohim, I will rule you with a strong hand.
I will rule you with my arm out-stretched and fury going forth.

Dan 5:18 - The kingdom, majesty, glory and honor known by your father, Nebuchadnezzar, was given to him by the Most High God.
Because of it, your father had enough power that all people, nations and languages quaked and were afraid of him.
Shortly after, though, he allowed his heart to be lifted up and his ruach (mind) grew hard with pride. Because he let it happen, he was taken off his royal throne and all his glory was removed from him.

"smell" (8)

Gen 8:1 - Yahweh ruach (smelled) a sweet savor.

27:27 - Jacob hugged him when he got closer.
Jacob ruach (smelled) the scent of his garment.
Jacob blessed him, saying, I am sure this is the smell of my son.
Jacob said, It is the smell of a field blessed by Yahweh.

Ex 30:37 - Concerning any perfume you might make, you will not make a perfume for yourselves like the one holy to Yahweh.
Concerning people who mix up a scent like that in order to ruach (smell) of it, they must be cut off from the nation.

Deut 4:27 - Idols neither see, hear, eat, or ruach (smell).

Job 39:25 - The horse ruach (smells) the battle far off.

"tempest" (1)

Ps 11:6 - Yahweh will rain snares, fire, and brimstone down on them.
A terrible ruach (tempest) will be their portion of the cup.

"make of quick understanding" (1)

Is 11:3 - A rod will come out of Jesse's stem. A branch will grow out of Jesse's roots and the ruach of Yahweh will be on him, a ruach of wisdom and knowledge, a ruach of leadership and acclaim, a ruach of understanding, a ruach of dedication to Yahweh, and it will ruach (make him of quick understanding). Because of this, he will live in awe of Yahweh.
He will not judge according to the sight of his eyes.
He will not judge according to the hearing of his ears.
He will judge those who humble themselves with fairness.
He will judge the meek ones of Earth with righteousness.
He will strike the Earth with the staff of his mouth.
He will slay the wicked with the ruach (breath) of his lips.

"vain" (2)

Job 15:2 - Would a wise man repeat ruach (vain, out-dated) knowledge?
Would a wise man fill his gut with the east ruach (wind)?
Would a wise man attempt to persuade with unconvincing words?
Would a wise man convey concepts known to be of no value?
Will ruach (vain) words (words of wind) ever end? **(16:3)**

"wind" (90)

Gen 8:1 - Then Elohim remembered Noah and the other living creatures with him in the ark, and Elohim sent for a ruach (wind) to hover over the Earth and cause the water to recede.

Ex 10:12 - Yahweh said to Moses, Extend your hand out over the land of Egypt. Bring locusts down on the Egyptian's land and let them eat all the herbs in the fields . . . the few left by the hail, anyway.
Moses extended his hand out over the land of Egypt.
Yahweh sent an east ruach (wind) to blow on the land all day and night.
And when morning came, the east ruach (wind) brought the locusts.

19 - Yahweh sent out a fierce and powerful west ruach (wind).
It swept all the locusts off the land and blew them into the Red Sea.

14:21 - Moses held his hand out over the sea.
Yahweh called for a powerful east ruach (wind).

The wind blew all night long and caused the water to recede.
The sea became like dry land, with the waters divided.
The seed of Israel went into the midst of the sea as if on dry ground.
The water was like a wall to them on the right hand and left.

Num 11:31 - Yahweh sent a ruach (wind) to blow quail in from the sea.
It carried them in and dropped them near the camp.

1 Kng 18:45 - The heavens grew black with clouds.
A ruach (wind) and a great rain followed after.

2 Kng 3:16 - Yahweh says, Fill the valley with canals, and though you will see no ruach (wind) or rain, this valley will still flood with water, and you will drink until you are satisfied, you, and your cattle, with all your other livestock, too. Are you not aware it is but a small thing in Yahweh's eyes, especially since he also promised to hand the Moabites over to you?

Job 6:26 - Correct words can be powerful, but what is the value of your argument? Do you believe you can close the mouths of desperate people with words full of ruach (wind)?

7:6 - My days pass by swifter than a weaver's shuttle.
My days are without hope.
My life is no more than ruach (wind).
My eyes no longer see what is right.

The eyes of those who have seen me will see me no more.
The moment your eye falls upon me, I will cease to be.
There is a way in which clouds are consumed, then disappear.
The same way, those who go down to the grave cannot come back up.
They cannot return to their homes or visit the places they lived.
Therefore, I am not silent, but I speak in anguish of ruach (spirit).
Therefore, I complain in bitterness of nephesh.

8:2 - How much longer will you repeat these things?
How much longer will your words blow like some strong ruach (wind)?

Ps 1:4 - The ungodly are like chaff, driven away by a ruach (wind).
People lacking knowledge of God in their minds will not be at judgment.
Sinners will not be seen in the assembly of the righteous.
Yahweh knows the path of the righteous, but the path of people without knowledge of the Elohim will perish.

35:1 - Plead my case with those who oppose me, oh Yahweh.
Fight against those who fight against me.

4 - Let those who want to harm my nephesh be confounded.
Let them be put to shame.
Let those who want to hurt me be turned back and disoriented.
Let them be like chaff before the ruach (wind).
Let the angel of Yahweh stalk them.

78:38 - Yahweh was full of compassion.
Yahweh forgave their iniquity and did not consume them.
Yahweh put his anger on hold many times.
Yahweh did not show all his wrath, for he knew they were just flesh.
Yahweh knew they were just a ruach (wind) that passes away.
Yahweh knew they would never return again.
How often they angered him in the wilderness.
How often they grieved him in the desert.
How often they turned back and challenged God.
How often they limited the holy one of Israel.

103:13 - As a father pities his children, Yahweh also pities the ones who love him. He knows how they were formed. He remembers they are just dust. As for humankind, its time is like grass. Humans grow like flowers in a field, but when ruach (wind) breathes on them, the flowers are gone, and the place where they grew shows no sign they were ever there.
Yahweh will have mercy on people who love him through the ages, though.
Yahweh's righteousness will be provided to the children's children of the ones who observe his covenant.
Yahweh's righteousness will be on all who follow his commandments.

Prov 11:29 - One who plagues his own house will inherit the ruach (wind).

25:14 - Those who boast they are something they are not are like clouds and ruach (wind) without any rain.

27:15 - A cantankerous woman and a steady dripping on a very rainy day are alike. Try to ignore either and you try to ignore the ruach (wind).

Ecc 5:15 - He was naked when he came out of his mother's womb.
His time to depart will come and he will go the same way.
He will take none of the things he worked for with him.
How sad that humans go the same way they came.
How much did they profit, since they only worked for the ruach (wind)?

11:3 - A cloud that is full of rain normally empties itself on the Earth.
A tree that falls to the south or north is normally found where it fell.
Also, those who feel ruach (wind) will normally not plant.
And those who see clouds will normally not start the harvest.

As you are not able to comprehend the ways of the ruach (spirit) or how bones develop in the womb of a woman bearing a child, likewise, also, you cannot comprehend the ways of Elohim, the source of all things.

Is 11:15 - Yahweh will totally destroy the tongue of the Egyptian sea by a powerful ruach (wind). Yahweh will wave his hand over its river, and he will fracture all seven streams. People will cross it without getting their shoes wet. And an highway will be built for all who remain in Assyria, an highway like the one Yahweh built when Israel came out of Egypt.

17:12 - Woe to those who make sounds like the roaring of the sea.
Woe to the nations that pour in like a flood of many waters.
When they pour in, God will throw them back.
When they pour in, God will cause them to flee.
As chaff driven from the hills before a ruach (wind) they will take flight.
As tumbleweeds before a suphah (whirlwind) they will be whisked away.
Woe will come upon them in the evening and by morning they will not be.
It is the reward of those who would spoil us.
It is the lot of those who would rob us.

32:1 - You will see a king reign in righteousness.
His princes will judge with discernment.
He will be an hiding place from the ruach (wind).
He will be shelter from the storm.
He will be like rivers of water in a dry place.
He will be like the shadow of a great rock in a scorched land.

57:13 - If you call on your army, and it tries to aid you, my ruach (wind) will blow it away, but it is your army's pride that will bring its end.
I will give the land to people who rely on me.
I will give them the land and they will inherit my holy mountain.

Jer 5:11 - The houses of Israel and Judah have dealt very sneakily with me, says Yahweh. They called me a liar by saying, Yahweh did not tell us the truth. Evil will not come on us. We will see no sword or famine.
Because you say this, your prophets will be like ruach (wind).
Because you say this, my word will no longer be in them.
Because they support your allegations, I will bring it all to pass.
Yahweh, God of hosts, says, The words in their mouths will be fire.
Yahweh says, Those who hear will be wood.
Yahweh says, Flames will devour them all.

13:22 - Do you wonder why these things have come your way?
They have come because of all your evil works.
That is the reason your skirts were ripped off.

That is the reason your heels were made bare.
Is an Ethiopian able to change his skin? Can a leopard change his spots?
If they can, then those of you who are accustomed to doing evil can turn about and do good, but because you cannot change, I will scatter you like stubble blown by a ruach (wind) off the desert.
Yahweh says, This will be your fate, and it will be the measure I measure out to you. The reason I am bringing it on you is because you disbelieved my words and trusted in lies.

22:21 - I contacted you when you were doing well, but you said, I choose not to listen. Because you have disregarded my word from your youth, a ruach (wind) will now devour your ministers and your lovers will all go off into slavery. Maybe then you will be ashamed and regret all your evil.

51:1 - If you just watch, says Yahweh of hosts, you will see me raise the ruach (wind) of a destroyer against Babylon and her people.
It will be a ruach against all who thought they could resist me.
I will send fanners against Babylon and they will fan her land.
Fanners will fan her land and it will be emptied.
All the nations around her will oppose her when trouble finally comes.

Hos 8:7 - They sowed the ruach (wind).
Now they will reap the whirlwind.

Amos 4:12 - That is what I will do to you, oh Israel; and when I cause it to come about, get ready to meet your God, oh Israel. You will meet the one who raised up the mountains, who fashioned the ruach, who dictates human beliefs, who changes dawn into darkness, who treads on the lofty places of Earth. You will meet Yahweh, the God of hosts.

Jonah 1:4 - Yahweh called for a great ruach (wind) one that covered the waters. The storm was so bad it raged across the whole sea. The storm was so bad it seemed as if the ship would be torn apart. And the sailors were all full of fear, with each sailor praying to his own elohim.

4:8 - God sent out a vehement east ruach (wind) when the sun was rising. Sunlight began to beat down on Jonah's head until he just about fainted, and all he wanted to do was die.
So Jonah started moaning, It would be better to die than go on living.

"windy" (1)

Ps 55:5 - Fear and trembling fell upon me.
I was overwhelmed by fright.
I said, Oh, if only I had the wings of a dove!

If I did, I would have flown off by now and found peace.
I would have drifted away, fully intending to stay in the desert.
I would have beat an hasty retreat from the ruach (windy) storm.
I would be free of the tempest.

Finally, a verse where **ruach** relates to both humans and animals.

Gen 7:21 - All the creatures living on Earth, the birds, cattle, beasts of burden, animals which crawled on the ground, as well as all humans, died, every creature with neshamah ruach (breath of life) in its nostrils.

"But aren't there verses in the Bible that talk about a spirit, about a real and living being who continues on after death?"

The answer: if the verses are there, they're hidden from the masses and available to particular people only. It would be swell if those people showed the verses to the rest of us. That way, we'd have more to go on than all the other verses, ones saying nothing about some real and living spirit-person, ones saying nothing about some spirit being who continues to tick after its fleshly body has wound down.

As always, anti-christians say verses showing human immortality are found in the new testament alone.

Shall we see if the new testament disagrees with the old?

Ezk 21:7 - When they ask why you sigh, you must tell them it has to do with the news. You will tell them it is because you know some evil thing will be here soon. All hearts will melt then, all hands will get feeble, all spirits (ruachs) will faint, and all knees will be weak as water.

Is the emotion in the old testament verse above hard to identify?
It shouldn't be, for the feeling is familiar to all.
It's the state of mind known as dread.
It's the lack of passion that produces a spirit of wimpiness.
It's also seen in one of **Paul's** new testament letters . . .

2 Tim 1:7 - God did not send us a spirit (pneuma) of fear, but of power, love, and a sound mind. Do not be ashamed, therefore, to witness about our lord or about me, his prisoner.

Though the situations differ, the feeling's the same.

The Greek word translated by "spirit" in **Paul's** letter to **Timothy** is **pneuma**. **Pneuma** was translated with "spirit" or "spiritual" in excess of three hundred times in new testament verses.

Words used to translate **pneuma** in the King James Bible follow.

"spiritual" or "spiritually" (30) "life" (1)
"spirit" (288) "wind" (1) "ghost" (91)

Those laboring in auto repair shops become very familiar with sounds made by pneumatic-type tools. Even though they may not personally use pneumatics, they hear the high-pitched whine the whole day long.

Air causes the sound. That's why the tools are called "pneumatic".

Greeks used **pneuma** to represent air, especially air-in-motion.

Translators choose the English word "spirit" to translate **pneuma**, not because it has a thing to do with the Greek word, but because it fits the popular belief of their time regarding human nature: the delusion there's a protoplasmolastic parallel cosmos populated by gods, ghouls, and ghosts, plus the disembodied "spirits" of all dead humans, bad and good alike.

If it appears familiar, it's because it's the favorite fantasy every day, not because the Bible says it, but because of mis-renderings, blatant lies and bungles slipped in by translators, who are attempting to plump up the papyrus with their own peculiar prejudices.

Pneuma

"life" (1)

Rev 13:5 - He received permission to offer pneuma (life, breath) to the image of the beast.

"wind" (1)

Jn 3:7 - Do not marvel if I tell you you must be born again (from above). Pneuma (wind) blows wherever it wants. You may hear its sound, but you know nothing about where it came from or where it is going. You know nothing about those born of the pneuma (Spirit) either.

It's strange the same Greek word **John** used to represent "wind" was translated "Spirit" (with the capital letter) the next time it appeared in the same verse. The translators painted themselves into a corner again, this time forced to use "Spirit" or anything but "wind".

The belief this **ruach** or **pneuma** is a person, one of three people that make up the fiction called "Trinity", gains no support in the verses found so far. The fallacy of a triple-headed god must have come from sources other than the words of **John**.

There's no evidence any nations in the area in those days were goony over a triune god formed from a father, son, and holy spirit, either.

That flight of falsehood was fabricated closer to contemporary days than the day of Christ.

As always, no verses are found in the Bible indicating Yahweh's **ruach** or **pneuma** is anything but Yahweh's power. Personification of this power appeared when early translators assumed it was a person and introduced him into their translations. It came to pass because renderers wanted a reader to think the Bible says things renderers believe, not what it says when Greek originals are translated faithfully.

Capital letters are usually found in English words standing for a place or personality. There's little doubt a capital "S" was used above because translators fantasized the **pneuma** in the verse was their "Holy Spirit".

"How can we know that?"

The answer: because there's nothing in the verse to make anyone who thinks clearly believe it, that's how.

This is especially true of **John**, the apostle.

One other English word often used to translate **pneuma** is "ghost".

"Ghost" was sporadically picked to translate **pneuma** with a small first letter, but for the most part, its first letter was capitalized.

The following verses contain "ghost" with a small first letter.

Mt 27:50 - Jesus called out again in a loud voice.
Then Jesus yielded up (aphiemi) his pneuma (ghost).

Jn 19:30 - When Jesus was offered vinegar, he said, It is finished.
Then Jesus bent his head and gave up (paradidomi) his pneuma (ghost).

Instead of rendering **pneuma** as "spirit" or "life", the way they would over three hundred times, these translators picked "ghost", but there's no reason to select "ghost" because it's obvious **Matthew** and **John** only wanted to say Jesus died.

The same is true for **Mark** and **Luke** in the next verses.

Mk 15:37 - Jesus cried out in a loud voice and ekpneo (gave up his ghost).
A centurion alongside him heard him cry out when he ekpneo (gave up his ghost) and he said, That man was truly a son of the gods. (39)

Lk 23:46 - So Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, Father, into your hand I commit my pneuma (spirit).
After saying this, he ekpneo (gave up his ghost).
A centurion witnessed what went on. He gave glory to God when he said, Anyone can see this was a righteous man.

Translation of the last five verses is quite peculiar. It's odd because **Matthew** and **John**, in relating Jesus' death, picked **apheimi pneuma** and **paradidomi pneuma** when recording that event. Translators of the Bible, trying to convey the same in English, select "yielded up" and/or "gave up" to report what befell the **pneuma** of Jesus. None of this is a problem if people are told "ghost" is put in place of the word **pneuma**. This permits a reader to substitute "life" for **pneuma** in lieu of "ghost". Also, there's no problem if **apheimi** is translated "yeilded up" and **paradidomi** "gave up" as long as readers are told **apheimi** and **paradidomi** were also translated "forgive", "leave", "deliver up", "deliver", "suffer", and "betray".

Renderings of **Mark** or **Luke** in which "gave up the ghost" appears are also peculiar. "Ghost" was used to translate words relating to **pneuma**, a term used in Greece to refer to air or breath, but the word found above is **ekpneo**. **Ek** can be translated as "by" or "from" or "out of". **Pneo** was regularly rendered by "wind", "air" or "to blow", but there isn't one thing in Greek to justify using an English phrase such as "gave up". Nothing in Greek to justify using "ghost". Nothing there to justify translating one Greek word (**ekpneo**) with the English phrase "gave up the ghost".

"He breathed out his last" would've been okay.

"He died" would've been better.

It seems renderers go blind when they try to force their renderings to say things the Bible does not, for they translated **pneuma** by "spirit" in **Lk 23:46** (I commit my spirit) which is highly unusual.

Why not go with the existing motif?

Why not translate it: "He cried out, 'Father, into your hand I commit my ghost.' And after he said it, he committed his ghost."?

The reason it wasn't rendered that way is obvious.

The best translation of all may be: "Jesus said, 'My Father, I put my life in your hands.' And after he said it, he died."

"Gave up the ghost" appears again in the verses below.

Acts 5:5 - As soon as Ananias heard Peter's words, he fell forward.
As soon as Ananias fell forward, he ekpsucho (gave up his ghost, died).

10 - Sapphira, Ananias' wife, fell at Peter's feet, too, then she ekpsucho (yielded up her ghost). When the young men returned, they saw she had died so they carried her out and buried her next to her husband.
After this, a great fear came over all the church and over all the others who heard these things.

12:23 - Because Herod would not didomi (give) God the glory, one of the Lord's angels smote Herod and worms began to eat away at him.
Not long after, he ekpsucho (gave up his ghost).

Luke used **didomi** when writing about giving God glory in **Acts 12:23**. **Didomi** is translated "give" and that's fine, but it's using entire phrases, ones like "give up the ghost" or "yield up the ghost" instead of that one Greek word **ekpsucho** which isn't so hot.

Ek was seen earlier in **Mark** and **Luke** while examining **ekpneo**.

Ek was used by Greeks to mean "by", "from", or "out of".

Psucho was seen when studying the (so-called) soul.

Psucho was translated "soul", "life", "mind", and "heart".

If so, why is **ek-psucho** (a form of **psuche** compounded with a prefix: **ek**) rendered "gave up the ghost", being that **psuche** was rendered "life" in more than forty other King James verses?

If so, why didn't translators of King James' Bible simply say, "Herod got eaten by worms and died"?

Ghost (the English word) appears nine times in the old testament.

Gava is the Hebrew word it represents.

Gava was also translated with the English words that follow.

"die" (11) "perish" (1) "be dead" (2)

Past translators mutilated the Hebrew word **gava** the very same way they disfigured the Greek terms **ekpneo** and **ekpsucho**.

They used "yielded up the ghost" and "gave up the ghost".

All that can be said in their behalf is this: their inconsistencies have been fairly consistent so far.

Using a capital when translating **pneuma** was covered earlier.

Four verses where a word rendering **pneuma** was capitalized follow.

Lk 11:13 - If you, with your evil natures, wish to give your children good gifts, then how much more do you believe your heavenly Father wants to give his holy Spirit (hagios pneuma) to those who ask?

Eph 1:13 - You came into Christ when you heard the words of truth, the gospel of your salvation; and after you became believers, the holy Spirit of promise sealed you into Christ.

4:30 - Do not grieve the holy Spirit of God, since it has sealed you up to the day of your redemption.

1 Ths 4:7 - God has not called us to be unclean, but holy. Thus, any who hate do not hate humans, but God, who gave us his holy Spirit.

In **Luke**, **hagios pneuma** was a gift God gave to people who asked.
In **Paul's** letter to the **Ephesians**, it was power.
It was the power by which God sealed true believers.
Is there anything in the verses above that would cause a sane person to imagine **hagios pneuma** is a living being?

Obviously, the answer is: "No, there's nothing."

It must be brought up again that the idea **hagios pneuma** is an actual living being could only have come from sources outside the Bible, for it's not seen in the scrolls. Above that, there's nothing in the original Greek to validate using the word "holy". That pair of English words ("holy" and "Spirit") were at times fused together from one Greek word (**pneuma**).

"Why does it matter?"

The answer: because the use was never suggested by the word "holy" being printed in *italics* like other words not in the originals.

The word "holy" was awarded large and small first letters alike without any indication it was being used in relation to some third person of a triune deity found nowhere in the Bible.

"Father" is found sporting a capital letter and qualified by "heavenly" throughout the scrolls. "Father" should also be viewed in the figurative vein, since God isn't the literal father of anybody.

God is like a father, for all creatures were machinated by "him".

God is like a father, for the joy in "his" heart derives from providing "his" children with all their needs and righteous desires.

Truth is sane, but have you tried to logically contemplate immaculate conception if the "Holy Spirit" actually was a person? If "he" really was the third person of the godhead, then "God, the Father", first person in the three-ness, couldn't possibly be Jesus' father.

"Why not?"

The answer: because writers say it was the **hagios pneuma** (the third "person" in the tri-unity?) that overshadowed Mary and came on her and caused her to conceive the child. If **hagios pneuma** was a person "he" or "she" would be Jesus' true father, not "God, the Father". "He'd" have to adopt the role of "God, the Uncle" or some other indirect kinship.

So much for consistent inconsistency.

There's one Greek word seen with **pneuma** over one hundred times.

The word is correctly translated as "holy".

The word is **hagios**, a word Greek's used to stand for something holy, separate, or set apart for some special purpose.

Mt 7:6 - Do not give that which is **hagios** (special or holy) to dogs.
Do not parade your pearls before the swine because they will just stomp on them with their feet. Then they will turn around and tear you up.

Lk 1:72 - He will bring forth the mercy he promised our fathers.
He will remember his hagios (holy) covenant, the oath he took.

Col 2:16 - Do not let anyone judge you concerning food, drink, an hagios heorte (special feast, festival) a new moon, or the sabbath.

Eph 4:30 - Do not distress the hagios pneuma of God.
Do not, for it has sealed you until the day of your redemption.

2 Ptr 1:20 - Know above all that no prophecy in scripture came from the mind of a man. Past prophecy did not come because the prophet wanted it. Prophecy came in the past because the hagios (holy) men of God said what they were moved to say by God's hagios (holy) pneuma (Ghost).

There's nothing in the context of the final verse indicating a capital letter should be attached at the start of "holy" or "ghost" the way it is in King James' Bible.

Peter says prophecies didn't come by or through humans.

Peter says God picked special people to communicate his word.

Peter says God gave these people his special power.

Peter says God gave them **hagios pneuma**.

Some people think use of a capital is just great because **Paul**, in his letter to the **Ephesians**, warned them not to "distress" the **pneuma**.

They say the **pneuma** has to be alive.

They say the **pneuma** has to be aware in order to be "distressed".

They say the **pneuma** has to be a person.

They say this for sure, but consider the emotions seen in the verses which follow, then try to picture normal people believing the emoters in them are real living beings.

Ps 67:6 - Earth will bring forth her increase.
And God, our very own God, will bless us.
Our God will bless us and the ends of Earth will fear him.

76:8 - You caused judgment to be heard from the heavens.
Earth was afraid and kept silent.

96:11 - Let the heavens rejoice.
Let the Earth be glad.
Let the sea shout, with everything in it.
Let the field be joyful, with everything in it.
Let the trees of the wood rejoice.
Let the floods clap their hands.
Let the hills be happy. (**98:8**)

Is 35:1 - The wilderness and the solitary place will be glad for them.
The desert will rejoice.
The desert will blossom like a rose.
The desert will bloom profusely.
The desert will rejoice with glee and singing.

41:5 - The isles saw and feared.
The ends of the Earth were afraid.

49:13 - Sing, oh you heavens.
Be joyful, oh you Earth.
Break into song, oh you mountains, for Yahweh has comforted his people.

52:9 - Break out in joy and sing together you waste places in Jerusalem,
for Yahweh has comforted his people.

Jer 49:23 - Damascus grew fearful and she turned to flee. Horror was
on her, with anguish and sorrow clutching her like a woman in labor.

51:29 - The land will tremble and be filled with sorrow.
It is because all Yahweh's plans against Babylon are coming to pass.

Lam 1:8 - Jerusalem has grievously sinned, and this is why she has been
taken away. People who once doted over her now hate her because they
witnessed her filth. Yes, she sighed, and she spun around, and the ones
who were there saw the dirt in her skirts.
As always, what Yahweh promised her did not even enter her mind.

Few will agree that deserts, hills, mountains, isles and cities possess
a living and aware nature. Even though places were seen where material
entities displayed human emotions, few will say they were alive.

Few will say it because it's obvious figurative language was used.

"What's figurative language?"

The answer: figurative language is a tool. Everyone who talks uses it
to some degree to shade his or her verbiage, wishing to polish it up a bit
in hopes it will appear more compelling to others.

Two figures of speech follow: **Personification** and **Metaphor**.

Scholars struggle among themselves (because nobody else gives two
hoots) whether **Metaphor** is a kind of **Personification**, or if it's another
way around. They quarrel as if it makes a difference.

In their own circles, they battle as to whether particular figures of
speech are actually figures of speech at all. They argue like it matters
to anyone but them. They must be having a ton of fun, since it's taking
them so long to decide. All a person can do is hope when they arrive on
the same page they'll inform the rest of us.

In the interim, it must do to say a **Metaphor** is being used each time one thing is compared to another.

Metaphors can say things are like other things.

Metaphors can also say they actually are the other things . . .

"I tell ya, Rowdy, when Pecos seen old Texas Red comin' at him, dang it, he flared up like that pie-eyed paint pony Pa rode 'afore he got work, ya 'member? And when they finally come together, Rowdy, Pecos was on Texas Red in a flash. He fought like a tiger. Heck-fire, and dog it, man, Pecos *was* a tiger!"

Few could think the person telling Rowdy about Texas Red and Pecos was one of them Intellectuals, though he probably has far more common sense than any Scholar. Scholar or not, he used **metaphors** in telling his story. He said Pecos flared up "like" Pa's pinto. He also said Pecos "was" a tiger. But nobody lost sight of the fact Pecos was still human - except maybe Texas Red for a few moments there.

Consider the following **Metaphors** . . .

Ps 3:3 - You, oh Yahweh, are my shield.
You are my glory, the one to whom I raise my head.

18:1 - I will always love you, oh Yahweh, for you are my power.
Yahweh is my rock, my fortress, my deliverer, my God, my strength.
I trust Yahweh. He is my buckler, my horn of salvation, my high tower.

Prov 25:18 - A man who lies about his neighbor is a maul and a sword.
A man who lies about his neighbor is also a sharp arrow.

Jer 23:9 - My heart is broken in me because of the prophets, and all my bones shake. I am like a man who is drunk. I am like a man overcome by wine. And it is all because of Yahweh and his holy word.

Mt 23:27 - Woe to you, oh scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites!
You are whitewashed tombs, appearing beautiful on the surface, but you are full of dead men's bones and every other kind of filth inside.

Jms 1:5 - If anyone lacks wisdom, let him beg it from God, who gives to all liberally, without scolding. Ask him, for he will give it to you, but ask faithfully with no wavering. Those who dither are like waves of the sea. People like them are driven by the wind and tossed.
Let them not suppose they will receive anything good from Yahweh.
Double-minded people are unstable in every way.

Jude 11 - Woe to them!

They have followed the steps of Cain.
They have greedily pursued the error of Baalam for reward.
They have perished in the rebellion of Korah.
They are spots in your love-feasts.
They come only for the food and they stuff themselves to the full.
They have no fear at being there among you.
They are clouds without water, blown around by the wind.
They are trees whose fruit has withered.
They are trees with no new growth, twice dead.
They are worthy only to be plucked up by the roots and destroyed.
They are raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame.
They are wandering stars.
They are reserved for the blackness of darkness forever.

Metaphors like the ones above are easily recognized, though many do take them literally. It's been said some people worship rocks, as well as rock sculptures, like they were actually gods.

Personification also baffles people, but it shouldn't.

Personification is quite simple: a thing's personified when it's handed human qualities. It should be mentioned that only non-human things can be personified. To give human qualities to humans (who already possess human personas) would be grammatical double-dribble.

An example of **Personification** follows.

Oh, that goddess, the moon, glittering so bright in radiant billows as across the blackened bounds of heaven she hies, the shimmering silvery spherical seductive siren of the skies, her gown all agleam and aglow!

Why anyone would speak words like those above is up for grabs. The reason may be because saying them takes longer, which allows a speaker to enjoy being the Big Cheese longer. Who knows?

What's clear is the scrolls contain a lot of figurative language.

What's not that well known is it's up to readers to do whatever they can to ensure symbolic statements aren't taken to be real.

Readers must interpret symbols correctly.

Readers must be aware of keys found in other parts of the Bible.

Readers shouldn't be considered out of line for asking to know if the gospel given them is real, not when it's their own buns out there blowing in the breeze.

Readers must trust God's truth, not human fantasies.

Is there anything in the verses below in word or in context that even hints the **pneuma** is an alive and aware entity?

Mt 4:1 - The pneuma soon drew Jesus into the desert.
It was there he was to be tried by an adversary.
He was starving because he had eaten no food for forty days and nights.

Mk 1:12 - The pneuma drove him into the wilderness, to the place where he would stay for forty days to be tested by an adversary. Because the wild beasts were all around him, angels also watched over him.

Lk 4:1 - Jesus was overflowing with hagios pneuma (the holy spirit) when he returned from the Jordan. It was not long before he was driven into the desert by the pneuma. There, he was tested by an adversary over a forty day span. He had had nothing to eat the entire time, and when the test was ending, he was starved, causing the adversary to say, You allege you really are God's son. If so, change these stones into food and eat. Jesus replied, Scripture says a man cannot survive by food alone. Jesus replied, Scripture says a man needs God's word more.

Is it because Jesus was "led" by the pneuma?
Is it because only a person could "lead" anyone anywhere?
Is it because only a person could "drive" anyone anywhere?
Is that why the **pneuma** above has to be a person?
If so, the star the wise men followed to Bethlehem was a person.
It "led" them, didn't it?

Paul talked about "dumb idols" in his first letter to Corinth.
He said they were false gods in the twelfth chapter.
He said they had previously "led" believers away from the truth.
Were they also living beings?

Who "drives" people to the poorhouse?
Why are people "outflanked" by fickle fingers?
Where's all this going?
What about the verse below?

Acts 12:10 - They passed the first and second ward, finding themselves at the iron gate that leads into the city, and the gate opened up to them of his own accord. (See the King James version)

If using the pronoun "his" to speak of the **pneuma** of God and the one testing Christ causes people to imagine the **pneuma** and tester were real living entities, why doesn't using "his" in talking about the iron gate make people imagine the gate was also a real living entity? The verse says the gate opened up all by himself.

Nothing more can be asked from a word relating to a person.
Nothing more if what was being spoken of was a real living being.

Alas, though, the gate wasn't a living being.
So why must God's **pneuma** or Christ's adversary be living beings?

Look at the statements below . . .

"The context of the verse plainly says the pneuma of God is a person and that's why we translated it so."

"We know God's pneuma is a person so we translated it that way."

Most say there's no difference, that it all works out the same.

Most say it means God's spirit is a person.

Sure, there's no difference if designs on the tops of manhole covers are being discussed, but if a topic under consideration is interpreting a document claiming to be from God, the difference is enormous.

The two statements above are as opposed as opposed can get.

Translation of the originals doesn't require English words such as "he" or "his", "she" or "hers". This is a translator's own decision. But a verse has to bear out the use of a personal pronoun. "Its" would've been much more grammatically and logically accurate than "his" in writing about the iron gate in **Acts 12:10**.

Mk 13:28 - Listen to a parable of the fig tree. When her branch is still tender, when she puts forth leaves, you know summer is near.

Rev 6:13 - Stars from heaven fell to the Earth as if they had fallen off a fig tree losing her over-ripe figs when shaken by a mighty wind.

Acts 27:15 - Our ship was tightly caught, no longer able to bear up into the wind, so we let her drive.

32 - The soldiers cut the ropes holding the boat and let her fall.

It's just figurative language.

It's what we all use most of the time.

Another example: "The late rains brought a bountiful harvest."

True, but in a limited sense only. If it wasn't for the correct amount of light and dark, a proper range of temperature through all the growing season, the pain and perspiration of laborers who hooked the crop out of the field and rushed it off to market, the rain wouldn't mean much at all, except perhaps to Ma, who'll forever remember the late rains as all that danged wetness what brung all that danged mud Pappy and all them hired danged hands clomped in all over her clean danged kitchen floor.

Writers of the scrolls used figures like anyone else.
A full range of figurative language is contained in their writings.
You can't grasp the Bible if you don't know non-literal language.

It's been said a book speaking of matters of such importance as the ones presented in the scrolls should only use normal words, lucid words, words which aren't likely to be taken the wrong way.

Some say figurative language is misleading.
Are the following verses misleading?

Jms 1:4 - Let patience accomplish all her work.
Prov 8:1 - Does wisdom not cry?
Does understanding not project her voice?

Did anyone get confused?
Did anyone presume patience, wisdom, and understanding were human beings, sisters perhaps? Hopefully nobody did. It isn't likely any of the renderers think so, either, for none of the words is ever capitalized.
When a translator gives a capital letter to "Spirit" it only means that particular translator thinks the pneuma is living and aware.
It doesn't mean Bible writers thought so.

Ruach and **pneuma** appear as "spirit" minus a capital letter next.

Is 44:3 - I will pour water out on those who are thirsty.
I will pour floods on dry ground.
I will pour my spirit on your seed and my blessing on your offspring.

Joel 2:28 - You will see it come to pass.
You will see it when I pour my spirit out on all of you.
Your sons and daughters will prophesy.
Your old men will dream dreams.
Your young men will see visions.
Your servants and handmaids will have my spirit poured on them, too.

Mic 2:7 - You, who are called Jacob's house, is Yahweh's spirit lacking in power? Are you unaware these are Yahweh's doings?

Mt 12:18 - Behold my servant, the one I have elected. He is my beloved and my psuche is greatly pleased by him. I will pour my spirit out on him. He is the one who will bring truth to the gentiles.

1 Ptr 4:14 - When you are held in reproach over the name of Christ you should be glad, for the spirit of God and glory is resting upon you.

See the contradictory translations that follow.

See the **pneuma** appear in both verses with a capital letter . . .

Jn 16:13 - When the Spirit of truth comes, he will introduce you to the whole truth. He will not convey an awareness of himself; rather, he will show you what he hears concerning the future.

Rom 8:16 - The Spirit itself witnesses, along with our spirit, that we all are children of God.

In the verse from **John's** book, the pronouns "he" and "himself" were applied to **pneuma**. In the verse from **Paul's** book, **pneuma** was modified by the neuter word "itself", though capitalized in both verses.

Isn't it obvious **Romans 8:16** was the most appropriate translation?

In view of the above, it should also be obvious that the renderers of the King James version can be trusted about as far as the entire crowd could've tossed their king's favorite castle.

The following verses reveal how figurative language amplifies speech and enhances communication of concept.

Gen 4:9 - Yahweh asked Cain, Where is your brother, Abel?

Cain answered, Search me . . . am I my brother's keeper?

Yahweh said, What did you do? Can you not hear Abel's blood crying to me from out of the Earth? You will now be cursed because you did this. You are going to be driven from the very land that opened her mouth to receive Abel's blood from your hand.

Job 29:11 - When the ear heard, it blessed me.

When the eye saw, it bore witness of me.

Ps 42:7 - Deep called to deep.

43:3 - Send forth your light and your truth.

Let them lead me.

Let them lead me to your holy hill.

Let them lead me to your sanctuary.

57:3 - God will send forth his mercy and truth.

84:2 - How perfect are your tabernacles, oh Yahweh of hosts!

My nephesh aches for Yahweh's courts.

My heart and flesh cry out for the living God.

85:10 - Mercy and truth have met.

Virtue and peace have kissed.

Honesty will spring from the Earth.
Justice will come down out of heaven.
Yahweh will grant us goodness and our land will yield her bounty.
Righteousness will go before us and lead us in God's way.

114 - When Israel left Egypt, Judah was Yahweh's sanctuary.
When Israel left, she was Yahweh's dominion.
When the sea saw, she fled.
When Jordan saw, he was driven back.
When the mountains saw, they romped like rams.
When the little hills saw, they leaped like lambs.
You, oh sea, what ailed you that you would flee?
You, oh Jordan, what drove you back?
You, oh mountains, why did you romp like rams?
You, oh little hills, why did you leap like lambs?
You, oh Earth, had better tremble at the presence of Yahweh, the God of Jacob.

Hab 2:11 - A stone will cry from the wall. A beam of timber will reply.

Jn 7:42 - Has Scripture not said the Christ will evolve from the seed of David? Will he not be from Bethlehem, the town where David lived?

Rom 4:3 - What does the Scripture say?
Scripture says Abraham believed God and his belief was considered the same as righteousness.

9:14 - What did we say? Did we call God unrighteous? God forbid! God was the one who told Moses, I will have mercy on those for whom I have mercy, and I will have pity on those for whom I have pity.
It is not left to those who desire, or those who run. It is left to God to exhibit mercy, for Scripture told Pharaoh, It was for that same cause I raised you up. It was so I could manifest my power through you. It was so my name would be known in all the Earth.

10:11 - Scripture says, Those who trust him will not be ashamed.
Scripture says, There is no more difference between Jews and gentiles.
The Lord, who is over all, is plenteous toward those he calls.
Those who have taken Yahweh's name upon themselves will be saved.

Gal 3:7 - Be assured of this: those having faith are children of Abraham because Scripture, as if it knew in advance God would justify gentiles by and through faith, revealed the gospel to Abraham, too, when it said, All people will be blessed because of you. Due to this, all who believe will be blessed with faithful Abraham.

Jms 4:5 - Are you not aware, oh adulterers and adulteresses, friendship with the world is loathed by God? Any who are friends with those in the world are enemies of God. Do you think Scripture is not right to say the pneuma in us just loves to be jealous?

Rev 22:16 - I, Jesus, have sent my angel.
I trust you to bring these things to the attention of the churches.
I am the root and branch of David.
I am the bright and morning star.
Both the spirit and bride say, Come.
Let those who hear also say, Come.
Let those who thirst come and freely drink the water of life.

Were you confused? Did you guess Abel's blood, the depths, David's heart, the beam of timber, or the Scripture were alive? Isn't it evident **hagios pneuma** is that special power the Elohim employ to bring desired things to pass? Why must it be a person?

Mk 13:9 - Be aware of yourselves, since they will bring you before their councils. You will be flogged in their synagogues; also, they will haul you before magistrates and leaders for my sake, where you will give witness against them. It will come to pass because this gospel must be revealed before all people. When they lead you out, hoping to hand you over, give no thought to what you will say in advance. Do not fret about it because you will be given words when it is time. You will not be doing the talking, but the **hagios pneuma** of God will speak through you.

Lk 12:11 - When they drag you into their synagogues before constables and powers, do not be worried about what you are thinking or things you must say, for **hagios pneuma** will tell you what to say when it is time.

Act 8:26 - The Lord's angel spoke to Philip.
The pneuma spoke to Philip. (29)

39 - When they came up from under the water, the pneuma of the Lord caught Philip away, and the eunuch never saw him again.

23:9 - A loud cry arose, and the scribes siding with the Pharisees got up and began to oppose, saying, There is no evil in this man. So if a pneuma or angel spoke to him, let us take heed we are not fighting God.

1 Ptr 1:9 - It is the end of your faith, the deliverance of your psuche. It is the very salvation scrutinized by the prophets who previously forecast the mercy that has now come on you. This is what they assiduously sought, begging to find out what and when the pneuma of Christ in them

meant by fore-telling the sufferings of Christ, plus the glory that would come after. They knew then that the words they uttered were not only for themselves, but for us, also, who taught you the good news they got from the **hagios pneuma** sent down out of heaven.

Where is it said **hagios pneuma** is a person?

Nowhere, that's where.

In order to prop up whichever off-the-wall beliefs they favor at the moment, translators tweak their English by using capital letters with no rhyme or reason, seemingly unaware the task of translating the written word into another language carries unique responsibilities.

Translators seem unconcerned, too, that rendering something saying it's the word of God carries an extra-high level of responsibility.

Those who slant common words in uncommon directions quietly state their belief that average readers are far too foolish to get the hang of the originals on their own.

Jesus called God **pneuma** in the following verse.

Jn 4:21 - Jesus said, Trust me, woman, a day will come when the Father will not be worshipped on this mountain alone, or even only in Jerusalem. You do not know what you worship. We Jews know what we worship, for salvation will be manifest through the Jews.

A day will come (really, it is already here) when all true believers will be worshipping the Father in **pneuma** (spirit) and integrity. Our Father has been seeking the same to worship him. God is **pneuma**, and the ones who worship him must worship him in **pneuma** and truth.

She said, I know that Messiah, the one called the Christ, is coming soon. When he gets here, he will teach us all things.

Jesus said, The one you are talking to is the Christ.

Believers received **hagios pneuma**.

Lk 1:13 - The angel said, Do not be frightened, Zacharias, because your petitions will now be answered. Elisabeth, your wife, will give birth to a son. You will name him John. He will bring you true joy and happiness. His appearance will also delight many others.

He will be grand in Yahweh's sight.

He will drink no wine or any other strong drink.

He will be filled with **hagios pneuma** from his mother's womb.

He will bring many of Israel's seed back to the Lord, their God.

39 - Mary readied herself and left quickly, going into the hill country to a city in Judah. When she arrived, she went into the home of Zacharias and acknowledged Elisabeth.

As soon as Elisabeth heard Mary, the babe in her womb leaped.
After this, Elisabeth was filled with *hagios pneuma*, and she cried out in a loud voice, saying, You have been blessed over all women.
Elisabeth also said, And the fruit of your womb is blessed, too.

Mt 1:20 - Yahweh's angel appeared to him in a dream, saying, Oh Joseph, you son of David, do not refuse to take Mary as a wife, for her child was conceived by *hagios pneuma* (holy spirit). Mary will bear a son. You must name him Yeshua (savior) for he will save his people from their sins.

Lk 2:25 - There was a man in Jerusalem named Simeon who was a decent and devout man. He waited only for Israel's consolation. *Hagios pneuma* was on him, and the *hagios pneuma* revealed to him that he was not going to see death before he saw the Lord's Christ.

Simeon went in *pneuma* to the temple when the parents of Jesus arrived to have him circumcised. He lifted the child in his arms and he glorified God, saying, Lord, you can now let your servant die in peace, since this is what you meant would come about by saying I would behold the salvation you will manifest before all nations: a light to teach the gentiles and the glory of your people, Israel.

Mt 3:1 - John, the Baptizer, came to preach in the deserts of Judea.

11 - I baptize with water unto repentance, this is true, but the one who will come after me is way more important, and I am not worthy to carry his sandals. He is the one who will baptize you with *hagios pneuma*.

3:13 - Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan to be baptized by John. John refused, saying, I should be baptized by you and you come to me? Jesus replied, Do it this once, for we must act properly.
John did it.

Jesus was baptized, and after he rose up out of the water, the heavens were opened to John, and he saw God's *pneuma* descend as a dove would descend, then it (the *pneuma*) came down on Jesus.

John heard a voice from heaven, too, saying, He is my beloved son and I am greatly pleased by him.

Lk 4:1 - Jesus came back from the Jordan full of *hagios pneuma*. Soon, however, he was driven into the desert by the *pneuma* for a forty day period of testing by his *diabolos*.

14 - Jesus came back from the desert and arrived in Galilee full of the power of *pneuma*. And news of him sped through all the area round and about, where he taught in their synagogues and was praised by all.

He came to Nazareth later, where he was raised. As always, he entered the synagogue on the sabbath. He stood to read and the book of Isaiah, the prophet, was given to him.

Jesus rolled out the scroll, and he saw the verse in which it was written: Pneuma (spirit) from the Lord is upon me, for the Lord has anointed me.

Jn 3:34 - The one God sent speaks God's words.

The one God sent has received God's pneuma without measure.

The Father loves the son and has put everything in his hands.

Those who believe into the son will gain a new life in the coming age.

Those who refuse to believe into the son will not receive life.

The wrath of God will reside on them instead.

6:63 - Pneuma gives life and the flesh is of no profit.

My words contain pneuma and life, but some of you do not believe.

Jesus knew from the start who did not believe.

Jesus knew who would betray him, too.

Jesus said, That is why I told you people cannot come to me unless they are drawn by my Father.

7:37 - On the final day of the feast, the great day, Jesus rose, and said, All who thirst can come to me and drink. Scripture says a river of living water will flow from the bellies of those who believe into me.

He was speaking about the pneuma believers were going to receive, since hagios pneuma would not be given until after Jesus was glorified.

Mt 12:31 - This is the reason I told you every kind of sin and blasphemy may be forgiven, all except blasphemy against the pneuma. That type of blasphemy will not be forgiven. People who speak against the son of man can be forgiven, but people who speak against hagios pneuma will not get forgiveness at all, not in this age and certainly not in the age to come.

Did Jesus mean the "Holy Spirit" is greater than himself?

Did Jesus mean the "Holy Spirit" never has to forgive "His" critics?

Did Jesus mean he himself is so inferior he must forgive?

Didn't Jesus actually mean if people disallow the power (the pneuma or spirit) God uses to teach they're also rejecting what God says?

Didn't Jesus actually mean if people disregard God's word they can't learn the truth and they won't ever be saved?

Go ahead, pick one or another.

Or, if you'd rather, pick none and be lost for sure.

Lk 11:13 - If you, who have an evil nature, love giving delightful gifts to your children, how much more do you assume your heavenly Father loves giving hagios pneuma to those who ask?

Jn 14:15 - If you love me, you will follow my commandments.

If you do follow my commandments, I will pray to the Father and he will send you another, one that will stay with you through the ages. God will send you the pneuma of truth.

Those in the world cannot receive the truth. That is because those who are in the world do not get it. And people in the world will not believe it even when they see it. You believe now because it is here with you. You will believe then because it will be in you.

26 - God will send the hagios pneuma to stay with you.

It will be sent in my name and it will teach you all things.

It will also help you remember everything I told you.

15:26 - I will send you a pneuma of truth from the Father, and it will be a witness of me. You will be my witnesses, too, since you have been with me from the beginning.

16:7 - When I informed you I must go, I only gave you the facts, for if I do not go the pneuma of truth cannot come to you. How am I going to send it to you if I do not leave first?

12 - Many things cannot be explained to you now, for you cannot bear up to them. However, when the pneuma of truth comes, it will lead you into all truth. It will not give you knowledge of itself; rather, it will help you believe what you already heard. And also, it will show you things waiting to happen. I will be glorified by it, since it will show things that have to do with me. The Father has given me everything he owns. This is why I said the pneuma will reveal truths about me and help you accept them.

1 Cor 6:9 - Can you not see that the unrighteous will never inherit God's kingdom? Do not be deceived. Fornicators, idolaters, adulterers, wimps, people who abuse themselves as the pagans, thieves, the jealous, drunks, slanderers, and extortioners will never enter God's kingdom.

Most of you were just like that, but now you are cleansed. And you have been sanctified now, too, forgiven by way of the name of the Lord Jesus through our God's pneuma.

All things are legal to me, but all things are not necessarily profitable.

All things are legal to me, but I refuse to let any of them have influence over me.

Mt 28:16 - Go and instruct people in all nations, baptizing them into the Father's name, and into the Son, through hagios pneuma. Teach them to walk in conformity with the commandments I gave you. Believe me, I am going to be with you in every way to the end of the age.

Jn 20:19 - It was evening of the first day of the week.
The disciples were locked behind the door of the house where they met.
They were there because they feared the Jews.
Then suddenly, Jesus appeared.
There is no cause for alarm, he said, standing among them.
Then he showed them his hands and his side.
The disciples were glad when they realized it was their Lord.

Jesus repeated what he had told them earlier.
Jesus said, Do not worry, for I will send you the way my Father sent me.
Breathing out (emphusao) on them, he said, Receive the hagios pneuma.
Any whose sins you forgive will be forgiven.
Any whose sins you retain will be retained.

Acts 1:4 - Do not leave Jerusalem, Jesus told them. Instead, stay here and wait until the Father fulfills his promise. Truthfully, John baptized you using water. But next time, you will be baptized with hagios pneuma, and it will not be too many days from now.

Since Jesus remained there for such a long while with them, they asked, Lord, are you going to restore the kingdom to Israel now?
Jesus said, There is no need for you to know the times or seasons which the Father keeps in his own power. What you must do now is believe you will receive power when hagios pneuma has come upon you. You are going to need it, since you must testify regarding me in Judea and Samaria, as well as in some of the most distant lands on Earth.

2:1 - When the day of Pentecost arrived, the believers were all bunched together in one room. And the sound of a great and rushing wind, as if it came from heaven, suddenly filled the room where they had gathered.
All of them saw cloven tongues as flames of a fire hover over them.
All of them were filled with hagios pneuma.
And they all spoke in whatever foreign tongues the pneuma gave them.

Because it was the Pentecostal festival, faithful Jews from every nation under the heavens had come to Jerusalem, also. When they heard about something happening among the followers of Jesus, a crowd formed; and not long after that, they were astonished, for they were all able to hear the disciples speaking the very same words they spoke themselves.
And the people marveled. They wondered aloud, asking one another, Are these not all Galileans speaking? So why is it we can hear their words in the very same languages we all learned from birth?

32 - The Jesus of whom I previously spoke was raised from the dead.
He was raised by God and we were all witnesses.

Because he was elevated to God's right hand and because he was granted **hagios pneuma**, thus carrying out the covenant enacted by the Father, he has been authorized to send this phenomenon you all see and hear.

38 - Peter said, You must repent and be baptized into the name of Jesus Christ so your sins can be absolved and you can be given gifts from God's **hagios pneuma**. This promise was made to you and your descendants also, as well as those afar off, as many as are called by the Lord, our God.

In a letter to the believers in Corinth, **Paul** describes the assortment of "gifts" given to believers of his age, during that particular outpouring of the **hagios pneuma**.

1 Cor 12:1 - It does not make me joyful to learn you are unfamiliar with the concept of pneumatikos (spiritual) gifts.

4 - There are many gifts, but they all come from the same **pneuma**.
There are many levels of administration, but only one Lord.
There are many ways in which the **pneuma** can be manifested.
There is only one God working in them all, though.
These manifestations of **pneuma** are granted to believers in hope.
The hope is that each believer will be of profit to all the rest.
A certain believer is given words of wisdom by the **pneuma**.
Another gets words of knowledge by the same **pneuma**.
Another gets faith by the same **pneuma**.
Another gets a gift of healing by the same **pneuma**.
Another gets an ability to work miracles.
Another gets a gift of prophecy.
Another gets an ability to identify different **pneuma**.
Another gets an ability to speak foreign languages.
Another gets an ability to interpret foreign languages.
But it all works through the very same **pneuma**, which gives to everybody whatever it wants. Like all bodies are one, though they have many parts, with each part being just one member of the body, even though they are many, so also, it is the same when it comes to the body of Christ, for we were all baptized into one body only by means of one **pneuma**; it does not matter if we were Jews or gentiles, slaves or free, for we have all drunk of the same **pneuma**, being Christ's body is not one member, but many.

When a body of believers had been shaped, and ample evidence showing Jesus truly was the promised son had been placed on parchment, the power of **hagios pneuma** was withdrawn.

Did you know that **hagios pneuma** was only passed along by a laying-on of an apostle's hands?

Continue reading if you want to be convinced of it.

Signs and wonders wouldn't be much help in the following age, an era during which salvation could only be "earned" by believers showing faith in words spoken by apostles and prophets, not owing to miracles worked or witnessed by means of the **hagios pneuma**.

Examples of how **pneuma** applies to a message or messenger sent, or a gift of power or capacity given, follow. The pneuma is **hagios pneuma**, that unique power Yahweh reserves for special purposes.

The reason for giving **hagios pneuma** in the first century was for the intent of altering tempo and circumstance during the short spell of time Yahweh advanced and enhanced his plan of salvation.

Acts 3:1 - Peter and John went to the temple during the hour of prayer, the ninth hour. A certain man, crippled since birth, was being carried to the gate of the temple known as the Beautiful Gate, where he laid every day begging from people entering the temple.

When he saw Peter and John, he asked if they had any spare change.

Peter and John, fastening their eyes on him, said, Look at us.

Hoping to receive something from them, the man glanced their way.

Peter said, I have no silver or gold, but I will give you what I do have: in the name of Yeshua, the Christ, from Nazareth, rise up and walk.

Peter grabbed the man's right hand and began pulling him up.

All at once, the man's feet and ankle bones were given strength, then he lurched to a standing position and began stumbling around. And he went into the temple with them, prancing and leaping and praising God. Those inside watched him jumping up and down and giving praise to God, and all of them knew he was the same man who begged at the temple gate.

And the people were full of awe, stunned by what had happened to him.

As the man who was healed clutched Peter and John and hugged them to him, the people all ran as one to Solomon's porch and gaped in wonder.

Peter saw them coming, and he said, Men of Israel, why be so surprised? Why stare so intently at us like some power or holiness of our own made this man able to walk? It happened because the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our fathers, exalted his son, Yeshua.

It was this man's receiving Yeshua's name that gave him strength.

I am sure you all saw it. Look, there he is right in front of you. And you all know who he is. As well, you should also know it was his accepting the Christ that made him completely whole before you today.

4:1 - As they taught the crowd, the priests and leader of the temple, in company with some Sadducees, showed up, and were altogether agitated at Peter and John because they were preaching to the people, educating them about the resurrection of Yeshua, the Christ, from the dead.

Laying hands on them, they locked them up in a jail cell, for they wanted to hold them until the next day.

Before they could escort Peter and John away, many persons that heard took heed, their number somewhere around five thousand.

As soon as the next day dawned, the leaders, elders, and scribes, as well as Annas, the high priest, Caiaphas, John, and Alexander, plus everybody related to the high priest came together in Jerusalem.

When Peter and John were seated in their presence, they ordered them to reveal by what power and name they had acted.

So Peter, filled with *hagios pneuma*, said, You rulers of these people, you leaders of Israel, if you want to ask us today about the good done to the crippled man, and how he was healed, let it be known to you all, and to all who are in Israel, this was done by way of the name of Jesus, the Christ. It was done in the name of the one you crucified. You all know it was the name of the one God raised from the dead that caused this crippled man to become completely whole before you today.

31 - The place in which they had gathered began to shake as soon as the disciples finished praying, and they were all filled with *hagios pneuma*.

After, they all spoke God's word with boldness, having one heart and one *psuche*, none claiming to own anything, but holding everything in common. The apostles passed their days witnessing about the resurrection of the Lord Yeshua. They preached with great power, and people all gave them a lot of respect.

5:27 - They brought them in and stood them before the council.

The High Priest asked them, Did we not strictly forbid you to preach in his name? Do you not know Jerusalem is flooded with your dogma? Are you trying to bring this man's blood on us?

Peter and the other apostles answered, We prefer to follow God instead of humanity. We prefer to worship the God of our fathers, the God who raised the Lord Yeshua, the one you slew by hanging on a cross.

Yeshua was exalted to God's right hand to be the Prince and Savior.

Yeshua came to lead Israel to repentance and the forgiveness of sins.

We saw these things come to pass.

We saw, and so did the *hagios pneuma* God gives all who obey him.

When they heard it, they were cut to the heart. Then they all put their heads together. They were looking for ways to kill Peter and John.

6:1 - When the number of disciples had grown largely, gentiles began to gripe to the Jews that the gentile widows were being ignored just about every day. Their complaints caused the twelve to invite a number of the disciples to meet with them.

The twelve asked, Is this really reason enough for us to cease preaching God's word to start waiting on tables? Select seven men of good repute. Choose from all the men among you. Designate only those filled with the *hagios pneuma* and common sense and put them over all this business.

When you have, we can go back to praying and teaching God's word.
All were pleased by this solution.
One of the ones they selected was Stephen.
Stephen was a man full of faith and hagios pneuma.

7 - God's word grew and the number of disciples in Jerusalem also grew.
Many of the priests even came to the truth.
Stephen was filled with faith and power. He worked mighty marvels and miracles before the people. Shortly after, however, some Jews who belonged to the synagogue stood up and started to debate Stephen, but it was impossible for them to overcome the awareness of the pneuma with which he spoke.
Stephen roared, You are stiff-necked and non-circumcised in heart and ear! You always refuse the hagios pneuma, having chosen instead to live like your fathers. Which of the prophets did your fathers not torment? You cannot deny they murdered all those who predicted beforehand the coming of God's righteous one. And now you have turned into betrayers and slayers just like them. **(7:51)**
When they heard these things, they were cut to their hearts. **(54)**
Shortly after, they started to gnash their teeth at him.
Stephen, full of hagios pneuma, stared up into heaven and saw the glory of God. He also saw Yeshua standing at the right hand of God, which is why he shouted, I see the heaven opened! And the son of man is at the right hand of God!
All of them screeched at him with loud voices. Then they plugged their ears and ran at him as one, dragging him outside their city to stone him. When they arrived at the place, ones who were giving testimony against him laid their cloaks at the feet of a young man named Saul.
And they stoned Stephen, with him calling out to God.
Also, he cried to Yeshua, saying, Lord, receive my pneuma.
As he kneeled there, Stephen spoke in a loud voice, saying, Oh Lord, do not hold this sin against them.
After that, Stephen went to sleep.

8:14 - When the apostles in Jerusalem heard a large number in Samaria had adopted the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them.
Peter and John, when they arrived, prayed for the Samaritans to have a share in the hagios pneuma, for it had yet to fall on any of them, though all of them were baptized into the Lord Yeshua's name. But after Peter and John laid their hands on them, they received the hagios pneuma.
Simon saw it was by the laying-on of the apostles' hands that the hagios pneuma was passed on. He offered them money, and said, Sell me a part of that power. Make it so the ones I lay my hands on get hagios pneuma.
Peter replied, You and your money can die together for thinking the gift of God can be had at a price.

26 - An angel of the Lord told Philip, *Get up and go south.*

So Philip got up and went south.

He ran into a man from Ethiopia later, an eunuch having great authority, just under Candace, queen of Ethiopia. The man was in charge of all her wealth. He had come to Jerusalem to worship. He was returning at the time, reading from Isaiah's prophecy as he rode along in his chariot.

Philip was told by the pneuma to go contact the man in the chariot.

When Philip walked over, he saw the man was reading from the scroll of Isaiah, the prophet, so he asked, *Do you understand what you read?*

How can I, replied the Ethiopian, unless someone explains it to me?

And he invited Philip to come up and join him.

34 - Tell me, I beg you, said the eunuch, who does the prophet mean?

He also asked, *Is it the prophet or someone else?*

Philip opened his mouth and began at that very same scripture.

Philip began to preach Yeshua to the eunuch.

As they went along the road, they came to a certain body of water.

Look, said the eunuch, there is plenty of water here.

And he asked, *What is stopping me from being baptized?*

Philip said, *If you believe with all your heart, you may.*

I believe Yeshua is the Christ, the son of Abraham's God, he told Philip.

He also said, I believe Yeshua is the son promised in the covenants.

Philip commanded the chariot to stop.

Down into the water they went, where Philip baptized the eunuch.

When they rose from the water, the Lord's pneuma called Philip away.

Never to see Philip again, the eunuch went his way rejoicing.

Philip appeared next in Azotus as he continued his journey.

He preached in Azotus and every other city on the road to Cesarea.

9:10 - There was a certain disciple in Damascus named Ananias.

Hey Ananias, the Lord called to him in a vision.

Ananias said, *Here I am, Lord, right here.*

Go, the Lord said to him. Go to a street known as 'Straight Street', and ask anybody in the house of Judas for the man called Saul, from Tarsus.

Get to it, Ananias. Saul is praying. He has seen in a vision that someone named Ananias is coming to lay hands on him so he can regain his sight.

Ananias said, Lord, I have heard about this man and I know what evil he has done to your disciples at Jerusalem. I heard he has authority from the chief priests to jail anyone calling himself by your name.

Get moving, said the Lord, for Saul is a special vessel. He will reveal my name to the gentiles, and their kings, and even to the children of Israel.

So Ananias got moving. He went to the house and laid his hands on Saul.

He said, *It was the Lord Yeshua that was manifest to you along the way when you were coming here. He sent me to you. I have come so you can regain your sight and be filled with hagios pneuma.*

At that moment, it was as if scales fell from Saul's eyes.
When his sight was restored, he rose up and was baptized.
After he had eaten, his strength came back, too.
And he stayed for a number of days with the disciples in Damascus.

26 - Saul reached Jerusalem. He thought of joining the disciples. They were all afraid of him and they refused to believe he was a real disciple. So Barnabas brought him to the apostles, convincing them that Saul had seen the Lord on the road, that the Lord had spoken to him, and that he had preached Jesus' name with no fear in Damascus. Because of it, Saul was able to stay with the disciples. And he passed freely throughout all Jerusalem as he boldly proclaimed the name of the Lord Jesus.

31 - All the churches in Judea, Galilee, and Samaria enjoyed a period of peace. They were all edified and they walked with respect for the Lord, wholly assured by the *hagios pneuma*. And they multiplied greatly, too.

10:1 - A man called Cornelius lived in Cesarea, a centurion of the Italian band, a fervent man who cared about God, in company with all his family, a man who gave much to the poor and prayed to God always. Cornelius received a vision during the ninth hour of the day. An angel from God appeared to him, calling, Cornelius. Cornelius saw him and was afraid. He said, What is it, Lord? Your prayer has come up before God as a memorial, said the angel. Now send somebody to Joppa to ask for Simon, the one called Peter.

7 - When the angel that spoke to Cornelius left, he called for two of the household servants, including a devoted soldier picked from the men who constantly served him. Cornelius told them what had gone on and sent them off to Joppa.

21 - Peter climbed down to meet the men from Cornelius, and said, Stop looking. I am the one you want to see. So tell me why you came. One of the men replied, Cornelius, a centurion, a just man that worships God and has a good report among the Jew's entire nation, was told by an angel of God to ask you to his house to hear certain words from you.

25 - When Peter entered, Cornelius met him. Cornelius fell at Peter's feet and began heaping flatteries on him. Peter pulled him up, saying, Get to your feet! I am like you, only a man. Both spoke together as they entered the house, but once he was within, Peter saw many gathered there, and he said, You know it is not legal for somebody who is Hebrew to keep company with or even remain in a room full of people from other nations, but my God has recently convinced me I must not label any person common or unclean.

Peter also told them, That is why I came to you gladly when I was asked. I am still hoping to hear why you sent for me, though. Cornelius said, I was fasting four days ago, about the ninth hour, when I generally pray in my house, and I saw a man in bright clothing standing in front of me. He said my prayers had been heard, and my acts of charity had been brought to remembrance in God's sight.

34 - Peter began to talk. He said, I now see God truly has no respect of a person's place or position and that anybody from any nation who knows God and tries to live righteously will be accepted by him. And this word, which God sent to the seed of Israel, preaching peace by Yeshua Christ, Lord of all, is the same word I speak. No doubt, you have already heard about it, being it was published throughout all Judea. You have also heard that it started in Galilee with John's gospel and baptism. It is a word that declares God anointed Jesus, of Nazareth, with *hagios pneuma* and power. And it also declares that we, Jesus' disciples, are to give witness of all he did in the land of the Jews and in Jerusalem.

44 - As Peter spoke, the *hagios pneuma* fell on those who were listening. Jews who were already believers, those who had come there with Peter, were amazed when they saw gifts from the *hagios pneuma* being poured out on gentiles. And after they heard gentiles speak in foreign tongues and give glory to Yahweh, they went way beyond amazement. Peter said, Does anyone care to stop them from being baptized, since it is clear they have received *hagios pneuma* the same as us? When no one objected, the gentiles were baptized into the Lord's name.

11:1 - The apostles and a number of other brethren in Judea heard the gentiles were laboring together for the gospel of God. After Peter returned to Jerusalem, some of these opposed him. You went in to uncircumcised men, they said to Peter. You ate with uncircumcised men, too, they also said. Peter started from the beginning and laid it out in order.

15 - When I began to speak, *hagios pneuma* fell on them the same way it fell on us at the outset, and I remembered Yeshua had said: Truly, John baptized with water, but you will be baptized with *hagios pneuma*. Since God gave the same gift to them he gave to those who have already been loyal to the Lord Yeshua Christ, who was I to fight God? When they heard this, they repented and glorified God. And they said, So God has also granted gentiles repentance to life.

22 - When members of the assembly at Jerusalem heard this, Barnabas was sent all the way to Antioch. After he saw God had blessed the ones who believed, he was pleased.

Barnabas implored them to hold on tight to the Lord with all their heart, for Barnabas was a good man, full of hagios pneuma and faith. And from that time on, many more were added to the Lord.

27 - Around then, prophets arrived in Antioch from Jerusalem. Agabus, one of them, came forward. In symbols given to him by pneuma he prophesied a great famine would cover all the promised land. As Agabus said, the famine happened in the reign of Claudius Caesar. And the disciples, each according to his or her circumstance, pledged to help any of the brethren living in Judea, and they sent relief right away. Barnabas and Saul took it to the elders themselves.

13:1 - There was a group of prophets and teachers among the believers in Antioch. As they served the Lord and fasted, they knew through the hagios pneuma within them that Barnabas and Paul must be set apart to begin the job for which they were chosen. After they fasted and prayed, they laid hands on them, and Barnabas and Saul were sent forth. Because it was hagios pneuma that told them to go, they went promptly, speaking God's word in all the Jewish synagogues of Salamas, with John going along to minister.

After they crossed the island to Paphos, they met a certain sorcerer, a Jewish false prophet called Bar-jesus. He was with the director of the region, a levelheaded man known as Sergius Paulus, who had requested a visit from Barnabas and Paul, wanting to learn God's word. Then Elymas, a sorcerer (if his name is accurately interpreted) stood up to them, and he tried to deflect the leader away from learning the truth, but Saul, a man who was also called Paul, overflowing with hagios pneuma, locked his eyes on him, saying, You, who are full of all craftiness and evil, you child of the diabolos, you enemy of all that is worthy of praise, will you never cease trying to distort the Lord's righteous way?

Can you feel the Lord's hand upon you yet? Believe this: you will feel it soon, for you are now going blind and you will not see the sun for a year. A mist and darkness came upon Bar-jesus the same instant, causing him to thrash about in panic, seeking someone to lead him by his hand. When the leader saw, he believed, for he feared the Lord's word.

44 - On the next sabbath, many in the city came to hear God's word. When the Jews saw the crowd, they were full of envy and they started to oppose the things Paul said, contradicting and defaming him, but Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, saying, It was necessary for the word of God to reach you first, but because you thrust it away, thus stating you are not worthy of life in the future, we will turn to the gentiles.

49 - The word of the Lord was published through all the area, but some of the Jews stirred up a few devout and noble women, and also, a bunch

of the men that governed the city and they pushed for a persecution of Paul and Barnabas. As a result, the two of them were driven from their land, but before they left, Paul and Barnabas shook the dust from their feet as a witness against them, and they went to Iconium, where all the disciples were filled with joy and *hagios pneuma*.

15:1 - Some men came down from Judea, teaching the brethren, saying, You cannot be saved if you are not circumcised as it is in Moses' law. Paul and Barnabas engaged them in an heated argument and debate and it was determined at last that Paul and Barnabas, as well as the others, go up to Jerusalem so the apostles and elders could deal with it.

6 - The apostles and elders gathered to judge the thing. After a great debate, Peter stood, and said, Men and brothers, I am sure you recall I mentioned some while ago that God decided the gentiles would hear the words of the gospel from my lips, and that they would believe, too. God, who knows human hearts, bore them witness by giving them a portion of *hagios pneuma* like he gave us. We are the same as them to God, for he also cleansed their hearts by faith. Why have you chosen to anger God now? Why put a yoke about the necks of the believers, one neither our fathers or we ourselves were ever able to bear? We do know one thing for sure, though: the love of the Lord Jesus Christ can save us all. Hushed, the crowd listened as Barnabas and Paul told them of the many miracles and wonders God worked among the gentiles by their hand.

23 - Letters were sent out, saying, The apostles and elders, with all the other brethren, send greetings to believers living amidst the gentiles in Antioch, Syria and Cilicia. We hear that some who left us are upsetting you with words meant to corrupt you, saying you must be circumcised as it was taught in Moses' law. Because we gave them no such order, we all agree it is appropriate that we send you certain men, along with our own beloved Barnabas, as well as Paul. We will send Jude and Silas, too, who will say the same. It seemed proper according to *hagios pneuma*, and to us, also, to put no more burden on you than a few necessary things: that you eat no food sacrificed to images, drink no blood, eat no flesh off an animal that was strangled, and you remain apart from fornication. You will do well if you are not involved in any of these things. Have a nice day.

16:4 - They passed through every city and gave the believers their own copies of the rules approved by the apostles and elders in Jerusalem. All the churches became rooted in faith and increased in number daily.

6 - They went through all of Phrygia and Galatia, but the *hagios pneuma* in them would not let them preach the word in Asia.

After they arrived at Mysia, they thought about continuing to Bithynia, but the pneuma in them would not let them preach there, either. So they bypassed Mysia, then went on to Troas, where Paul saw a vision that very night. In the vision, a man from Macedonia stood before him, pleading and crying out, Come to Macedonia. Come and help us. As soon as Paul saw the vision, we planned to go on to Macedonia, wholly convinced the Lord wanted us to preach the gospel there, too.

18:24 - A certain Jew called Apollos, who had been born in Alexandria, a Jew with the gift of gab, one with a great knowledge about scripture, arrived in Ephesus. Previously, Apollos had been schooled in the way of the Lord. Because he burned with pneuma, he could talk about matters that concerned the Lord. Apollos was able to sway others, too, doing it with the little he learned at his baptism by John. Aquila and Priscilla heard Apollos speaking robustly in the house of God and they took him aside to more carefully explain God's way. When Apollos concluded he must go to Achaia, several brethren sent a letter to the disciples there, asking them to welcome him. He was a great help to the believers when he arrived because of all the mercy God had shown him and he debated zealously with Jews in public, plainly revealing many verses in scripture proving Jesus is Christ.

19:2 - Apollos stayed in Corinth and Paul continued his push through the upper coast. He finally arrived at Ephesus and met some believers. He asked, Did you receive hagios pneuma when you believed? We have not even heard there is an hagios pneuma, they answered. Paul asked, With what baptism were you baptized? With John's baptism, they answered. Paul told them, John's baptism was a baptism to repentance, I will agree, but John also said we must believe in the one who would follow him. When they heard, they were baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus. When Paul laid his hands upon them, hagios pneuma filled them, and they began to speak in foreign tongues and prophesy. Paul started attending their synagogue, speaking boldly more than three months, debating with them in an attempt to persuade anyone who would listen to things concerning the Kingdom of God.

20:17 - Paul sent word to Ephesus asking leaders of the church there to come to Miletus and speak with him. When they arrived, he said, I know you are aware how I have handled myself among you since that first day I got to Asia. You all know I have served the Lord with humility of mind, flowing tears, and trials from Jews who are always trying to trap me.

22 - I tell you now that I will go to Jerusalem bound in the pneuma. I have no knowledge of what is going to happen to me there.

What I do know is hagios pneuma tells me nothing but bonds and trouble await me in every city.

None of this moves me, nor do I think my life has much value.

What I want is to end my days in joy.

What I want is to go on to the finish, ministering the things I was given by the Lord Jesus, preaching God's gospel of grace to mankind.

28 - You must attend to yourselves, and also to the flock over which the hagios pneuma has appointed you stewards.

I can tell you this: after I am dead, grievous wolves will charge in among you, men having no true affection for the flock. And some will spring up out of your own assemblies, too, preaching perverted things and drawing away many disciples after them.

21:2 - We found a ship sailing for Phoenicia and we boarded just before it set sail. The ship docked in Tyre, for its cargo was headed there. In the week we stayed with the group of believers from Tyre, they swayed Paul by the strength of their pneumas not to go to Jerusalem.

10 - We thought of staying longer, but a certain prophet named Agabus arrived from Judea. As he came into the house, he grabbed Paul's sash, then bound his own hands and feet with it.

He said, Hagios pneuma says the Jews in Jerusalem will tie the man who owns this sash like I just tied myself, and they will turn him over to the gentiles. And when we heard, we pleaded with Paul to remain away from Jerusalem, but Paul said, Why are you crying? Do you want to break my heart? I am not only willing to be bound, but too, I have no worry at all about dying in Jerusalem for my Lord Jesus' name.

When it became clear Paul would not be persuaded, we stopped.

And the only thing we could say was, May the Lord's will be done.

28:23 - When a date for his trial had been set, many came to the house where Paul was being held to hear him. Paul explained, thereby offering his witness to God's kingdom, displaying Jesus to them in Moses' law and the prophets, morning to night. Some believed and some did not. When he was leaving, he told the people who would not yield inside themselves, Hagios pneuma spoke truth to our fathers by way of Isaiah, the prophet of God, who said, Go speak to the people, telling them this: You will hear, but not understand; and also, you will see, but not perceive.

My people's hearts have grown coarse, their ears are dull of hearing and they shut their eyes tight. It is why they will never see with their eyes, hear with their ears, soften their hearts, and be converted. It is why I will never be obligated to heal them, too.

Accordingly, hear this: the salvation God once offered to you will now be offered to the gentiles, and they will listen.

Paul stayed for two whole years in his own rented house, teaching all the people who came to him. He taught them about the Kingdom of God, and about things concerning the Lord Jesus Christ. And because he was full of confidence, no one was able to prevent him.

Rom 5:1 - Since we were justified through faith, we are now at peace. We are at peace in God's presence through our Lord Jesus, the Christ. We may now access the mercy God offers those who live by faith. We glory in our hope and we are glad, longing to share in God's glory. We glory in slings and arrows, also, for we know trials build patience. We know patience builds experience. We know experience builds hope. We know hope has freed us from shame because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the hagios pneuma he gave us.

8:1 - Therefore, no one who is in Christ Jesus will be condemned, not if the pneuma is obeyed. Those who obey flesh will be destroyed whether they are in Christ or not. You were freed from the law of sin and death by way of the principle of the pneuma of life through Christ Jesus. Moses' law could not do it, for it was subject to failure because of flesh, but when Yahweh manifested his son in the likeness of sin-ridden flesh and offered him as a sacrifice for sin he condemned sin in its own flesh. Therefore, the righteousness the law was introduced to bring about can now be observed in those who do not follow flesh, but pneuma instead. Any who follow flesh care for things of the flesh. Any who have surrendered to pneuma care for things of the pneuma. Caring for things of the flesh brings death. Caring for things of the pneuma brings life and peace. Any who care for the flesh are enemies of God. Any who think according to the flesh are not bound by God's law. Any who are fleshly never will be bound by God's law, either. People in the flesh cannot please God, but you are not in the flesh. You are in the pneuma, but only if God's pneuma is living inside you. People without the pneuma of Christ have no part in Christ. As long as Christ is in you, your body is dead through sin. As long as Christ is in you, your pneuma (you) will receive life as a result of the righteousness accounted to those in Christ. As long as the pneuma of the one who raised Jesus lives in you, then the one who raised Christ from the dead will bring your mortal body back to life again because his hagios pneuma was alive inside you. Since this is so, my brothers, we are not debtors to the flesh. Why would anybody follow the flesh? If you feed your fleshly desires you will perish. If you starve the desires of the flesh using God's pneuma you will live.

Only those who follow God's pneuma are children of God.
You did not get a pneuma that would return you to bondage and fear.
You got a pneuma of adoption.
You are heard, therefore, whenever you cry, Abba, Father.
God's pneuma, along with our own pneuma, provides witness we are God's children. If we are children of God, are we not his heirs, too? Is it not obvious our inheritance must come from God? Are we also not slated to be joint-heirs with Christ then?
We must suffer with him first, however, for this is the only way we will share in his glory. And we are confident the suffering of these present days is not worth comparing to the glory that will be seen in us.

9:1 - I am talking the truth like it is in Christ. I am not lying, since the *hagios pneuma* within me is witness, with my conscience, that I have had much heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart. There are times when I wish to be banished from Christ myself if it should in any way save my kinsmen, the Jews, through whom has appeared the adoption, the praise and the covenants.

14:13 - We must no longer judge each other. Instead, let us judge this: may no believer put a stumbling-block or occasion to fall before another. I am certain, for I was informed by our Lord Jesus himself that nothing in and by itself is unclean, but if a disciple thinks something is not clean, then the thing is unclean. Is it hard to see? What I have said is: if you cause another believer to falter over something you want, you cannot be walking in love. How do you dare destroy a person Christ died for so you may enjoy something good to eat? You must not allow things you believe are permissible to injure another. God's kingdom is not made up of food and drink, but justice, peace, and joy by way of *hagios pneuma*.
All those who truly serve Christ in this area will be approved by God.
And these true servants of Christ will be approved by humans, too.

15:13 - Let the God of hope fill you with joy and peace, for you are now full of faith and belief. May you also abound in hope and power through *hagios pneuma*. As for me, I am wholly convinced you, our brothers, are filled with goodness and wisdom. I know you can teach one another, but even so, my brothers, I am writing much more boldly in the hope that it will somehow put you in mind of the grace I was given by God. Have you forgotten I was the one selected to spread the gospel Jesus Christ got from God to the heathen? Have you forgotten it is being done this way with hopes that the offering of the gentiles will be pleasing to God, for it has already been sanctified through the *hagios pneuma*?
If I wanted to brag, I might come up with much to brag about as far as my connection with Jesus and God, and I would not say a thing about all Christ did by me to cause gentiles to obey in word and deed, either.

I would never bring up the mighty signs and wonders God worked by way of the power of his pneuma in me as I gave the gentiles good news about Christ, confirming it by power in Jerusalem and all the cities in the area all the way to Illyricum. This is how I brought the gospel to them. This is why I taught in locales where Christ had never been mentioned. I did it that way so I would not be building on a foundation laid by another. I did it that way to abide by this prophecy: those who did not see him will be aware, and those who did not hear him will understand.

30 - Brethren, I beg you for the sake of our Lord Jesus Christ.
I beg you for love in the pneuma to assemble and pray to God for me.

1 Cor 2:12 - Eyes have not seen and ears have not heard, nor did it ever enter human hearts what God is preparing for people who love him. God has revealed these things to us, though, through his pneuma, that which searches out all things, even the deeper things of God.

Humans know just human things, things which can only be understood by human pneumas, but things relating to God cannot be understood by the human because these things are known through God's pneuma alone.

We do not follow the pneuma of the kosmos (world). Instead, we follow God's pneuma. We know what we are talking about, for our knowledge is given to us freely from God, not the way humans exchange wisdom. Our knowledge comes from words brought by the hagios pneuma, words that we use to relate pneumatikos (spiritual) things to pneumatikos things.

A psuchikos (natural) man cannot fathom the things of God's pneuma.

He cannot understand them because he thinks they are foolish.

He cannot, for they are only understood pneumatikos (spiritually).

Humans who are pneumatikos, the spiritual, understand everything.

Humans who are pneumatikos, though, are understood by no one.

Who can understand God's thoughts?

Who would even question God?

I am absolutely convinced of this one thing: our thoughts are the exact same thoughts Christ has.

6:19 - Did you forget?

Do you not remember your body is the temple of the hagios pneuma?

Did you forget you must do all that is necessary to make sure pneuma is still alive among you? The pneuma was given to you by God so you are no longer your own. You were bought for a price and you must now present God all the glory in both your body and pneuma. It is only right because the pneuma came from God in the first place.

2 Cor 3:1 - Am I bragging again?

Do I now need, as some claim, letters of approval to or from you?

You are my letters, written on my heart, known and read by all.

You are known beyond a doubt to be my letter to Christ, one I delivered myself, not written with ink, but in the living God's pneuma, not on stone tables, but on the fleshly tables of your hearts. I have that kind of confidence before God through Christ, but it is not as if I am correct when I think like that about myself, since my value derives from God, who has converted me into an able minister of this latest covenant. The meaning of the covenant is not evident if you judge it to be written words of law, for meaning can only be seen in the pneuma behind the words.

Words of law bring death, but the pneuma brings life.

If the law that created death, which was written and scribed on tablets of stone, brought honor, how much more honor will the pneuma bring?

If the law that produced condemnation brought triumph, then how much more triumph will the pneuma that produces righteousness bring?

Since we are so optimistic, we use a great deal of boldness whenever we speak, not like it was said relating to Moses, that he hid his face behind a cloth as a symbol of the fact Israel would never see past the law.

And though the law has now been abolished, their minds are blinded yet today, for the veil is still present when they read old testament scrolls.

Also, the only way it will ever be removed is by the knowledge of Christ.

That is why when Moses is read today the veil still covers the hearts of the Jews, but the veil will be gone as soon as Israel returns to Yahweh.

6:1 - Since I was working for God, I can only hope you were not granted God's mercy for no good purpose.

God has said, I will hear you in the chosen day.

God has said, I will help you on the day of salvation.

Wake up! The chosen time is now and today is the day of salvation.

I pray you give no offense in anything so our cause is not blamed.

Do things in ways that show you are God's ministers, full of self-control, whether you are in trial, need or distress, whether you are given stripes or put in prison, and whether you are in riot, war, insomnia, or hunger.

Always be pure.

Always be full of knowledge, patience, and kindness.

All these things come to us through the hagios pneuma.

All these things only come to people having true love.

All these things come to us by the word of truth and God's power.

All these things are protected by the armor of righteousness.

All these things are protected on the right hand and left.

13:14 - Finally, brothers, farewell.

Be one.

Be gentle.

Be absorbed in the same things.

Be lovers of peace and the God of love and peace will be with you all.

Greet each other with an holy kiss.
Salutations are sent to you from called out ones everywhere.
May the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.
May it be with you through God's love, in union with his hagios pneuma.
May it be so. (Amen).

Gal 3:1 - You foolish Galatians! Who bewitched you that you would stop doing the truth? More than sufficient evidence to prove Jesus really is the crucified Christ was laid out before you. Since this is a fact, I have only one question to ask you: did you receive pneuma because you obeyed the law or because you understood the truth?
How can you be such fools? Since you started out in the pneuma, why do you now presume you can become perfect through flesh? Did you suffer so for no reason, if it truly winds up being for no reason? And regarding the ones that ministered the pneuma to you, the ones that worked every kind of miracle in your presence, did they do this because they knew the law or because they knew the truth?

13 - Christ redeemed us from the law's curse by being cursed for us.
It happened that way because it was written that way.
It was written: Anybody who is hung on a tree is cursed.
It happened that way so the blessings offered to Abraham could also be offered to gentiles through belief that Jesus is the Christ.
It happened that way so we could all receive the pneuma of promise as a reward for our faith.

5:14 - The whole law can be summed up with a few words.
The words are: You must love your neighbor like you love yourself.
The truth is: if you go on biting and devouring each other you had better take care you do not destroy one another.

All I will say is this: if you walk in pneuma you will not be concerned with fulfilling the desires of the flesh.
Flesh wants things that are opposed to pneuma.
Pneuma wants things that are opposed to flesh.
Flesh and pneuma are opposites. They are against each other so you will never be able to do what you want, but if you are led by pneuma, you are not bound by the law.

Fleshly works are plain: among them are adultery, fornication, filthiness, overindulgence, obsession, clairvoyance, hatred, strife, aggression, rage, rivalry, resistance, heresies, jealousy, murder, inebriation, partying and every other such sin. I tell you now, the way I told you before, anybody who gains pleasure from the things I just mentioned will never receive a place in God's kingdom.

Pneuma engenders the following kinds of fruit: love, joy, peace, patience, gentleness, goodness, faith, humility, and self-control.

No law is opposed to these things.

People who truly belong to Christ have crucified the flesh, as well as its thoughts and its cravings. If we are looking ahead to a new life through the pneuma, we should at least try to walk in the pneuma now.

6:1 - If a brother is overtaken in weakness, those who are pneumatikos (spiritual ones) should lure him back with a pneuma of humility.

But they must take care they themselves are not also tested.

Bear the burdens of others.

By doing so, you will comply with the law of Christ.

7 - Do not be duped, for God will not be mocked.

People will reap just what they sow.

People who sow to the flesh will reap phthora (corruption) from flesh.

People who sow to the pneuma will reap eternal life (life in the age).

Eph 1:11 - We who first had trust in Christ, we who were fore-ordained to serve this purpose, have been given the calling to the praise and glory of the one who brings all things to pass in line with his own desires.

You believed when you began to trust in Christ after you heard the word of truth, the word that revealed the gospel of your salvation.

You were sealed with the hagios pneuma, a promised pneuma, a foretaste of our inheritance until all who are being purchased have been redeemed.

I pray the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, our glorious Father, awards you a pneuma of wisdom.

I pray he grants you an awareness of himself so the eyes of your insight are illuminated and you behold the hope of his calling.

May you experience the richness of the glory of the inheritance.

May you realize how much control he will give the ones he delivers.

May you behold the exceeding greatness of his strength to believers.

May you see how imposing was the power he used in his work with Christ.

A good example of the above has to do with God raising Christ from the dead, then seating him on his own right hand in the high place. Christ is seated in the high place now, far over any other source of authority and power. The seat Christ occupies is way above royalty or any other name that is named, not only in this age, but in every age to come.

God has put all things under the feet of Christ.

God has commissioned Christ.

God has put him in charge of all that pertains to the called out ones, the ones who comprise his body, the ones who will be filled with the fullness of that which is all in all.

2:14 - He is our peace, for he caused Jews and gentiles to become one.
He tore down the wall which was between them.
He abolished the source of enmity in his own flesh.
He abolished the principle of commandments contained in laws.
He made in himself one new man from two.
He made amends by submitting both to God in one body on a cross.
He did it by destroying the opposition inside himself.
He preached peace to those who were far off.
He also preached peace to those who were near.
You all have access to the Father through him by one pneuma.
You are no longer strangers or aliens.
You are fellow-citizens with the chosen.
You are members of the house of God.
You were built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets.
You were built on the chief cornerstone himself, Jesus, the Christ.
In this way, the whole building can be fitly framed together.
In this way, it can grow into the holy temple of the Lord, the same Lord
that is shaping you together to become a building indwelt by God by way
of his pneuma.

3:13 - I would not want you to become weary because of testing I might
have endured for you, since my trials are your glory. My trials cause me
to go to my knees before the Father of the Lord Jesus Christ, that one
from whom every family of heaven and Earth takes its name.
I pray you obtain the riches of his glory.
I pray you are multiplied in power through his pneuma in you.
I pray Christ will live in your hearts through faith.

4:1 - I, the Lord's prisoner, pray you walk as befits your calling.
Walk in lowliness, meekness, and patience, forgiving each other in love.
Strive to maintain unity in the pneuma through the bond of peace.

There is one body.
There is one pneuma.
There is one hope of the gospel by which you were called.
There is one Lord, one faith, one baptism, and one God.
There is one source of all, one who is above all, through all, and in all.

17 - This is why I beg you, testifying in the Lord, to not walk in the way
of the heathen, in the conceit of their minds, their understanding dark-
ened, fully alienated from the life God has promised. It all comes from
their ignorance, from the blindness of their hearts. Beyond feeling are
they, for they have sold themselves to excess and the working of every
kind of uncleanness and hunger. That is not the way you learned Christ,
not if you really did learn and understand him.

As far as the truth goes in Jesus, you must put away the old man, which is the old way of thinking you had concerning your actions, a way that is completely corrupted because of its deceitful desires.

As far as truth, you must be renewed in the pneuma of your minds.

As far as truth, you must put on the new man, a new way of thinking.

As far as truth, you must think like God regarding justice and purity.

29 - Do not let ignorant words come from your mouth; rather, speak in a way that uplifts, using words with value to those who hear you.

Do not grieve the hagios pneuma of God, for it has sealed you to the day of your redemption.

5:17 - Do not be shallow; rather, get a grip on the Lord's will.

Do not be drunk with wine, since that may lead to excess.

Be full of pneuma instead, always conversing among yourselves in psalms, hymns, and pneumatikos (spiritual) songs.

Sing, making melody in your hearts to the Lord.

Offer your gratitude in every way to God, the Father.

Offer your gratitude through the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Surrender yourselves to each other in God's love.

6:13 - Put on all God's armor, hoping you will endure in the evil days.

Put it on so when you have done all, you might continue to endure.

Stand, therefore, with your loins swathed in truth.

Wear the breastplate of righteousness.

Have your feet shod with a willingness to teach the gospel of peace.

Grasp the shield of faith, with which to quench the fiery darts of evil.

Wear the helmet of salvation.

Carry the sword of the pneuma, which is the word of God.

Offer all prayers and present all petitions in the pneuma, hoping with all perseverance and supplication for the things you most desire.

Phil 2:1 - Thus, if there is any consolation in Christ, any comfort of love, any fellowship of the pneuma, any clemency, or any compassion, you must fill me up with joy by thinking like I think and having the same love. You must think the same thoughts and emphasize the same things.

1 Ths 1:2 - We praise God in all ways for you. We always remember you in our prayers. We always mention your acts of faith, along with all your works of love and the determined way you continue on in the hope of our Lord Jesus Christ before God, our Father.

You must remember, beloved brothers, you were chosen by God.

You were not taught the gospel in word only, but in power.

You learned the gospel because you believed in the hagios pneuma.

You are aware what type of men we became for your sakes.

You followed us (in reality, you followed our Lord) receiving the word via much pain and gladness in the hagios pneuma. And you became a perfect example to all the believers in Macedonia and Achaia.

4:1 - I beg you, my brothers, and I caution you in the Lord Jesus. You must grow even more, for we taught you how to live to please God. You know what you are expected to do in the Lord. You know it really is God's will. You know it is the only way you will ever receive God's blessing. You know you must abstain from fornication. You must learn how to maintain your vessel in sanctification and honor. You must not be caught up in a frenzy of craving like the gentiles. You must not be like those who do not know God. Let nobody go beyond and swindle his brother in any way, since the Lord is an avenger of all such, as we previously forewarned and told you. God did not call us to uncleanness, but to holiness. As a result, the ones who hate do not hate humans, but God, from whom we received the hagios pneuma. As far as having love for your brothers, there is no need of me writing you, for God has taught you all to love one another.

2 Thes 2:1 - I ask you, brethren, as far as our Lord Jesus Christ's coming and our gathering together to him that you are not dismayed in mind or bothered by any pneuma, word, or letter claiming it is from us, saying Christ's return is near. Let no one deceive you in any way about it, since Christ's return will not happen before an apostasia (falling away) is seen, not until that man of sin is manifest, that son of ruin, the rebellious one, the one that will position himself over all that is named God, and all that is valued, the one that will seat himself in God's temple and carry on like he thinks he himself is God. Did you forget I told you these things when I was with you?

13 - I always remember to thank God for you, oh brothers, because the Lord loves you, and also, because our God has invited you to take part in his salvation through sanctification by pneuma and a belief of the truth. As stated by the gospel that I preach, God is calling you to share in the glory that will be revealed through the Lord Jesus Christ. I, therefore, tell you, my brethren, you must stand fast, holding onto the same belief you first learned, whether by word or in one of my letters.

2 Tim 1:13 - Support that standard of sound words I gave you by means of your faith and love for Jesus Christ. Guard that good thing placed in your care by the hagios pneuma living among us.

Titus 3:1 - Remind them to be respectful to bosses and overseers. Remind them to obey leaders, always prepared to do good works.

Remind them to say nothing evil about anyone.

Remind them not to be brawlers.

Remind them to be gentle, always showing humility to all.

We were foolish in the past. We were disobedient and deluded. And we only wanted to satisfy our every inclination and imagination. We became friends with hate and envy, full of hate and hating one another; but now, in the present, through God's kindness and love, the savior has come and we have been granted a chance at salvation. Hopefully, no one feels God is saving us for any righteous work on our part. God is saving us because he is kind. God is saving us by a cleansing new birth. God is saving us by a new birth through the *hagios pneuma*, which he has poured out upon us lavishly by Jesus Christ, who will deliver us. God did it so he can justify us by mercy and we can be his heirs, we who long for life in the age.

Heb 2:1 - We should pay more attention to the things we hear unless at any time they begin to leak out of our minds like water out of some oozy jug. If the word spoken by angels was faithful, and every sin or deed of defiance under the law called for proper repayment, how will we ever be free if we ignore so great a salvation as the one first delivered to us by our Lord? This is the same salvation also brought to us by the ones who heard him in person, God giving them witness by signs, and wonders, and various miracles, and by this outpouring of *hagios pneuma*, like it says in his plan, for God will not put the age to come in the hands of angels.

3:1 - That is why I beg you, you holy ones, you who have partaken in the heavenly calling, to contemplate Jesus Christ, our chief apostle and high priest, the one to whom we offer our allegiance.

We know he was faithful to the one who sent him as Moses was faithful, along with his whole family, but this man, Jesus, is considered deserving of more honor than Moses because the one that builds the house always receives more glory than the house. Moses, with all his clan, was a loyal servant, a symbol of what would come later, but Christ is also a faithful son over his own house, and members of this house we will become if we remain confident and doggedly rejoice in hope to the end.

Of *hagios pneuma* it is said, If you hear God's voice today, take care not to harden your heart. My brothers, you must take care that an evil and unsure heart does not rise in you and turn you from the living God.

16 - Even though they were warned, some of them angered God, but not all who were freed from Egypt by Moses. Who was God upset with over forty years? Was God not disturbed with the ones who erred, the ones whose carcasses fell in the wild, the ones he vowed would never partake of his sabbath?

Was God not irate at the ones who did not believe?

No doubt, it was their lack of belief that kept them out of the land.

6:1 - We must leave behind the basics of the doctrine of Christ.
We must move on to the end.

We must not lay again, over and over, a foundation for repentance from dead works, faith in God, baptism, the laying-on of hands, the raising of dead ones, and the judgment of the age; and we will do it, assuming God wants it. But if those who already know, those who have already tasted God's good word, and the powers of the age to come, slack off, there is no chance to bring them back to repentance, for they crucify God's son again inside themselves, putting him to public shame.

9:1 - Under Moses' law, there were regulations regarding divine service and the kosmos (worldly) sanctuary, for the first tabernacle that was set up had a place for the candlestick, table, and show-bread. It was a place called the sanctuary. Behind another veil of the tabernacle was a place called the holiest of all, built to hold the golden censer, as well as the ark of the covenant. Within the ark was a golden pot of manna, the rod of Aaron that budded, and the tables of the covenant. And the ark had cherubim of glory on its top to overshadow the mercy-seat. During the days these things were in service, a priest entered the first tabernacle to carry out his duties to God. Only the high priest entered the holiest area. He only entered once a year, and he went in alone. He was required to pour out the blood of a sacrifice for himself, as well as for the sins of his people. In this way, the *hagios pneuma* revealed that the entrance into the holiest place would not be apparent as long as the first tabernacle still stood. It represented things to come, carried out during a time gifts and sacrifices were offered. The offerers of these sacrifices were not made perfect by them, not so far as the awareness of sin was concerned, though. Then Christ appeared, the high priest of good things to come, of a more dignified and chaste tabernacle, not set up by human hands. Christ did not get into the most holy place through an offering of goat or calf blood, but by way of his own blood. He went into the holiest place one time, thereby gaining age-long redemption.

10:1 - The law was the shadow of good things to come, not a true image of the things. It could never give partakers perfection, not through an offering of the same sacrifices over and over, year after year. Sooner or later these offerings would not be necessary, for worshippers would all be purified and no longer guilty over sin. Sacrifice under Moses' law made sure sin was remembered year after year. Besides, do you really believe the blood of bulls and goats can take away human sins?

11 - Priests were obliged under the law to stand and serve all day long. Priests offered up the same sacrifices over and over, although none of them could eliminate sins. One man, however, the man known as Jesus, offered one sacrifice for sin for all ages.

After that, he sat down at the right hand of God, and there he sits now. He is waiting for his enemies to become his footstool. His offering perfected sanctified ones forever. Hagios pneuma is also a witness, for Yahweh has said, On that day, I will institute my covenant with them. I will scribe my law on their hearts. I will also scribe it on the table of their minds. Their sins will never enter my thoughts again, and I will no longer see wickedness among them.

If sins are forgiven, a sin-offering is no longer needed. It is why we have boldness to enter the holiest place through the blood of Jesus. Also, it is why we can pass through the veil, which is a symbol of his flesh, as indicated in the new and living way he opened for us.

1 Ptr 1:3 - Ascribe to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ the gratitude, since owing to his abundant mercy, he granted us power to be born anew into a living hope. He raised Jesus Christ from the dead, and he put us in line to receive an inheritance, one that will not fade away or grow soiled or cease. That inheritance is presently reserved in the high place with Christ. It is to be given to those who are redeemed by faith, owing to God's power, at the time of regeneration which will come in the final days. Far more precious than gold is the testing of your faith, for gold can fade away. You should do what you can so even if you are tried by way of fire you will still be deemed worthy of praise, honor and glory at the manifestation of Jesus, the Christ. You will be granted a reward for your faith then, which is the saving of your psuche.

Prophets who talked about the grace to come looked into this very same salvation. This is the very same salvation they diligently sought in their attempt to learn how and when the pneuma of Christ in them divulged in advance the sufferings of Christ, along with the glory that would follow. Prophets knew the words they spoke were not for themselves alone, but that they were servants sent forth in the past to prefigure what is now taught to you by us, those who acquainted you with good news about the hagios pneuma sent down from heaven.

18 - You must know by now it was nothing relative to you that freed you from the empty way of living passed on to you through the traditions of your parents. And I did not even mention your own fruitless craving for corrupt objects like silver and gold. I did not mention it, since you have already been paid for with the priceless blood of Christ, who died like a lamb without spot or blemish. Christ was preordained before this age began, but he is now seen in the end times by you, the ones who believe that God raised him up from the dead and showered honor upon him. It was done this way so your belief and your hope will both depend on God alone.

Since you already purified your psuche by following after the truth, and since you have the pneuma of true love for all the brethren, be sure you continue loving each other with pure and fervent hearts.

Make sure you were not born of corruptible seed.

Make sure you were born of the incorruptible seed sown by God's word.

2 Ptr 1:20 - Above all, we are convinced no prophecy from scripture was formed inside the prophet who spoke it. Prophecy did not come because prophets asked for it. Prophecy came because holy men of God spoke in ways they were moved by God's hagios pneuma.

1 Jn 3:21 - Beloved, do not allow your hearts to bring you into reproach. So long as our hearts do not condemn us, we will continue having faith in God. Moreover, we will be given what we ask, since we will always follow his commandments and do things that please him.

We followed the foremost of all his commandments the day we believed into the name of his son, Jesus Christ.

Another important commandment is that we love each other.

God gave us these laws, vowing to live in those who kept them.

God also said those who kept his laws would live in him.

So we are confident God lives in us because he gave us his pneuma.

4:4 - You belong to God, my little children.

The kosmos (present order of things) has been defeated by you.

The reason is because the one in you is greater than those in the world.

They are in the world and that is why they only talk about the world.

That is also why other people in the world listen to them.

Those who know God listen to us, for they see we also know God.

Those who do not know God do not understand what we say.

This is how we know who has a pneuma of truth or a pneuma of error.

10 - Real love is not demonstrated by our love for God.

Real love can only be seen in the fact that God loved us and sent his son as the only possible offering that could ever cover our sins.

Since God loved us this way, brethren, we must at least love each other.

Nobody has seen God, but I believe if we love one another God will come and live in us and manifest his love through us.

We know we are living in God and God is living in us.

We know this because God gave us his pneuma.

5:3 - How do we show our love for God?

We follow God's commandments, that is how.

We know God's requirements are not hard to follow.

Whoever is getting a new birth from God will easily defeat the kosmos.

What weapon can overcome the kosmos (world)?

Weapon number one in overcoming the kosmos is your faith.
Who else could possibly overcome this kosmos other than those persons who believe Jesus is the son (seed) promised by God?

Jude 17 - You who were given love for God must surely recall the words spoken by the apostles of Jesus, our Lord, the Christ. You surely recall how they warned us scoffers would stand up in the final days. And they foretold that the scoffers would follow after their own ungodly desires and be separate, psuchikos (natural) and lacking in pneuma. You must keep building yourselves up in your most holy faith. You must pray in the hagios pneuma always. You must do what you can to stay in God's love. You must seek the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ. You must beg him to give you life in the age.

Rev 1:1 - This is a revelation from Jesus, the Christ.
Jesus received it from God.
Jesus sent it by an angel (in symbols) to his servant, John.
It is a revelation containing events which will assuredly come to pass.
I am John, your brother and co-partner in trial, kingdom, and hope.
I am now going to make Jesus' revelation known to you.
I was on the island of Patmos, exiled there because of the word of God.
I was also there because I kept witnessing about Jesus Christ.
I was transported in pneuma to the great day of the Lord.
I heard a voice, loud as a trumpet, behind me.
I turned to see the owner of the voice . . .

As mentioned earlier, the verses above are examples of **pneuma** as it pertains to (1) a message or messenger sent or (2) a gift of strength or ability given.

Also mentioned earlier, the **pneuma** is **hagios pneuma**, that uncommon energy or force the Big Guy uses to accomplish special desires, but that is just one facet of **pneuma**. Another is the pneuma observed in humans and animals. Do you remember that **ruach**, the Hebrew term translated "spirit", didn't just relate to God and his gifts? In the next verses, the word **pneuma** (like **ruach**) is applied to humanity, plus human lives, minds, wills, ideas, moods, passions, needs, and desires.

Mt 5:23 - People with a meek pneuma are blessed, for they will be given a place in the kingdom from heaven. In all truth, people who are able to humble themselves are blessed, for they will inherit the Earth.

26:40 - Jesus returned to the disciples and found them sleeping.
He asked Peter, Could you not have waited with me for one hour?
He said, You had best start watching and praying not to undergo trial.

Have I not told you again and again, Peter, the pneuma is always willing?
Have I not told you it is flesh that is weak?

Mk 2:8 - When Jesus knew in his pneuma they had started thinking that certain way, he said, Why do you hold such thoughts in your hearts?

8:11 - The Pharisees rushed forward and began hurling questions at him, demanding that he show them a sign from heaven.

As soon as Jesus knew they were trying to ambush him, he sighed deeply in his pneuma, and said, Why does your generation always demand a sign? I am telling you now, your generation will receive no sign.

Lk 1:46 - Mary said, My psuche magnifies the Lord.

My pneuma rejoices in my God and savior.

My God showed his handmaiden favor by overlooking her low position.

Most surely, every generation hereafter will call me blessed.

9:51 - When it was his time to die in Jerusalem, then he received up, he purposefully set his face to go. He sent messengers out to a city of the Samaritans, asking them for a place to lay over, but they would not hear of it, not as long as he insisted on going to Jerusalem.

When James and John, his disciples, were told, they said, Hey Lord, why do we not command fire to fall down from heaven and cremate them like Elijah did?

Denouncing them, Jesus said, You know nothing about your own pneumas. I did not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them.

So they went to another village.

Jn 13:21 - After Jesus said it, he became troubled in pneuma.

Offering a prediction, he said to them, I tell you in all truth that one of you will betray me.

His disciples looked around, glancing at one another.

His disciples all wondered which of the others he was talking about.

Acts 7:59 - As they stoned Stephen, he shouted, Lord Jesus, accept my pneuma, I beg you!

He called out once more in a loud voice as he fell to his knees.

He cried, Lord, do not hold this sin against them!

As soon as he said that, Stephen went to sleep.

17:16 - While Paul waited in Athens, his pneuma was affected within him by seeing the whole city caught up in idolatry. He began to debate every day with Jews, devout people, and anyone else he met in the market.

Paul left Athens and arrived in Corinth. There, he began debating in the synagogue each sabbath, converting Jews and gentiles alike. **(18:5)**

Paul became pressed in the pneuma when Silas and Timothy arrived from Macedonia, and he started telling the Jews Jesus was the Christ. Alas, the Jews began going against themselves by committing blasphemy. Paul shook the dust off his robe, and said, Your blood is now on your own heads. I am free of it. Starting today, I will only go to gentiles.

Rom 1:1 - From Paul, a servant of Jesus, the Christ.

I was invited to be his apostle and I was separated to the gospel of God, which is the good news he promised beforehand through his prophets by way of the holy scriptures.

7 - To those who live in Rome, those God loves, those called to be saints, may grace and peace be on you from God, our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

I thank my God through Jesus Christ for every one of you because your faith is cited through all the world. With God as my witness, the God I serve in the pneuma according to the gospel of his son, I will never stop naming you in my prayers.

2:28 - A real Jew is not necessarily born a Jew, nor is real circumcision necessarily circumcision of the flesh. Real Jews are Jews inwardly and real circumcision accords to the heart in pneuma. Real circumcision has nothing to do with the circumcision found in the law.

7:5 - When we were in the flesh, the cravings which compelled us to sin, those that rose in us because of the law, worked in our bodies producing only fruit deserving of death, but we have been freed from the law now, and we are dead to things that controlled us in the past. Now we should serve in the new pneuma, not according to the old law of Moses.

22 - In my inner man, I delight in God's law, but I find another law in me that is at war with the law which delights me. This law holds me captive to the law of sin living inside me.

What a mess I am!

Who will deliver me from this body of death?

I thank God that our Lord Jesus Christ will free me, but until he does I can only serve God's law in my mind and the law of sin in my flesh.

1 Cor 4:18 - Many have gotten puffed up and say I will not come to you.

I will come to you before long, however, if the Lord is willing.

We will see if the words of the puffed up ones have any power then.

God's kingdom is not manifest in words only, but in strength.

Are you saying you want me to come to you with a rod?

Or would you prefer I come with love and a pneuma of meekness?

5:1 - It is openly reported you allow fornication among you. It is a kind of fornication gentiles do not even talk about. It is a fornication in which a man has his father's wife; and, rather than detesting the deed, you have all become puffed up. You should hate the act. You should take steps to ensure the one who did it is cast out from among you. I tell you the truth: even though I am not there in person, I am there in pneuma. I have already judged this person as if I was there in body. I command you now in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, when you next assemble, along with my pneuma, in the unity of the Lord Jesus Christ, that you relinquish this person to the adversary (satan). I say it so even if his flesh is destroyed, there is a chance his pneuma might yet be salvaged on the day of the Lord Jesus.

7:32 - Single persons concern themselves with things of the Lord. They look for ways in which they may please him. Married people, though, are concerned over things of the kosmos (world) and how they may satisfy a mate. A married woman and a single woman also differ like this: a single woman can apply herself to the Lord's affairs and ways in which she may remain separate in body and pneuma. The married woman is immersed in affairs of the world, and how she will please her husband. I have said it hoping to benefit you, not cast a net over you. I also said it to point out ways we might each serve our Lord without distraction. I believe I am of the same pneuma (thinking) as God in this. **(40)**

13:11 - When I was a child, I spoke like a child. I had the understanding of a child and I reasoned like a child. I became a man, though, and I set childish things aside. In a comparable manner, we see at this time as if we were staring into a darkened mirror, but then we will see face to face. At present, my knowledge is partial. At that time, I will know as I am now known. At present, we see these three: faith, hope, and love. At that time, the only one we will see is love.

16:17 - I am happy that Stephanas, Fortunatus, and Achaicus are there and that they will add what you lack; also, since they have refreshed my pneuma and yours, we should recognize their contribution.

2 Cor 2:12 - After I reached Troas, where I could preach the gospel of Christ, it was like a door was opened to me by the Lord. My pneuma was not at ease, though, for I had not seen my brother, Titus. This is why I left them and went to Macedonia.

7:1 - Dearly beloved, since we have the covenants to look forward to we should purge ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and pneuma.

Because we have the covenants to look forward to we should also remain completely apart in reverence for God.

12 - I did not write you for the sake of the one who did wrong.
I did not even write you for the sake of the one who suffered wrong.
I wrote so you would appreciate how highly I regard you in God's sight.
I was renewed when you were renewed. Truly, I was more than renewed.
I was ecstatic you chose to refresh Titus' pneuma. If I have bragged on you over anything, I feel no shame. Everything I said concerning you has turned out to be true. Just ask Titus, hey?

11:1 - I pray to my God you put up with my foolishness a bit longer. Will you please put up with me? It is only because I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy. I betrothed you to one husband, and my concern now is if I will be able to present you as a chaste virgin to Christ. I have begun to worry that, in the same way the serpent beguiled Eve with its cunning, so too, your minds could be corrupted from the simplicity of Christ. If anyone comes preaching another Jesus, a Jesus not already preached to you, or if you accept another pneuma, a pneuma which was not already accepted by you, or if you adopt another gospel, some good news not yet adopted by you, you will do well to bear with me.
I do not believe that I am in any way behind the best of the apostles.
I may be crude in word, sure, but I am not crude in knowledge.
I have lived among you openly in truth concerning all things.
I am sorry if I offended you by preaching God's gospel to you freely.
I only lowered myself so you could be exalted.

Gal 6:18 - May the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your pneuma.

Eph 2:1 - You were dead through bad behavior and sins, but now you are revived by God. You acted according to this time and kosmos in the past and you obeyed leaders and authority figures in positions of power. You displayed the same pneuma now seen in the children of disobedience. In the past, we all acted according to our fleshly desires and we only cared about satisfying each and every emotion and urge.

4:20 - This is not the way you learned Christ, if you really did learn him. If you know the truth like it is in Jesus, you know you must cast off the old man (that way in which you previously behaved) since it is absolutely corrupted by means of its ungodly desires. And also, you know you have to be renewed in the pneuma of your mind, and put on the new man (new way of conduct) created by God in righteousness and true holiness.

Heb 4:12 - God's word is quick and powerful.
God's word is sharper than a double-edged sword.

God's word goes deep enough to slice apart the psuche and pneuma.
God's word reaches down to the joints and marrow.
God's word uncovers the thoughts and imaginations of human hearts.
Nothing that lives can hide from God.
Everything is laid open to the one with whom we are dealing.

Jms 2:17 - Without good works to show it, faith is dead, dead and alone.
Some may say, You have works, but I have faith.
Swell, now show us your faith without works.
Showing you my faith by my works is how I will do it.
Do you not see, dear Mr. Vanity, faith without works is dead?
Was father Abraham not justified by works because he offered his son,
Isaac, on the altar?
Do you not see that his faith and actions worked together?
Do you not see that his works made his faith complete?
In this way only would the scripture truly make sense, the one that said,
Abraham trusted in God and it was counted to him for righteousness, as
he was called God's friend. Is it not yet obvious one must have works to
be justified, not just faith alone?
In the same way, was not Rahab, the harlot, justified by works when she
hid the messengers, then sent them safely away?
Like the body without pneuma is dead, faith without works is also dead.

4:1 - What is the origin of the debate and hostility among you?
You know it comes from a clash of desires in your midst, do you not?
You all want, but you do not get.
You want things so much you could kill for them, but you never get them.
You fight and argue, but you still never get what you want.
You do not receive what you want because you do not ask.
You do not receive when you do ask because you ask for wrong reasons.
You only ask for things you can consume in your passions.
You adulterers and adulteresses!
You know friendship with the world is hated by God.
You know those who befriend people in the world are God's enemies.
You know the scriptures are not wrong when they say the pneuma inside
you is happiest when fulfilling its own desires.

It's not tough to see how the arroyo between breath, feeling, belief,
thinking, life, air, and word (on one side) and the immortal "spirits" that
were dreamed up by translators (on the other side) became bridged.

Phantasma was a word formed by Greeks to connote apparitions and
hallucinations like the two dreams (the "devil" and "holy ghost") jammed
in by false-christian renderers who associate a Greek word that stands
for "illusion" with their fantasy-word "spirit".

Fitting, huh?

Phantasma only appears in the following two places.

Mt 14:24 - When the ship reached the middle of the lake, waves tossed it because the wind was contrary. During the night, in the fourth watch, his disciples saw Jesus coming toward them, walking on the water. His disciples were troubled as soon as they saw him. His disciples screamed, It is a phantasma!
His disciples began crying out in terror.

Mk 6:49 - His disciples saw him walking across the water.
His disciples started shrieking, for they imagined he was a phantasma.

Jesus' disciples figured they were seeing something abnormal.

Jesus assured them they were seeing him, not a **phantasma**.

Everyone is familiar with the **phantasma** that haunt the tales, fables, and fancies of old wives, for they are just like the airy-fairy apparitions anti-christians always attach to, but can never find in, the Bible.

Everyone doesn't know they're the very aberrations Yahweh sent out to people who wouldn't accept the truth in a **pneuma** of love.

2 Thes 2:11 - Owing to that, God will send them strong delusions, which will make them believe lies. Owing to that, God can eliminate everybody who does not love the truth, but takes pleasure in unrighteousness.

Verses were seen in which **ruach** and **pneuma** mean divine mind.

Verses were seen in which **ruach** and **pneuma** indicate the intensities and forces Yahweh uses to outwork the purposes of his will.

Verses were seen in which **ruach** and **pneuma** correlate to the human mind, will, passion, need, and life, as well as the human itself.

Verses were seen in which **ruach** and **pneuma** represent wind of each and every variety, literal and figurative.

No verses were seen in which **ruach** and **pneuma** denote some eternally and everlastingly living, aware, intelligent portion of an human being that continues on after the body goes extinct. No verses like them will ever be seen because there are no verses like them in the Bible.

"How can it be?" one may inquire. "How can so many trillions of souls have read the Bible, but still come away convinced of the immortality of their inner selves?"

Well, what if those trillions didn't really read the Bible at all?

What if they merely snoozed through it, drifting along on the belief their teachers knew what they were talking about?

What if they didn't understand that translations almost always echo beliefs of translators, not necessarily meanings of originals?

What if they hadn't truly dug in and determined for themselves what the Bible says?

What if they were happy as hamsters to hinge their hankerings upon the "Glorious Reward" promised by their Padres and Pastors?

What if they thought they already knew everything anyone ever had to know about the Bible?

If so, they'd be wrong. Dead wrong.

If so, they'd be out of luck. Flat out.

It's true, for God says dead humans end up in one of three groups:

Humans who'll be raised and chosen.

Humans who'll be raised and rejected.

Humans who'll play dead forever.

The non-responsible (unaware, good or bad) dead can't be tormented.

They're gone.

They're extinct.

They're far beyond the reach of any hand but the hand of God.

They're unfortunate, too, since God has disclosed no desire to reach out and touch them.

As for people still living, the Bible says living human beings encounter temptation when they're drawn away by their own needs or cravings, not by way of outside sources. Above all, not by some "evil spirit being" who claims to work in opposition to the will of God.

"Why not?"

The answer: because as can be seen above and below, the only "being" anywhere in the Bible to claim responsibility for the evil which has come on the nations and people of Earth is the Big Guy himself.

Dt 32:39 - I, Yahweh, am the most high.

There is no other god beside me.

I kill and I make alive.

I wound and I heal.

I swear no one will ever snatch you out of my hand.

1 Sam 2:6 - Yahweh kills and Yahweh makes alive.

Yahweh sends people down to the grave.

Yahweh raises people back up from the grave.

Yahweh makes people poor or wealthy.

Yahweh knocks people down.

Yahweh helps people get back on their feet.

Yahweh lifts poor men up from the dust.

Yahweh could even raise a beggar up from a shit-pile.

Yahweh could set him among royalty and give him a throne of glory.

Ps 78:41 - They turned back and tested God, restricting the holy one of Israel. They did not remember his help. They forgot he delivered them from all their enemies, and that he performed signs in Egypt by bringing the ferocity of his rage on the Egyptians when he sent evil angels among them. Yahweh expressed his wrath and did not let them elude death.

Is 45:5 - I am Yahweh and there is no one else.
I am the only God and I create light and darkness.
I bring peace and I bring evil.
I, Yahweh, do all these things.

Lam 3:37 - No person can predict something and have it come to pass if Yahweh says it will not happen.
It is from the mouth of the Most High both evil and good proceed.
So why do the living protest when they are punished for their sins?
Let us examine and prove our ways.
Let us return again to Yahweh.

Amos 3:6 - Is it possible people in a city would not come together when a trumpet sounds among them?
Is it possible evil would be in a city and Yahweh did not do it?

Evil on a nation is evil on its people. As a result, it should be of some interest to the people of Earth to know the God of Israel really has the ability (power) and desire (will) to send evil (a righteous recompense for disgusting deeds) on the people of the planet. It's of little concern how much sway Israel's **Elohim** has over any particular nation. Meditation of this type is for people who believe human minds grow when they're used for purposes other than intensifying the awareness of truth. A human mind doesn't inflate when it travels a way which leads it from the truth. A human mind just twirls down and away and gone. A human mind just entertains delusions. It's the delusions that make human minds suppose moving away from God and the truth is growing. But human minds often confuse crud and creativity.

For Yahweh to control part, Yahweh has to control all.

For Yahweh to bring about the precise political balance necessary to manifest the promised son in the least of Rome's provinces, Yahweh had to have controlled the Roman empire. To be in control of Rome's empire Yahweh would have to have governed the three empires before Rome.

And on and on it goes from there, the fruitless search for a thing of greater comfort than knowing Israel's Elohim controls Earth now.

Near the beginning of **Daniel's** book, a figure can be seen tossing and turning in a rumpled bed in a rumpled royal bed-chamber in a castle that belongs to the ruler of Earth.

The castle is situated in Babylon.
The figure on the bed is Nebuchadnezzar.

Dan 2:1 - King Nebuchadnezzar had dreams that troubled his spirit and caused him to wake out of his sleep. The king sent for his magicians and astrologers, sorcerers and Chaldeans, then ordered them to assemble in his presence and tell him the meaning of his dreams.

10 - The Chaldeans heard, and cried, Nobody on Earth can interpret our king's dreams, none but the gods, and they do not live among humans. Because of it, the king grew very angry. Because of it, he ordered a slaughter of all Babylon's wise men. A decree went out saying all the wise men in Babylon must be killed. When they came to take Daniel, he spoke with discretion and awareness to Arioch, captain of the king's guard, who was to slay the wise men. Daniel asked, Why is the decree from the king so hasty? Arioch revealed the matter to Daniel, and Daniel went in to ask the king for more time, promising to reveal the meaning later. Daniel went back home, where he made the thing known to his comrades and implored them to pray to the God of heaven, asking for his mercy in relation to the meaning of the dreams, and that Daniel, with the rest of Babylon's wise men, might not be destroyed. Because of it, the meaning of the dreams was revealed to Daniel in visions of the night.

Dan 2:20 - Daniel prayed, saying, Our God's name is blessed for all ages. He is filled with wisdom and strength. He alters times and seasons. He removes kings and establishes kings. He pours wisdom out on the wise, revealing deep and hidden things.

23 - I thank you and praise you, oh God of my fathers.
You gave me knowledge and power by explaining the king's dreams.

Something about Nebuchadnezzar's dreams caused **Daniel** to confer thanks on God for controlling kings, empires, nations, and people.

Daniel wasn't the only prophet to say Yahweh ruled the Earth and all its kingdoms. **Jeremiah** also said a day would come when Abraham's God was going to consolidate world power under one leader. He revealed the king of Babylon had been chosen to begin the process.

Jer 27:4 - Yahweh of hosts, the God of Israel, says, I arrayed Earth, in addition to every human and animal on it, through my great power and by my outstretched arm. Because of it, I give Earth to the people I desire. I have chosen to place Earth in the hands of Babylon's ruler, my servant. From now on, all nations will follow him, his son, and his son's son.

It will continue until the day their nation reaches its end. At that point, many nations having powerful kings will come to serve themselves of him. Until that time, whatever sovereignty or nation will not bow down before Nebuchadnezzar, Babylon's ruler, is a country I will judge, says Yahweh, with sword, famine, and plague until it is consumed.

Daniel's interpretation of Nebuchadnezzar's dreams is seen below.

Dan 2:24 - Daniel returned to Arioch, the one the king sent to slaughter Babylon's wise men, and Arioch led Daniel into the king's presence. Daniel acknowledged the presence of the king, then said, The reply that you requested cannot be discovered by wise men, astrologers, magicians or soothsayers, but there is a God in heaven who reveals secrets. He is causing you to dream so you can see what will take place in the last time. You will now learn the meaning of your dreams. **(27)**
You, oh king, saw and watched a great image.
The image standing before you was majestic, and it glowed brilliantly.
The image was colossal in size.
The head was precious gold.
The chest and arms were silver.
The stomach and thighs were brass.
The legs were iron.
The feet were part iron and part clay.
Then a stone was cut out by non-human hands as you watched.
The stone struck the iron and clay feet of the image.
The stone crushed them to bits.
The iron, clay, brass, silver, and gold all went to pieces together.
The pieces became as chaff on a summer threshing-floor.
The wind blew them all away and no place could be found for them.
The stone that struck the image turned into a great mountain.
The mountain filled the whole Earth. **(31)**

38 - You, oh Nebuchadnezzar, are that head of gold.
A kingdom less grand than yours will rise up after you.
A third kingdom of brass will rise and rule the Earth.
A fourth kingdom will be as powerful as iron.
In the days of these kings, the God of heaven will set up a kingdom.
This kingdom will never be destroyed.
This kingdom will not be passed on from generation to generation.
This kingdom will break and consume all other kingdoms.
This kingdom will stand forever. **(44)**

Having a plan and purpose so deep and wide, Israel's God can't afford to allow opposing forces to come into the picture. On the divine level, it isn't an issue of good and evil, but only working the plan.

The Big Guy is a potter.
The clay is humanity.
The ball belongs to God.
The game is over if the Big Guy grabs his ball and goes home.

Bad things that come on kingdoms and individuals don't originate with some abominable "spirit being" and his horde of "demons".

Bad things on Earth rise from human lives being lived in ways opposed to the plan and purpose of God.

Humans don't have to experience the outcome of rebellious acts.
Humans can always turn around and take off in the right direction.
Humans can live their lives in line with the divine plan.
Humans can experience the highest level of having free will.
God's desires are going to come about . . . one way or another.
God's plan has been unfolding itself for six thousand years.
Go figure the odds it will stop now.

Ex 32:9 - Yahweh said to Moses, I know these people, and as anyone can see, they have always been a stiff-necked bunch. Let me be. Leave now so my anger can flare hot against them until they are entirely consumed. And after, I will bring forth my great nation from you.

Moses asked Yahweh, his God, Yahweh, why does your wrath burn so hot against these people, the ones you delivered from Egypt with your great power and your mighty hand?

You know what the Egyptians will say.

You know they will say you took the people out for a wicked purpose.

You know they will say you wanted to destroy them in the mountains.

You know they will say you hoped to eradicate them from the planet.

Yahweh, turn from your fierce wrath.

Yahweh, repent of the evil you now intend against these people.

Remember your servants, Abraham, Isaac, and Israel.

Remember you vowed by your own existence.

Remember you agreed you would multiply their seed in number.

Remember you said they would be as the stars of heaven.

Remember the land of which you spoke.

Remember you said you would give it to their seed.

Remember you said their seed would inherit it forever.

So Yahweh repented of the evil he thought to bring on his people.

Jdgs 2:11 - The children of Israel did evil by serving the Baal.

14 - Yahweh's wrath burned hotly against Israel, and he gave them over to spoilers who brought them down. He sold them into the hands of the enemies round and about and they could no longer stand against them.

No matter where they went, Yahweh's hand was against them for evil as he had promised, and they were greatly distressed.

Jer 18:7 - Whenever I speak concerning a nation and kingdom to tear it down, or overthrow it, or consume it, if the nation against which I spoke evil turns from iniquity, I will repent of the evil I said I would do it. Whenever I speak concerning a nation and kingdom to build it or plant it and the nation works evil before me by not following me, I will repent of the good with which I said I would benefit it.

19:3 - Yahweh of hosts, Israel's God, says, Watch me, for I will bring so much evil on this place that the ears of all that hear will tingle. I will do this because Israel has stopped following me. I will do it because Israel has estranged this place by burning incense to other gods, to gods which neither they or their fathers ever knew.

15 - Observe, I am prepared to bring on this city and on all her suburbs the full measure of evil I pronounced against them. I will do it because they have stiffened their necks. I will do it because they have said they will not listen to my words.

26:2 - Yahweh told me, Stand in the courtyard of Yahweh's house. You must repeat all the words I gave you to the people coming from the cities of Judah when they ascend to Yahweh's house to worship. Do not leave out a word, for it is possible they will listen. Who knows, perhaps they will turn from their wicked ways? If they do, perhaps I will repent of all the evil I am prepared to unleash on them because of their corruption.

Micah 1:12 - The inhabitants of Maroth in Judah watched carefully for good, but evil came down from Yahweh on the gates of Jerusalem.

Joel 2:12 - Yahweh says, Come back to me now. Return with all your heart in fasting and weeping and sorrow. Rend your hearts, not your clothing. Return to Yahweh, your God. Yahweh is full of grace and mercy. Yahweh is slow to anger. Yahweh overflows with kindness and often repents of evil. Who knows, perhaps he will turn and reconsider? Who knows, perhaps he will leave a blessing behind him?

Jer 29:11 - I know what thoughts I think toward you, says Yahweh. My thoughts are of peace and they contain no evil. My purpose is to give you clear goals that are full of hope.

You will call on me in the future.
You will pray and I will listen.
You will seek me, but you will only find me if you look with all your heart.

Dan 9:13 - Even with all the problems coming on us, we still did not pray to Yahweh, our God. We refused to beg him to help us put away our sin. We did not even ask to know the truth. As a result of this, now Yahweh has found great evil to send upon us. Yahweh, our God, is justified in all he has done. We are the ones who refused to live like he said.

Ecc 8:11 - Because judgment against evil deeds is not swiftly executed, human hearts are fully set to work wickedness.

Which brings us to . . .

The World

At least we know one thing for certain: every place the word "world" is seen in the Bible it means the planet, our good old Earth, right?

"It does, doesn't it?"

The answer: no, not always.

Four completely different Greek terms are regularly translated with the one English word "world".

There are some who might ask, "What does that mean?"

The answer: it means plenty!

Aion

Aion is one of four Greek words often translated "world".

Aion is seen over one hundred seventy times in the new testament.

Aion was rendered "world" forty times in King James' Bible, but in an hundred and thirty other verses, **aion** was translated by words that are intimately linked with **Time**. Following are English words (minus "world") used to translate **aion** in the King James Bible.

"eternal" (42 times) "everlasting" (25) "age" (2) "for ever" (28)
"for ever and ever" (21) "for ever more" (3) "ever" (2) "never" (7)
"course" (1)

The only appearance of "course" (the final word above) is seen in the King James version of **Paul's** letter to the **Ephesians (2:2)**.

Aion could've been translated "age" or "era". What a reader must do is hope the renderers meant to go back and change it, but forgot.

Verses where **aion** relates to **Time** appear next.

Mt 19:16 - What must I do to receive aionios (eternal) life?

29 - You who have forsaken homes, brothers, sisters, fathers, mothers, mates, children, or lands for my name's sake, will get back one hundred-fold in this aion (age). In the aion to come, you will be given aionian life (life of the age).

25:46 - Wicked people will be sent out into aionian punishment (into the punishment of the age) but the righteous will enter aionian life.

Jn 10:27 - My sheep obey my voice and I know who they are.
My sheep follow me and I am going to give them aionian life.
My sheep will never (ou me eis tos aiona, not at all to the age) perish.
My sheep will never be plucked out of my hand.

17:3 - This is aionian life: that they may understand you, the only living God, and Jesus Christ, the one you sent.

Acts 13:48 - Gentiles were happy as soon as they heard.
Gentiles were glad and they glorified the word of the Lord.
Gentiles who were ordained to receive aionian life believed.

Rom 2:6 - God will reward all believers in accord with their lives: to the believers who, through a patient continuance in well-doing, sought glory, honor, and immortality, God will grant aionian life.

Col 1:26 - The secret to the mystery hidden for aions from generations was recently revealed to people chosen by God.

Titus 1:2 - You must hope for aionian life, the life which God, who does not lie, promised before this aion began.

1 Ptr 5:20 - Let the God of all mercy, the God that has ceded us aionian glory by means of Christ Jesus, grant that when you have endured for a while you are made complete.
May God grant that you are established, strengthened, and settled.
May God be given the praise and honor forever and ever (eis tous aionos tos aionos, age after age after age).

The whole way through the Greek testament, the concept of a "next" life was qualified by the English words "eternal" and "everlasting". Each of these translations is flawed, for the English words were slipped in as surrogates for an off-shoot of the Greek word **aion**.

It would've been better if "aionian life" was used.

"What does all this mean?"

The answer: it means a word new testament writers chose to qualify the life promised by Jesus (that life all real believers cry to the Christ for) is mis-used by English translators. Rather than picking words such as "life in/of the age", translators go for English words which point the reader in distinctly diverse directions.

Christ promised no life but the life reserved for the chosen.

Chosen ones will experience life in the "Great Age".

Chosen ones will be judged worthy.

Chosen ones will become immortal.

Five ways **aion** was related to "world" appear below.

Four concern **Time** (eons, ages, and eras).

A fifth ("world") concerns **Matter**.

"beginning of the world" (2) "world began" (1) "world" (35)

"world without end" (1) "while the world stands" (1)

Matter consists of elements, atoms, neutrons, protons, and so on.

All these things belong to the "material" world.

All these things are what the river of **Time** flows through.

Greeks used **aion** to transmit the concept of **Time**, not necessarily in minutes, hours, and days, but with great chunks like centuries, ages, and eons. So how could a word like "world", which many English speakers use to mean "planet", stand in for a word all speakers in ancient Greece used to mean **Time**?

Only the translators can say.

Unfortunately, most translators can't say because they're dead.

All who are still among the living never have the time to discuss such a sublime subject with people less educated than themselves.

It should be recalled it's not really a good idea to permit your hopes to rise when seeking logical reasons translators choose this word or the other, since there's often no logic at all in their choices.

But hey, why not let their work defend itself?

First, in most English versions of the Bible, words seen in *italics* are presented in this manner because they were crammed in by translators who assumed the words would make the text easier to understand. But assuming a thing doesn't always work, since an inserted word is often in conflict with other words, words that have a right to be there.

It should also be mentioned inserted words occasionally do help.

It can be seen in a second appearance of "world" in the next verse.

Mt 12:32 - Not in this world (aion) or the *world* to come.

Are you wondering how inserting the italicized word into the verse by **Matthew** above could possibly help?

That's easy: using it helps a translator mislead readers twice as much as if "world" was used only once.

Mt 13:22 - Cares of this aion and the deceitfulness of riches.

39 - End of the aion (world?).

40 - End of the aion.

49 - End of the aion.

24:3 - What sign will reveal you have returned?

What sign will show us it is the end of the aion?

28:20 - I will be with you in all ways, right up to the end of the aion.

1 Cor 10:11 - Us, upon whom the end of the aion has come.

Heb 9:26 - But now once at the end of the aion.

THIS IS IMPORTANT!

The last seven verses are the only verses in English Bibles containing the English phrase "end of the world". Sadly, the scrolls weren't penned in English so it means little what English versions say.

A better rendering would've been "end of the age".

The Bible **NEVER** mentions the demise of the planet.

The Bible **NEVER** speaks of the end of the globe.

The Bible **NEVER** talks about the destruction of Earth at all.

Mk 4:19 - The cares of this aion.

10:30 - In the aion to come, they will receive aionian life.

The last verse needs a closer look. Renderers of many English Bibles use "world" to signify **aion**, then substitute "eternal" as the replacement for **aionion**. How can they use words associated with two separate ideas (like "world" = **Matter** and "everlasting" = **Time**) to render related words in the very same verse?

If they don't know, who would?

One may also speculate (as mentioned earlier) why a translator would use the English term "eternal", which conveys time without end, to pinch-hit for a word Greeks used to mean time with an end.

Lk 1:70 - Just as God swore through the words of his holy prophets.

Just as God swore by those who have been around since the aion began.

16:8 - Children of this aion.

18:30 - In the aion to come, they will get aionion life (life of the age).

Again, for purposes they alone know, renderers choose English terms associated with two different concepts (**Matter** and **Time with no end**) when rendering the Greek word associated with **Time** which does have a clearly defined beginning and end.

English renderings often say "In the world to come, life everlasting". As a matter of fact, the scrolls never mention **Time with no end** at all, not unless it's related to God, the one it proclaims was here long before humans came, the one who will be here long after humans are gone.

Lk 20:34 - Children of this aion marry and are given in marriage, but all those judged worthy to gain (places in) the future aion by means of the raising of the dead will not marry or be given in marriage. They are not going to die again, for they will be equal to angels. And since they were born through resurrection, they will truly be children of God.

Jn 9:32 - Not once since the aion began was it reported that somebody opened the eyes of a person born blind.

Acts 3:21 - A time for restoring all things, a time God promised by way of the words of his holy prophets since the aion began.

15:18 - God knows all he has done from the beginning of the aion.

Rom 12:2 - Do not be conformed to this aion.

16:25 - The mystery kept secret since this aion began.

1 Cor 1:20 - What happened to all the great debators of this aion? Has God not shown the wisdom of this world (kosmos) is foolishness?

Now they've really done it! They rendered a totally different Greek word with the English "world". They took **kosmos**, a word Greek writers utilized to denote how things function on Earth and substituted "world", a term almost all English speakers utter to mean the planet itself.

1 Cor 2:6 - We use wisdom when we speak, but not wisdom used by this aion, and not wisdom used by people who control this aion. We speak by wisdom from God, which was around long before the aion began. It is a wisdom none of this aion's leaders know a thing about, however. (8)

8:13 - If I eat meat and it causes a brother to offend God, I will never eat meat again, not so long as the aion stands.

2 Cor 4:4 - The god (theos, an object of veneration) of this aion blinded the minds of those who do not believe.

Gal 1:4 - Deliver us from this present evil aion.

Eph 1:21 - Not only in this aion, but in the aion to come.

3:9 - The mystery kept secret by God from the beginning of this aion.

21 - To all genea (generations) and aions (ages) without end.

6:12 - The rulers of the darkness of this aion.

1 Tim 6:17 - Warn those with wealth in this aion not to assume they are more important than they really are.

2 Tim 1:9 - Given to us in Christ Jesus before the aion began.

4:10 - He has forsaken me, having loved this present aion more.

Titus 1:2 - The hope of aionion life, promised before this aion began.

2:12 - Live soberly and righteously in a godly way in the present aion.

Heb 1:2 - God established the aions.

6:5 - The powers of the aion to come.

11:3 - Faith is what allows us to comprehend that the aions are entirely intertwined through the word of God.

There it is: not a single verse suffers if the proper translation ("age" or "era") is substituted for **aion**.

Actually, replacing "world" with a word having to do with **Time** clears up the verses, especially those dealing with the end of the **aion**.

ONE FINAL TIME: ends of **aions** can be found in the Bible, but an end to planet Earth will never be seen.

Here are three reasons why renderers may have substituted "world" for **aion** in thirty five verses, while they used words related to **Time** as substitutes for **aion** in one hundred and thirty others . . .

One: the English "world" signified more than just the planet to them. It may have meant the length of time a certain state of affairs reigned on Earth. It could also have meant the forces that controlled states of affairs on Earth.

Two: they saw something in the context of verses that obliged them to use words meaning the actual planet. But if each verse in question is

examined, nothing will be seen in any verse demanding, or even hinting, a word relating to **Matter** is better than one relating to **Time**.

Three: they mis-translated scrolls on purpose and slanted them.

They did it so their "Bible" said things they believed were true.

Obviously, readers must weigh the evidence, then roll the bones.

People who presume the Earth is going to be demolished can't explain verses like the following three. The option put to use by many who claim to maintain an overwhelming admiration for the Bible, but who expend no time at all turning its pages, is to ignore the verses.

Ps 104:5 - Yahweh arranged Earth's foundation in such a manner that it would not be removed forever (olam, for the ages).

Eccl 1:3 - One generation passes away and another generation takes its place, but the Earth will continue forever (netsach, until the end).

Is 45:18 - Yahweh laid out the heavens.

God himself took control of the Earth.

He brought it under his power and held sway over it.

God did not want the Earth to go on without life (tohu) so he configured it to be inhabited.

There are people who'd object.

There are people who'd shout, "Whhhoa up, big feller!! Them verses don't say nothing about Earth going on for ever and ever and ever."

No, Cowboy, those verses doesn't say that, do them? The thing they infer is that Earth will be around for as long as is necessary. And after the last humans lucky enough to survive what is called a "Wonderful and Precious Life" move on to bigger and better things, what need could you possibly have for a "Wonderful and Precious Planet"?

No need at all, hey pardner?

Humans who didn't become immortal will be history.

Besides, only thing dead people need a planet for is to be buried in.

Heck, Tex, after the last hoss high-tails it, who needs a corral?

Tohu and Bohu

The King James Bible is misleading in another way: in the King James, the Hebrew word **tohu** is translated with "in vain". What a queer choice, for **Isaiah (45:18)** just said the opposite of being **tohu** is "inhabited".

So why translate **tohu** with terms not related to "uninhabited"?

And why translate it using the English words "without form"?

Gen 1:2 - Earth was without form (tohu) and void (bohu).

Tohu was also translated as "vanity", "waste", and "object of nought", none of which is close to meaning "uninhabited". It's obvious the author of **Genesis** only wished to say Earth held no life because its atmosphere was in a chaotic condition. King James' boys must have wanted the Bible to declare the globe didn't previously exist at all, but was whisked up by their Creator, Who used globs and gluts of stuff left over from the day He glued the universe together.

Where'd they get such a goofy idea? Surely, not from **Genesis**.

Bohu is seen three times in the Bible.

It appears once as "emptiness" and twice as "void".

"Void" is how **bohu** was translated in **Genesis 1**, remember?

The other two appearances follow.

Is 34:11 - Cormorants and bitterns will live in Edom.

There will be owls and ravens living there, too.

Yahweh will lay a line of confusion (tohu) across it.

Yahweh will drop stones of emptiness (bohu) on it.

Jer 4:23 - I looked at the Earth and it was without form (tohu).

Earth was void (bohu) and no light could be seen in its heaven.

Isn't it even more apparent now that before the Elohim went to work on Earth it was in a chaotic state and held no life?

Depends how a person takes the word "created", doesn't it?

Since no natural events have been seen in which something is formed from nothing, and since the only verses remotely dealing with the Earth being made once again able to sustain life were already looked at, where is the logic in thinking the first few verses of **Genesis** are a story about the "creation" of the universe, or even of Earth?

How could anyone possibly read the first verses in **Genesis** and think the planet wasn't already there?

The Bible doesn't divulge how many spazillions of years this rock has been around, assuming it's been around that many years.

The Bible doesn't reveal anything about the ancestry of the universe.

The Bible does say it wasn't all that long ago when Earth arrived at a physical condition which would allow it to support life.

The Bible says humans are one form of that life.

The Bible has nothing more to say on the subject.

So what of the hotly-contested debate fuming between Creationers, who swear **Genesis** proves their "God" tossed together the universe out of some grab-bag of powers accessible only to "Himself" and Scientists,

who proclaim **Genesis** is no more than a fantasy and the universe actually popped into existence through some mindless mingling of matter?

So what about them? According to what was just seen, their debate has less value than the mindless mutterings of Beevis and Butthead.

The determination as to which side is represented by Beevis is up to each individual.

The other side, of course, would be the Reverends.

The point is that many of the most influential and richly paid persons in society, counting Scientists, Philosophers, Priests, Preachers, Parsons, Professors, Politicians, and Pimps have no idea at all what the Bible says.

So why are so many people so caught up in their foolishness?

Two verses concerning Earth's future . . .

Num 14:21 - As surely as I live, Earth will be full of Yahweh's glory.

Is 11:9 - All those on Earth will have knowledge of Yahweh's glory.
Yahweh's glory will cover Earth like water covers the sea.

A review of old testament scrolls shows translators treated Hebrew words such as **olam** the same. **Olam** is identical to **aion** and was adopted by people who spoke Hebrew to mean a thing akin to **aion**.

An **olam** is a very long and very precisely fixed period of time.

Olam appears in the old testament in four hundred or so places.

It was translated "world" in only four verses, which isn't many.

It's best, however, to always render **olam** and **aion** with words which signify vast periods of time in the past, present, or future.

Verses where **olam** was translated "world" appear below.

Why weren't words relating to **Time** used?

Ps 73:12 - People like that are without God.

People like that thrive in this **olam**.

People like that enlarge themselves with riches.

Eccl 3:11 - God has set the **olam** in their hearts.

Is 45:17 - Yahweh will bless Israel with **olam** (age-lasting) salvation.

Israel will never again suffer shame or bewilderment *ad oleme ad* (world without end, through ages of duration).

64:4 - Never has it been since the beginning of the **olam** that an ear has heard or an eye has glimpsed what Yahweh is preparing for the ones who wait on him.

Bible people surely had a limited awareness of time.

People who lived in the years of the Bible were acquainted with **olams**, **aions**, seasons, days, nights, dawn, noon, sunset, and dark.

That was about it, except for isolated ritual computations performed by certain classes, clutches, and clots of individuals.

Bible people had little to do with hours, minutes, seconds, or teensier ticks of time.

What's being said here is that people must be cautious how they take the Bible. The disadvantage of not knowing what English words are used to translate what Hebrew or Greek words should be apparent by now. A reader doesn't want to confuse meanings of things appearing in Greek or Hebrew times with what the things may mean now. (2002 AD)

People alive in Bible years found themselves in a completely different **olam** and **aion** than the **olam** and **aion** existing today.

But back to the other Greek words translated "world" . . .

Kosmos

Yes, Karl, the word is **kosmos**.

Everyone's heard about the **kosmos**.

Everyone's heard it's a very big place, and a very old place, too.

NOT . . . !

That's not the prime meaning of the Greek word **kosmos**. For Greeks, who created the word, **kosmos** tended more toward how the globe works. No doubt, the globe itself was included in the definition, but would warm and fuzzy feelings be felt all over if one was asked to defend the theory the **kosmos** is only the planet in Peter's letter below?

2 Ptr 2:5 - God did not save the old kosmos, but he preserved Noah. He brought a flood on the kosmos of the ungodly, which caused that kosmos (the kosmos of their aion) to overflow with water and perish.

Anyone who presumes Peter was talking about the Earth, and not how it was being operated, should tweak **Genesis** a bit so it claims Noah built a space shuttle, not an ark, and that Noah and the family, along with the animals, spun orbits about the biggest chunk of dear old Earth until God rounded up all the other fragments, glued them back together, and gave the new sphere a twirl, making it again able to support life.

As seen earlier, **kosmos** is another word related to "world".

Aion applied to Earth with regard to **Time**.

Kosmos applied to how Earth was run, whether natural or man-made.

These are things we in the modern world (this **kosmos**) designate the "laws of nature". To people with a more spiritual or philosophical leaning they are "God's will" and/or "the political systems of humankind".

Kosmos (or words derived from it) is found in the new testament two hundred times. It was translated as "world" most often. In the rest of the places, **kosmos** was translated as follows . . .

"adorn" (6) "garnish" (4) "trim" (1) "ruler" (1)
"of good behavior" (1) "modest" (1).

John interjected **kosmos** into chapter 21 in **Revelation** in the symbolic scene portraying the new order of things in the age to come.

A **kosmos** under the thumbs of Jesus and the elect.

A **kosmos** when God is once again manifest in human beings.

21:1 - I saw a new heaven and a new Earth.

2 - I saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, descending from God.

I watched it come down out of heaven.

It was arrayed like a bride adorned (**kosmos**) for her husband-to-be.

Kosmos was used a bit later in the chapter to depict the composition of the walls of that symbolic city. But this time, King James' translators used the English word "garnish" instead of "adorned".

The verse in question appears below.

21:9 - The foundation of this city's wall was garnished (**kosmos**) with all kinds of precious stones.

Luke used **kosmos** in relation to Jerusalem's temple.

Lk 21:5 - Some spoke about the temple, of how it was adorned (**kosmos**) with precious stones and gifts.

Kosmos as "adorn": 1 Tim 2:9, Titus 2:10, and 1 Peter 3:5.

Kosmos as "garnish": Matthew 12:44, 23:29, and Luke 11:25.

Kosmos as "trim": Matthew 25:7.

Kosmos as "ruler": Ephesians 6:12. (Translated from **kosmokrator**)

Kosmos as "of good behavior": 1 Timothy 3:2.

Kosmos as "modest": 1 Timothy 2:9. (See below)

1 Tim 2:9 - In the same way, women should adorn (**kosmeo**) themselves in modest (**kosmios**) clothing.

"Modest" is found in fellowship with "adorn" in this verse.

Both English words were rendered from forms of **kosmos**.

So why was **kosmos** translated "world" in the next passage?

Mt 13:34 - Everything Jesus said was in parables.
Jesus did not speak in public at all unless he used a parable.
Jesus did it so the word of David, the prophet, would come to pass.
Jesus did it because David wrote, I will open my mouth in parables and I will speak of things kept veiled since the kosmos (world) began.

It's hard to believe people in this **aion (2002 AD)** could possibly think the **kosmos** above has anything to do with the creation of the universe.

"Why is it hard to believe people living today could think that?"

The answer: because Jesus spelled out the meaning of the parable to his disciples after the outsiders had been sent away.

37 - The one who sows the good seed is the son of man.
The field is the kosmos.
The good seeds are children of the kingdom, but the tares are evil ones.
The enemy that sowed them is the diabolos (false accuser, liar).
The harvest is the end of the aion and the reapers are angels.
Thus, as tares are gathered to be burned by fire, so will it also be when the aion ends. The son of man will send out his angels. They will remove that which offends and people who do evil out of his kingdom and hurl it all into a fiery furnace where there will be wailing and grinding of teeth, but the righteous will shine like the sun in their Father's kingdom.
All who have ears, let them hear.

The one place this **kosmos** won't be found is clear.

This kingdom of God's son isn't the anti-Christian "Heaven".

People who presume it's in the skies are cordially invited to enlighten the rest of us regarding which offensive and evil things and people up in "Heaven" will be plucked out and burned at Christ's return.

Time slips away while we wait . . .

The Bible says tickets to the real **kosmos** from heaven will be turned over to the chosen at the return of Christ, not before.

25:13 - He will set the sheep at his right hand, the goats at his left.
He (the King) will address those at his right hand, saying, Come, you who have been blessed by the Father. Come now. Come, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the beginning of the kosmos.

26:13 - Wherever the gospel is preached in all the kosmos, this woman's act will also appear as a testimony to her faith.

Mk 16:15 - He told his eleven remaining apostles, You must go forth now into this kosmos and declare the gospel to all people. People who believe and are baptized will be saved, but people who do not believe will be lost.

20 - Preaching everywhere, they went forth, the Lord working with them, confirming their words with signs that followed.

Lk 9:25 - What good would it do a person if he gained the entire kosmos, but lost his psuche and was cast away?

Jn 3:16- God loved the kosmos so much he gave his only begotten son. God did it so all who believe into him will not die, but have aionian life.

Rom 1:8 - I thank my God through Jesus Christ for all of you. I thank my God your faith is spoken of throughout the kosmos.

4:13 - The promise that said he was to inherit the kosmos was not given to Abraham and his offspring through the law. It came by means of the righteousness that is accounted to those with faith.

Paul included this promise in the letter to **Galatian** believers: "If you are in Christ, then you are Abraham's seed. Because you are Abraham's seed, you are also in line to inherit the promises." (**3:29**)

It doesn't take a whiz at rocketry to comprehend what Paul felt the faithful would receive as their reward.

Eph 2:2 - The course (aion) of this kosmos.

James 4:4 - You adulterers and adulteresses, do you not see that those who are friends of the kosmos are hated by God? All who are friends with people in the kosmos are God's enemies.

1 Jn 2:15 - Do not love the kosmos or things in the kosmos. All who love the kosmos have no love for the Father in them.

4:1 - Beloved, do not believe every pneuma (teaching, teacher). Examine them to determine if they are from God. Examine them, for many false prophets are loose in the kosmos.

4 - You are of God, little children, and you have overcome. The one in you is mightier than those in the kosmos. They belong to the kosmos. They speak of the kosmos and the kosmos understands them. Those with us are of God. Those who know God understand us. Those who do not know God have trouble with the things we say. This is the only way we can tell who has the pneuma of truth. This is also the only way we can tell who has the pneuma of error.

Rev 11:15 - The seventh angel sounded his trumpet. Later, I could hear loud voices in heaven, shouting, The dominion of this kosmos now belongs to the Lord (Yahweh) and his Christ. And they will reign throughout the ages (eis tous aionas ton aionon, for ages upon ages).

People who want to investigate the remaining places **kosmos** was used must find an Analytical Concordance (Young's, perhaps) and go for it.

People who don't care would be wasting time.

Another of those pesky decisions left to all individuals.

Another of those necessary decisions left to you.

Oikoumene

Oikoumene is a Greek word also translated "world".

It appears fifteen times in the whole Bible.

It appears once as "earth".

It appears the other fourteen times as "world".

All you need to know about **oikoumene** is seen below.

Mt 24:14 - This gospel will be preached for a witness in every nation of the oikoumene, with the end to come after.

Lk 21:35 - There will be signs in the sun, moon, and stars.

Nations on Earth (ge) will know panic and trauma because of the roaring of the waves of the sea. People will faint at the things they believe are coming on the oikoumene, for the powers of heaven will be shaken.

Acts 11:27 - On one particular day, prophets arrived in Jerusalem from Antioch. One of them, Agabus, stood and testified in the pneuma there would be a great famine through all the oikoumene.

When a terrible famine did appear in the days of Claudius Caesar, every disciple, each according to his or her own ability, agreed to send help to the brethren living in Judea.

17:6 - They hauled Jason and a number of other believers to the people who governed the city, saying, The ones who have turned the oikoumene upside down are now doing the same thing here.

19:27 - This man, Paul, has convinced and turned away many, saying that something made by human hands cannot be a god. This man, Paul, is also not only putting our livelihoods in danger of dropping off to nothing, but he is putting the sanctuary of the great goddess, Diana, the one that is revered by all those of Asia, as well as by those living in the rest of the oikoumene, in danger of being hated, with her splendor being destroyed.

24:5 - We find this man to be a pest, one who advocates Jews to revolt throughout the **oikoumene**. And the man is one of the ringleaders in the cult of the Nazarenes, too.

Rom 10:18 - Their voices went into all the Earth.
Their word went to the ends of the **oikoumene**.

Heb 2:5 - God will not put the **oikoumene** of the future, the one we told you about, under the angels. Instead, God will put this **oikoumene** under Jesus and the chosen.

Rev 3:10 - Since you have been courageous, and obeyed my words, I will keep you apart from the hour of testing that is going to appear through all the **oikoumene**, the hour which will try those who live on the Earth.

16:14 - They are *pneuma* of *daimonia*, which have gone forth to perform wonders before the kings of Earth and the whole **oikoumene**, whom they will assemble together for battle on that great day.

So where's the **oikoumene** these verses are talking about?

No knowledge of rocket science is needed here, either.

"Why not?"

The answer: because the nature of the **oikoumene** is plain in the next verse from **Luke**.

Lk 2:1 - A decree was sent out in the reign of Caesar Augustus, saying a census would be taken of (in reality: that taxes would be extorted from) everybody living in the inhabited **oikoumene**.

The inhabited **oikoumene** was no more than the people wriggling under Caesar's thumb. Everybody agrees that the Roman empire (the so-called civilized world of that day) was what Augustus was squishing beneath his thumb. In view of that, the **oikoumene** or "world" **Luke** was writing about must be the Roman empire, right?

It must be the Roman empire only, not the whole planet, right?

If not, why not?

Okay, maybe Caesar sent tax forms to all the natives who lived on the continent which would become America.

Maybe all bucks and braves were compelled to return to the very site their tribes pitched the tepees the days they were born.

Since Caesar compelled all Hebrew household heads to go back to the old hometown, it's unlikely he'd let neo-Americans slide.

Maybe Roman tax dogs, when they'd paddled to pre-America, coerced natives into forking over bundles of buffalo hides and beaver pelts.

If so, were these scraps of skin hustled back to Rome?
 Did stylish citizens hang them on the walls of their casas?
 Sad to say, no evidence has been found in Roman history showing the Romans traded with the people living in far-flung lands. Also, there's no evidence stylish Romans believed it was tasteful to cover the walls with aboriginal artifacts, not the way today's hip homemakers do, anyway.
 To get back to the point: there's no evidence to suggest anything but that portion of Earth known as the "Roman empire" was indicated by the **oikoumene** in which early believers were to preach the gospel.
 Talk about some other "world" Paul and Jason turned upside down.
 Then the **oikoumene** was the Roman empire, hey?

Ge

Ge is the only other word translated "world" in the Greek scrolls.
 It appears in the new testament about two hundred and fifty times.
 In King James' English Bible, **ge** was translated as . . .

"world" (1) "country" (2) "ground" (18)
 "land" (42) "earth" (188) "earthly" (1)

Verses containing **ge** can be seen below.
 Words used by translators are caged in brackets.

Rev 13:3 - The whole **ge** (world) wondered after the beast.

Mt 9:31 - The name of Jesus spread through all that **ge** (country).

Acts 7:2 - The God of glory appeared to our father, Abraham.
 God said, Move away from your **ge** (country) and all your kin.
 God said, Move to a **ge** (land) I will show you.
 Abraham left the **ge** of the Chaldeans and lived in Charan.
 After his father died, Abraham moved to another **ge**.
 Abraham moved to the very same **ge** where you now live.
 God, however, gave him no inheritance in it.
 God did not even give him a foot of it on which to stand.
 God promised he would give it to him as a possession, though.
 God also promised he would give it to Abraham's seed after him.

Heb 11:8 - It was faith which gave Abraham the ability to obey when he was told to go to a place he would later receive as an inheritance.
 He left, not even knowing where he was going.
 He was able to live in the promised **ge** (land) because of his faith.
 He lived as if he was staying in some foreign **ge** (country).
 He lived in tents with Isaac and Jacob, also heirs of the same promise.

13 - These all died in faith, with none of them receiving the promises.
They saw them afar off, though.
They knew they were true and they embraced them.
They claimed they were just strangers and pilgrims on the ge (Earth).

29 - Moses fled after he heard these words.
He lived as an alien in the ge (land) of Midian.
He fathered a pair of sons in Midian, too.

33 - Yahweh said, Take off your shoes, for the place where you stand is holy ge (ground).

36 - And he brought them out, doing miracles and omens before them in the ge (land) of Egypt, the Red Sea, and the wilderness for the space of forty years.

13:17 - The God of this people, Israel, chose our fathers.
He exalted them while they lived as interlopers in Egypt's ge (land).
He used his up-raised arm to bring them out of Egypt.
He destroyed the seven nations occupying the ge of Canaan.
He handed Israel their ge by lot when it was done.

Mt 5:5 - The meek are blessed, for they will inherit the ge (Earth).

15:35 - Jesus asked the multitude to sit on the ge (ground).

Mk 14:35 - He walked forward, fell to the ge (ground) and he started to pray that if it were in any way possible the hour might pass from him.

Lk 22:44 - Being in agony, he prayed even more earnestly, with his sweat falling off him like great drops of blood to the ge (ground).

Jn 8:6 - They quizzed him, hoping to find something with which to blame him, but Jesus bent over and wrote on the ge (ground) with his finger as if to say he did not even know they were there.

10:34 - Do not assume I came to bring peace to the ge (Earth).
I did not come to bring peace.
I came to bring a sword.

23:9 - Consider no man on the ge (Earth) your father.
You have a Father in heaven.

28:18 - Jesus appeared and told them, All power in heaven and on the ge (Earth) has been given to me.

Rev 5:10 - We have now become God's kings and priests.
We will now reign on the *ge* (Earth).

That last verse adds a pile of weight to the anti-christian's doctrine the righteous will reign in and from "Heaven" . . . or does it?

Olam means the same as the Greek word **aion**.

Aion was covered earlier.

It's now time to contend with Hebrew words meaning the same as the Greek words **ge**, **oikoumene**, and **kosmos**.

Kosmos was used by the Greeks to mean the orderly system of things called "creation": all the stars and planets, and the means by and reasons why the creation is held together.

Kosmos was also used to illustrate how creations are impacted by the creatures that inhabit them.

Oikoumene and **ge** were used to depict Earth, certain parts of Earth, and the actual dirt or ground. Hebrews had three words to indicate the same things: **erets**, **adamah**, and **tebel**.

It must be kept in mind that the images of reality given the Hebrews after they were extracted from the mental, moral and spiritual taintage of Egypt were nowhere near the ideas held by other (ignorant) people of that time. Jews honored only one source of renewal and sustenance, but Greeks, Romans, Egyptians and the other braindead dregs of the **kosmos** had convinced themselves individual entities lurked behind every natural form, making them not much different from people of today who believe in the existence of spirits of earth, water, fire, and air. They were also not unlike today's poor, dazed dupes who believe in the still-living spirits of dearly-departed dead ones like Uncle Ed or Aunt Edwina. And it's not a shock to find some even believe dearly-departed pets like Cuddles the the Cat or Puttsy the Poodle wait for them in the Great Beyond.

But enough of the lunacy!

Below are English words chosen by King James' translators to signify the three old testament Hebrew terms to be considered.

Tebel: "world" (35) "habitable part" (1)

Adamah: "country" (1) "land" (125) "ground" (43)
"earth" (53) "husbandry" (1)

Erets: "field" (1) "nation" (1) "way" (3) "world" (4)
"ground" (96) "country" (140) "wilderness" (1)
"them that dwell in a country" (1) "common" (1)
"earth" & "land" (A lot)

Tebel and **erets** will be seen first.

King James' translators selected "habitable part" to express **tebel** in **Proverbs 8**, where the word **erets** also appears. In this verse, wisdom is represented as a close friend of the Big Guy, one that hung out with him when he established the **kosmos**.

I was with him then, as close as one who was raised with him.
I brought him pleasure each day as I rejoiced before him.
I was glad when he renewed the **tebel** (habitable portion) of **erets**.
I say, Hear me, children, for all who keep my ways will be blessed.

Verses where **tebel** was translated "world" follow.

1 Chr 16:30 - At that time, the **erets** (Earth) will travail before him.
Then the **tebel** (world) will be established, never again to be moved.
The heavens will rejoice.
The Earth will be delighted.
The nations will say, Yahweh (the one who has become) rules.

Ps 9:8 - He will judge the **tebel** in righteousness.
Erts (the Earth) belongs to Yahweh.
Earth is his **tebel**, along with its fullness and all who live on it. (**24:1**)

33:8 - Let all the **erets** (Earth) fear Yahweh.
Let each inhabitant of the **tebel** stand in awe of him.

90:2 - Before the mountains were brought forth, a long time before you arranged the **erets** (Earth) and all its **tebel**, even from **olam** to **olam**, you have always been El.

96:10 - Publish this among the heathen: Yahweh rules.
Notify them the **tebel** will be firmly fixed, never again to be moved.
Advise the nations that Yahweh will govern their people righteously.
Let the heavens rejoice and the **erets** (Earth) be glad.
He is coming.
He is coming to judge the **erets** (Earth).
He will judge the **tebel** in righteousness.
He will judge its people according to the truth.

Is 26:9 - I long for you with all my might.
I long for you during the night.
I diligently seek your truth with my whole intellect.
I do it because when your judgments come down on the **erets** (Earth) all who live on the **tebel** will be forced to learn righteousness.

27:6 - Yahweh will cause those who come out of Jacob to take root.
Israel will bud and blossom.
Israel will fill the face of the tebel with fruit.

34:1 - Come near and hear, all you nations.
Listen, all you people.
Let the erets (Earth) and all who live on it hear.
Let the tebel and all that has come out of it hear.
Yahweh's anger has fallen on all nations.
Yahweh's wrath has descended on all their armies.
Yahweh has utterly destroyed them.
Yahweh has given them over to slaughter.

Jer 10:10 - Yahweh is the true Elohim.
Yahweh is the existing Elohim.
Yahweh is an eternal king and the erets (Earth) will tremble at his rage.
Nations will not be able to handle his anger.
You will tell them this: The elah that did not arrange the heaven and the erets will vanish from the erets and from under every heaven.
Yahweh prepared the erets through his power.
Yahweh established the tebel through his wisdom.

Gen 1:1 - Elohim rearranged the heaven and the erets (Earth) because it (the erets) was chaotic and held no life (it was tohu and bohu).
Elohim said, Let the erets (Earth) bring forth living creatures, each one after its own species: cattle and crawling things, and every other animal the erets can support after its own kind. **(24)**
Elohim said, Let us make the human in our image and in our likeness, and let him have dominion over fish in the water, birds in the air, and all the animals on the erets, as well as everything crawling on the ground. **(26)**

28 - Elohim blessed them, then said, Be fruitful and increase. Replenish the erets (Earth) and control it, for you will have dominion over the fish of the sea, the birds of the air, and everything living on the ground.

Erets will continue to appear.
Adamah will also be seen.

2:4 - Here is the history of the genesis of heaven and the erets (Earth). It is a record of the time when Yahweh Elohim reorganized the erets, as well as its heaven. No plants of the field had been placed in the erets at this time and no other vegetation had sprouted in those days, either, for Yahweh Elohim had not yet caused rain to come on the erets, and also, it was because Yahweh had appointed no one to tend the plants. Mist went up from erets instead and watered all the adamah (ground).

7 - Yahweh Elohim made the human from the dust (elements) of the adamah (ground). Yahweh formed the human from the same matter which formed the erets. Elohim exhaled the breath of life afterward, then it entered the human's nostrils and turned him into a living soul.

Adam was formed from the same elements as the **adamah** (Earth).

6:5 - Elohim scanned the erets (Earth) and Elohim saw that humans had grown terribly wicked. Elohim saw that all their imaginations, as well as the plans and desires of their hearts, were no more than continuing evil each and every day. It made Yahweh reconsider his plan concerning the humans he had put on Earth, and it grieved Yahweh in his heart. Erets (the Earth) had also become full of savagery, and Elohim saw that it was fully corrupted, for all flesh had perverted his way on the erets. Elohim said to Noah, The end of all flesh has come before me. **(11)** Elohim said, It is because they fill the erets (Earth) with their violence. Watch, for you will see me destroy them and the erets along with them. I will bring rain down upon the erets for forty days and nights. In that way, I will eliminate every living substance I made from the face of the adamah (Earth). **(7:4)**

10 - Seven days after they went into the ark, floods of water fell down on the erets (Earth). Everything dwelling upon the face of the adamah (ground) perished: the humans, the animals, the crawling things, and the birds of heaven. Every living thing was wiped off the erets, and the only beings left alive were Noah and the ones with him in the ark. **(23)**

8:1 - Then Elohim remembered Noah and all the other living things with him in the ark, both humans and animals. Elohim sent out a ruach (wind) to hover above the erets (Earth). Directly, the discord began to decline. Fountains of the deep were stopped. Windows in heaven were closed. Water from the sky was restrained. And moisture began to recede from the erets over a period of time. After one hundred fifty days had passed, the water was gone.

18:2 - Abraham looked up and saw three men walking in his direction. When the men had moved somewhat closer, he ran out his tent door and greeted them. Then he bowed himself to the erets (ground).

19:1 - Two angels appeared in Sodom at dusk when Lot was guarding the gate. As soon as he saw them, he rose to meet them and bowed with his face to the erets (ground).

22:15 - Yahweh's angel cried out to Abraham, saying, I swear by my very existence (by myself, by Yahweh) that because you did this, because you did not withhold your son, your only son, that in blessing, I will cause you to become blessed. In increasing, I will increase your seed (children) as stars in heaven and as sand on the shore. Your seed (son) will reign over his enemies, and all nations on the erets will be blessed because of him.

28:12 - Jacob saw a ladder in his dream.

A ladder stood on the erets (Earth) and its top reached into heaven.

Angels of God climbed up and down the ladder.

Yahweh stood above it, saying, I am Yahweh, the Elohim of your fathers.

I am the Elohim (God) of Abraham and Isaac.

All the erets (land) upon which you sleep is land I will allocate to you and your children, and your children will be as the dust of the erets.

Your children will range into the west, east, north, and south.

All nations on the erets will be blessed because of you.

You must believe I will be with you and keep you everywhere you go.

You must believe I will return you to this adamah (land).

You must believe I will never leave you before every promise I made you has been fulfilled.

Dt 5:16 - Respect your father and mother.

Respect them like Yahweh, your Elohim, commanded you.

If you do, your days will be prolonged in the erets (land).

If you do, things will go well with you in the adamah Yahweh, your Elohim, promised you.

Job 2:13 - They sat down with him on the erets (ground).

1 Sam 20:41 - David fell with his face to the erets (ground).

Ps 74:7 - They cast fire into your sanctuaries.

They corrupted the dwelling places of your name.

They threw them down to the erets (ground).

They said in their hearts, Let us destroy them altogether.

They overturned every synagogue of God in the erets (land).

143:3 - My adversary has persecuted my soul.

My adversary stomped my life into the erets (ground).

My adversary resigned me to darkness like those who died long ago.

1 Kng 8:33 - When your people, Israel, have been struck down before an enemy because they have sinned against you, if they ever return again to you, confess your name and pray, making appeals to you from this temple, please hear from heaven and forgive the sins of Israel, your people.

Please return them to the adamah (land) you promised their fathers.
When heaven is sealed, and no rain falls because your people have sinned against you, if they ever pray toward your house, confirm your name, and abstain from the vices for which they are suffering, please hear them in heaven and forgive the sins of Israel, your servants and people.
Please lead them in the right path to walk, and please bring the rain back to the adamah (land) you promised your people as an inheritance.

41 - Regarding an alien not of your people, Israel, but an alien from a far erets (country) an alien who has come because of your name, since all will hear of your great name, your strong hand and your outstretched arm, if that alien starts to pray in the direction of your holy temple, please hear the alien in your dwelling place in heaven, then allow the alien to have the things he has requested so all those who live on the erets will honor your name and acknowledge you like your people, Israel.

Lam 2:9 - The gates of Jerusalem have fallen to the erets (ground).
Yahweh has broken down all her walls.
Israel's kings and princes now live among the heathen.
There is no more law.
The prophets receive no more visions from Yahweh.
The elders of Zion's daughter huddle on the erets (ground) in silence.
They cover their heads with dust and they are clothed in sackcloth.
The virgins of Jerusalem bend their heads to the erets (ground).

Ezk 38:16 - You are going to come against my nation, Israel, and blanket their erets (land) as a cloud. On the last day, I will provoke you to move against my erets (land) and every nation will know about me after I have been glorified in you, oh Gog, right before their eyes.
Are you not the one I talked about in the old times through my servants, the prophets of Israel, who predicted in their own days that I was going to bring you against them many years in their future?
And after Gog does advance on the adamah (land) of Israel, says Adonai Yahweh, my wrath will rise up into my face.
In my jealousy and in the fervor of my wrath I am speaking.
In that day, there will be a great quaking in Israel's adamah (land).
The fish in the water, birds in the sky, animals in the field, animals that crawl on the adamah (ground) and anything else that lives on the face of the adamah (Earth) will shudder when I appear. Mountains will fall, high places will topple, and every wall will crash to the erets (ground).

Dan 11:40 - A king from the south will press him at the time of the end. When a king of the north moves against him as a whirlwind, he will enter other erets (countries). He will enter them, then pass through. And he will even enter the glorious erets (land).

Many will be defeated, but these will escape from his hand: Edom, Moab, and the best of Ammon's children. He will reach out his hand over other erets (countries) also, and the erets (land) of Egypt will not escape.

It must be plain by now that the length of an **aion** or **olam**, as well as the scope of a **kosmos**, **oikoumene**, or **erets** should be defined by logical interpretation of the context of the verse in which it was used. This is the One Big Rule (the Golden Rule, really) to understanding the Bible.

By the way, everyone knows chapter and verse numbers, headings of chapters, references in the center of pages, and all the other debris in modern Bibles comes from editors and renderers, doesn't everyone?

People know none of it is found in Hebrew and Greek, don't they?

People should know it.

Scholars will admit original scrolls contain no capital letters.

Scholars will admit original scrolls contain no punctuation.

Scholars also expect that people won't figure out it was translators, cooperators, collaborators, interpreters and intellectuals like them who crammed in capital letters and the other stuff.

But everyone knew that, didn't they, huh?

"Why don't Scholars and Reverends push the concept of the average Joe or Jill sitting down with his or her Bible, applying whatever logic he or she has to interpreting scripture?"

That answer is simple . . .

The first thing average Joe would discover is he can untangle verses in the Bible all by his little old self.

The first thing average Jill would discover is she doesn't require the services of an Intellectual Assistant, or a Reverend, or Confusion.

The honeymoon would screech to an halt and Scholars and Reverends who presently befoul the Earth would have to find real jobs or apply for welfare like many of the poor and befuddled sheep in their flocks.

Fortunately for themselves, Scholars and Reverends have never told "lay-people" to read and reflect on the Bible just the way it was written. In all honesty, these foxes do all they can to stop it, gleefully giving life to the lie "lay-people" are not qualified to conclude what the scrolls may wish to tell them.

The path to enlightenment, purr the Padres, is only found by applying your dear ears to the outpourings of "wisdom" flowing from "servants of God" who have been taught in a "School of Divine Understanding".

"Listen, friends," they crow. "Hear our message and understand!"

"Stand under our message and hear!"

"Praise the Lord because you understood when you stood under!"

"Bless him and bless him and bless him again!"

"But if what you are hearing does not pluck the strings of your dear, hallowed hearts, just continue on in that divinely directed direction you

were given, seeking another Certified, Diplomitized, Salvationalized and Spiritualized Warrior of God's Word, another Dear Servant of the Lord.

"Listen hard, oh people, to words from these Wise Warriors.

"Bless them and bless them and bless them again!

"Stop not and do not stop!

"Bless them all!

"Bless them all with your own Dear Essence!

"Bless them until you are vibrating to their Heavenly Strains!

"Say yes oh yes oh yes!

"Say you trust your vibes, children!

"Say yes oh yes oh yes!

"Say you know . . . you . . . are . . . (deep breath!) . . . SAVED!!

"Say Hallelujah!!!

"Say Amen!!!!

"And don't forget a little love-offering on the way out, hmmm?"

The blab above is bowel wind, nothing but the out-gassing of fools.

The blab above serves one purpose alone: it's the perfect example of how to pump out a pile, but come up with little of value.

People who have enough smarts to open a Bible and start reading will at least get a shot at what it says.

People who entertain fools will get nothing but foolishness.

Reverends will admit their "deep spiritual knowledge" was granted to them by the "God" they worship.

Reverends will admit it was an intervention by their "God" that made their eyes able to see more than the dear sheep in their flocks.

A Reverend's job (say Reverends) is to open the eyes of the flock.

If they are questioned regarding the origin of orders to open eyes in the heads of their flocks, your run-of-the-mill Reverends often splutter, "Gosh! Ah . . . Golly gee!! For Heaven's sake, out of Scripture itself! As our Dear Lord Jesus lit up the eyes of his sheep of the flock, so also, we are ordered to light up the eyes of our sheep of the flock."

Dear Reverends, you're adrift in fantasy and you need to wake up.

Jesus opened the eyes of the guys who wrote the new testament.

If the assumption made by Reverends is true, Jesus opened the eyes of these guys for no reason.

Reverends are right as long as the words of the open-eyed guys have to be interpreted, but those guys with the open eyes claimed they knew what they were writing about because they'd been allowed to see.

If they're correct, what's left to "spiritually discern"?

The new testament is vital to understanding prophecies and promises found in the old. Old testament scripture is cited in hundreds of verses applying to belief and practice. If that's not enough, authors of the new testament testified themselves that the primary reason they wrote was to help believers unlock old testament enigmas concerning Christ.

If so, all that remains is to read, understand, believe, and do.

Unless you presume, dear Deacon, that after the eyes of Peter, John, and Paul were opened they immediately closed them before churning out the letters found in the new testament.

If so, you're right to claim your sheep need the "really deep spiritual knowledge" you've "scripturally amassed" to "enlighten" your dear flock.

It chills the blood to think it, though.

It's what the Bible means by the blind leading the blind.

Though the Bible speaks of blind ones who lead blind ones, the words don't always denote uninformed religious leaders. Sometimes the words mean a different kind of bloodsucking, useless, unholy mooch.

Sometimes the words refer to Politicians and Lawyers.

In either case, it's the same thing, for Politicians and Lawyers are no more than Preachers and Padres for the non-pious.

But Practitioners of Politics and Law will soon be relics of the past.

Practitioners of Politics and Law will disappear like dinosaurs.

Baby-kissers won't be welcome and Advocates won't be needed.

In the future **kosmos**, a world ruled by righteous leaders who govern by principles of truth, no room will be found for thieves and liars.

The **olam/erets/adamah** of the future will follow one leader.

The **aion/kosmos/oikoumene** of the future will follow one law.

The ruling body will be united and the people will have a limited voice.

They'll be able to say, "We'll obey."

The only other thing they'll be able to say is, "We won't obey."

The outcome will reflect the choice of the people.

The people will swiftly reap what they sow in the future.

"What makes you think that can happen?"

The answer: it can because Earth will be controlled by a **Theocracy**.

The Big Guy, with the persons he picks as administrators, will call the shots and run the show.

The name of the agency which will govern the nations of Earth during that future age is the **Kingdom of God**.

You can read all about it in **Book 3**.

The Bible for Dummies

A Final Testament

BOOK 3

KINGDOM OF GOD

The premise of an "heavenly kingdom" is first found in the agreement between El Shaddai and Abraham.

Gen 17:1 - Yahweh manifested himself to Abram.

Yahweh appeared to Abram when he was ninety and nine years old.

Yahweh told him, I am El Shaddai (God Almighty).

Walk before me, remaining trustworthy and strong. If you do, I swear I will enact a covenant with you which will enlarge you greatly.

Abram fell on his face after Elohim told him, You must never doubt what I am about to tell you. I am ready to enact a covenant with you that will make you the father of many nations.

Abram will no longer be your name.

From now on, your name will be Abraham (Eber, father of a multitude).

I will make you the father of many nations and you will be very fruitful.

Realms will rise out of you and kings will come from your loins.

I will confirm this covenant between us.

It will encompass your seed through all generations.

It will be an age-lasting covenant.

I will be a God to you and your descendants.

I will give you and your seed the land where you now live as strangers.
I will give you the whole land of Canaan for an age-lasting possession.

15 - Elohim spoke to Abraham, and said, Your wife, Sarai, will no longer be called Sarai. From now on, she will be known as Sarah (Princess).
I will bless Sarah and give you a son by her.
Sarah will be greatly exalted, for she will be the mother of many nations.
Kings of nations will also come out of her.

Other early kingdom prophecies follow.

Gen 35:9 - Elohim appeared to Jacob after he left Padan-aram.
Elohim blessed him, and said, You are now called Jacob, but your name will be Jacob no longer. From now on, your name will be Israel.
It was at that time Elohim named him Israel.
Elohim told him, I am El Shaddai.
I will cause you to be fruitful and multiply.
A nation and a company of nations will come from you.
Kings will come from your loins.
I will give you all the land I promised to Abraham and Isaac.
I will also give this same land to your seed after you.

49:1 - Jacob called all his sons to join him, saying, Gather here before me.
I am going to tell you what will befall you in the final days. Come together and hear, all you sons of Jacob. Hear the words of your father, Israel.
Judah, you will gain the praise of your brothers. **(8)**
Your hand will grip the necks of your enemies.
Your father's children will all bow before you.
And the scepter (rule, authority) will never be taken from Judah.
A king will always be found between his feet until Shiloh (Messiah) comes.

Ex 19:1 - Three months after the children of Israel departed Egypt, they came to the wilds of the Sinai and pitched camp before the mount.
Moses went up to meet Elohim, and from inside the mountain, Yahweh said,
You must repeat all the words I tell you to the house of Jacob.
Speak to Israel's seed, and say, You saw what I did to the Egyptians. And you know, too, that I carried you on eagles' wings as I brought you here to myself. I promise you now, if you loyally follow my words and my covenant, I will set you over every other nation on Earth.
You will be my special treasure, for all the Earth is mine.
You will be a kingdom of priests, my own holy nation.
Moses, this is what I want you to tell the children of Israel.

Num 23:16 - Yahweh met Balaam and put words in his mouth.
Yahweh said, Return to Balak and repeat everything I told you.

Balaam found Balak.
Balak stood next to his burnt offering, the princes of Moab beside him.
Balak asked, What did Yahweh have to say?
Balaam took up his parable, and said, Hear this, Balak.
You know God is not a man and he does not lie.
You know God is not the seed of man and he will never change his plan.
Has God ever promised something and failed to do it?
Has God ever predicted something and not brought it to pass?
You had better believe I was ordered to bless Israel, Balak.
Yahweh has blessed Israel, too, and I cannot reverse his blessing.
Yahweh sees no misbehavior in Jacob.
Yahweh sees no perversion in Israel.
Yahweh, Israel's Elohim, is with his people.
You can hear the voice of their king among them.

24:5 - How fair are your tents, oh Jacob.
How faultless are the places in which you dwell, oh Israel.
How they are spread forth like valleys, like gardens beside a river.
How they are spread forth like lign-aloe trees planted by Yahweh.
How they are spread forth like cedars beside a stream.
Yahweh will pour water from his pails.
Yahweh will water many of his seed.
Yahweh's king will be more noble than Agag, his kingdom more exalted.

15 - He took up the words of his parable again, saying, Balaam, the son of Beor, declares, I will see him, but not here or now.
Balaam declares, I will see him, but not any time soon.
A star will shoot forth from Jacob, and a scepter will rise out of Israel.
He will thrust through the princes of Moab.
He will destroy all the offspring of Sheth.
Edom will be his possession.
He will win Seir from his enemies, and Israel will do valiantly.
One having dominion will come forth from Jacob.
He will destroy those who believe they are protected.

Deut 17:14 - After you occupy the land Yahweh, your God, has vowed he will give you, after you have taken it and are living on it, you will begin to say, We want a king to reign over us like all our neighbors.
Whatever king you set over you has to be acknowledged by Yahweh, your Elohim, and he must be from among your own brethren. You cannot elect an alien to reign over you.

18 - After your king is seated on the throne of his kingdom, he will copy the laws into a scroll like the one the priests and Levites read. The king must carry this scroll with him and read from it all the days of his life.

In this way, he will come to love Yahweh, his Elohim.
In this way, he will value and obey the words of the laws and decrees.
In this way, his heart will not rise above his brothers.
In this way, he will follow the rules and not turn to the right or left.
If your king does this, he will prolong the length of his life.
If your king does this, he will prolong the life of his kingdom.

28:1 - If you listen attentively to the words spoken by Yahweh, your God, and you accept and conform to the commandments I gave you today, then Yahweh, your God, will advance you far over all the other people on Earth. And Yahweh will pour all his blessings upon you.

Conquest and control of the land under Joshua was a type (an example, symbolic) of the future conquest and control of Earth by the King and his chosen, Jesus and his saved brothers and sisters.

1 Sam 2:10 - Yahweh's adversaries will be dashed to shivers.
Yahweh will thunder down on them from the heavens.
Yahweh will rule the ends of the Earth.
Yahweh will give power to his king.
Yahweh will magnify the horn of his anointed.

Duet 28:15 - The curses will all come about if you do not obey Yahweh's laws. If you discount and ignore the laws of Yahweh, your God, including the ones I gave you today, evil will find you, take you, and drag you down.

36 - Yahweh will bring you and the king you set over you into nations you or your fathers never even heard about.
You will worship other gods there, gods of wood and stone.
You will be an astonishment, a slight, and a butt for jokes after you have been scattered into all the countries where Yahweh will lead you.

Jdgs 8:22 - The men of Israel told Gideon, You have to rule over us, you, your son, and the son of your son, too, for you are the one that delivered us from the hand of Midian.
Gideon replied, I am not going to rule over you. And none of my sons will rule over you, either. Instead, Yahweh will rule over you.

17:6 - During those days, there was no (visible) king in Israel.
During those days, people did whatever was right in their own eyes.

A man called Abbie appears in the ninth chapter of **Judges**.
Abbie's birth-name was Abimelech.
Abbie wanted to be Israel's king.
Alas, the tale only tells of his downfall and death.

Abbie's dominion was not to be, for Yahweh, Israel's true ruler, chose to give his people even more time to fulfill their real purpose: the role of being mediator between Elohim and the people of Earth, but since Israel didn't have heart for the part, the opportunity soon expired.

1 Sam 8:4 - Israel's elders all came together at Samuel's home in Ramah. Face facts, Samuel, they said to him, you are old, and your sons refuse to walk like you walk. So choose a king for us. Let him reign over us like the kings who rule other nations.

Samuel became very irritated when they kept demanding that he select a king to rule them, and he prayed to Yahweh.

Yahweh said, Wake up. Are you unaware what the people want? They are not rejecting you. They are rejecting me. It is I who they swear will not rule them. Therefore, when you have strenuously protested the decision, let them know what it will be like to have a king over them.

19 - Nevertheless, the people would not listen to Samuel's words; rather, they shouted at him, No way! We want a king to rule us so we can be like the other people. We want a real king ruling us, a king who will lead us in and out, a king who will fight our battles.

When Samuel heard the people's words, he reported them to Yahweh.

Yahweh said, Do what they want. Give them a king to rule them.

10:17 - Samuel commanded Israel's people to assemble at Mizpah before Yahweh. Then he told them, Yahweh, Israel's God, has said, I am the one that led you out of Egypt. I am the one that snatched you from the hand of the Egyptians and from the hands of all the other kingdoms wishing to persecute you.

On this day, however, you rebuffed the God that freed you from all your trials and tribulations. And all you can say is, No way! We want an human king to lead us. Okay, submit yourselves now before Yahweh.

Samuel spoke to the people, telling them, Look at the king Yahweh picked for you and admit there is no one like him in the whole nation.

All the people shouted, God save the king!

Samuel gave the people the laws of the kingdom.

He wrote the laws in a book and laid the book down before Yahweh.

After, Samuel sent the people away.

Saul, Israel's new king, also left, having decided to go home to Gibeah.

And a band of men whose hearts God had touched went with him. **(24)**

12:12 - You said, No way! We want an human king to rule us. You begged for a king when all the time Yahweh, your Elohim, was your king.

Now behold the king you wanted. Behold the king for whom you had such a great desire, then think on this: it was Yahweh who allowed you to have a king in the first place. Therefore, you must go on serving Yahweh.

You must obey Yahweh and conform to his word.

You must never rebel against his laws.

If you continue serving Yahweh, your God, the king ruling over you is also going to follow Yahweh. If you do not give ear to Yahweh's word, Yahweh will raise his hand against you as it was raised against your fathers.

Stand and watch this great sign Yahweh will demonstrate before you. Is today not the day wheat is harvested? I will pray to Yahweh now and ask him to send thunder and rain. Maybe you will give this some deliberation. Maybe you will see all the evil you did before Yahweh in asking for a king. Samuel cried out to Yahweh and Yahweh sent down thunder and rain that entire day, which caused the people to fear Yahweh and Samuel, so much so that they called to Samuel, Plead with Yahweh, your God, for our sake. Pray to Yahweh for your servants and ask him not to destroy us now that we have added even more evil to the rest of our sins by asking for a king. Samuel told the people, Do not worry: though you have done all this harm you must not turn from Yahweh. You must continue obeying Yahweh with your whole heart. If you turn away, it will be for things that lack profit, things that cannot save you, things that are vain.

Yahweh will never abandon his people.

Yahweh will never do it, since this is all for the sake of his holy name.

Yahweh is delighted to make you his people.

As for me, God forbid I should sin before Yahweh by not praying for you. I will continue teaching you what is right and truthful if you will continue serving Yahweh, if you follow him with your whole heart, and if you recall the many marvelous miracles he has done for you, but if you continue the evil, both you and your king will be consumed.

13:11 - Samuel asked Saul, What have you done?

Saul replied, Well, when I realized the people had gone from me because you did not return as soon as you said you would and some Philistines had pitched camp at Michmash, I was worried so I said to myself, Okay, now say the Philistines come against me, and say they march up to Gilgal, and say I have still not offered to Yahweh . . . ahh, uhhhm, the more thought I gave it . . . heck, all I could do was make the burnt offering myself.

Samuel said to Saul, You were fool-headed by breaking Yahweh's law. If you had just obeyed Yahweh's law, by now the Elohim would have set your kingdom over Israel for all ages, but because you ignore Yahweh's tenets your kingdom cannot stand.

Yahweh has found someone after his own heart. This is the man Yahweh is now backing for king of Israel. And the reason it happened is because you would not do what Yahweh wanted.

Samuel told Saul, I can no longer assist you, especially not now, not since you acted against Yahweh's ruling. And there is also no way I can remain here with you because Yahweh told me you are no longer his choice to be king of Israel. **(15:26)**

As Samuel turned to go, Saul grabbed the hem of his robe and tore it. Samuel said, In that very same way, Yahweh has torn Israel's kingdom out of your hand today. Now he is going to give it to your neighbor, somebody better than you.

35 - Samuel did not go back to Saul and he showed no desire to visit Saul from that day until the day he died, but he still mourned for Saul. And Yahweh adjusted his plan, the part having to do with Saul being ruler of Israel.

Yahweh asked Samuel, How long are you going to mope around about Saul? Did you forget I rejected him as the ruler of Israel? Fill your horn with oil. Get to it, Samuel. Go anoint the man I chose to be king. **(16:1)** Samuel filled his horn with oil, and he anointed (christ-ened) David among his brothers, and Yahweh put his ruach on David that very day. **(13)**

24:16 - It came to pass when David was finished speaking, Saul asked, Is that the voice of my son, David? He lifted up his own voice, crying out to David, You are more righteous than I. You offered me pity and I brought you nothing but evil. What happened today shows what you truly think of me, for after Yahweh turned me over to you, you did not slay me. Anyone else - if he had his enemy at his mercy - would not let him go safely away. In view of that, I ask Yahweh to reward you with goodness over what you did today. I finally understand that you will take my place as king. I also realize the kingdom of Israel will be handed over to you. What I beg you to do is promise me here and now before Yahweh you are not going to cut off my seed after me and blot out my name from my father's house. After David promised it, Saul returned home. And David and his men got themselves up into their stronghold.

2 Sam 2:1 - Not much after, David asked Yahweh, Is it okay with you if I move to a city in Judah? Can I relocate up there?

Yahweh said, Sure, move up to Judah.

David asked, To which city will I go?

Yahweh said, Go to Hebron.

So David left for Hebron. His two wives accompanied him, as well as men who had committed to him. Each man brought his whole family along with him and they stayed in cities around Hebron. A while later, some men out of Judah came and anointed David as king over all Judah's house.

8 - Abner, the son of Ner, commandant of Saul's army, took one of Saul's sons, Ishbosheth, to Mahanaim and made him king of the rest of Israel.

3:1 - The conflict raged on between the houses of Saul and David.

David's house grew stronger and stronger.

Saul's house grew weaker and weaker.

6 - Although Saul had been dead for a long time, the wars between Saul's house and David's house continued. And Abner started to take control of Saul's kingdom. As an example: Saul had had a concubine named Rizpah, a daughter of Aiah. Now a while after, Ishbosheth asked Abner, Why is it you keep going in unto my father's concubine?

Abner was incensed by the words of Ishbosheth, and he said, What am I, some kind of dog's head? Am I not showing concern for Israel right now? Am I not showing concern for your father's whole house, for the house of Saul? Am I not showing concern for all Saul's house and all his friends by not handing every last one of you over right now to David? And you stand here charging me with a fault concerning this woman? I pray that Elohim sends evil on me, Abner, even a great evil, if I do not now support Yahweh as he fulfills his covenant with David by translating the kingdom from the house of Saul to David's house and as he establishes David's kingdom over both Israel and Judah.

Ishbosheth said nothing because he was afraid of Abner.

5:1 - Men out of all the tribes of Israel met with David in Hebron, saying, Do you not agree that we are your bone and your flesh? Do you not agree that in the past when Saul was our ruler you led Israel out and brought it back in again? Do you not agree that Yahweh said you should feed Israel, his people, and be their captain?

When the elders of Israel were yet with David in Hebron, they enacted a contract between them before Yahweh. They anointed David as the ruler of all Israel, and David was thirty years old when he was crowned king.

He ruled for forty years as king.

He ruled over Judah from Hebron for seven years and six months.

He ruled both Israel and Judah from Jerusalem for thirty-three years.

7:1 - One time, as the king was sitting in his house after Yahweh brought him peace with all the enemies around him, he asked Nathan, the prophet, How can I go on living in an house of cedar while God's ark lives in a tent? Nathan told the king, Go and do what you want. Yahweh is with you. However, later that night, Yahweh's word came to Nathan, saying, Go tell my servant, David, Yahweh asks, What, you will build me an house?

11 - Yahweh promises to build you an house. After your days have ended, after you are sleeping with your fathers, Yahweh will establish your seed. He will be your son, a son from your very own loins. Yahweh will establish his kingdom and he will build an house for Yahweh's name.

His throne and his kingdom will be established for the ages.

Yahweh will be his father and he will be Yahweh's son.

He is the one who will establish your house and kingdom for the ages.

Before your very eyes, you will see your throne set up for all time.

With these words, Nathan related the vision to David.

King David went into the tabernacle. He sat down before Yahweh, saying, Who am I, oh Yahweh Elohim, and what is my house that you would permit me to reach this position? Oh Yahweh Elohim, this is only an insignificant thing to you, but as far as I can see, you are talking about your servant's bloodline for a long while to come.

27 - You, oh Yahweh of hosts, Elohim of Israel, have caused your servant to know what you mean when you say you will build an house for me. That is why your servant has found it in his heart to pray his prayer to you, oh Yahweh Elohim.

You are the only Elohim and your words are the only correct words.

You promised this good thing to your servant and I now pray it will please you to bless your servant's house. Let it continue for all ages before you. You, oh Yahweh Elohim, promised it, and now, being that you have blessed it, your servant's house will surely be favored for all ages.

23:1 - These are the final words of David, son of Jesse, the one who was raised on high, the one Israel's God anointed, Israel's sweet psalmist, the one who said, Yahweh's spirit spoke through me and Yahweh's words were on my tongue.

Israel's Elohim spoke.

Israel's Rock said, A king who rules men must be righteous. He must rule with reverence for his Elohim. And though my house is not presently in a similar state before the Elohim, I have, nevertheless, been given an everlasting covenant. It is ordered in all things and guaranteed. It is my sole salvation, the only thing I give a damn about.

1 Kng 2:1 - When the day of David's death grew near, he charged his son, Solomon, by saying, I will go the way of all the Earth. You must be strong and show you are a man. Commit to the teachings of Yahweh, your Elohim. Walk in his way. Respect his laws, decrees, testimonies, and commands as they are written in Moses' law. If you do, you will thrive in everything you want and wish for. If you walk in his way, Yahweh will continue with all he prophesied about me when he said: If your children live the right way and walk before me in truth, with all their hearts and souls, I promise you the throne of Israel will never fail to have a man sitting on it.

10 - David slept with his fathers and was buried in Jerusalem.

Solomon took the throne of his father, David.

Solomon took the throne and his domain was greatly established.

9:1 - The day Solomon was done building Yahweh's temple, Yahweh talked to him, saying, I heard the prayer and supplication you laid before me and I have hallowed the house you built. I will place my name here through all ages. My eyes and my heart will remain here through all time.

If you will walk before me as your father, David, with an honest heart, in righteousness, and if you live in the way I show you, following all my rules and announcements, I will place your throne and your kingdom over Israel through all time. I will carry out the vow I gave your father, David, when I swore Israel's throne would never fail to have a man sitting on it.

If you deviate in the least from following me, however, you, or your seed, and you will not observe the commandments and laws I put before you, or if you honor other gods and worship them, I will drive Israel off the land I promised to give them.

I will remove this house I have consecrated for my name from before me. After that, Israel will be an enigma to all people.

11:1 - King Solomon loved many strange women, women from nations that Yahweh had warned the children of Israel about, saying, You must not go in to them or allow them to come in to you, for they will turn your hearts away from me toward their own gods (eloah). But Solomon clung to the bitches in love.

6 - Solomon did evil in Yahweh's sight, and he did not fully follow his God as had his father, David. Solomon erected an high place for Chemos, the abomination from Moab, on an hill right in front of Jerusalem. Moreover, he set up an high place for Molech, the abomination adored by the descendants of Ammon. He did the same thing for his other alien wives, also, and they all burned incense and offered sacrifices to their own gods.

Yahweh became furious with Solomon because his heart had turned away from Yahweh, God of Israel, who had appeared to him twice to forewarn him about this thing, that he not worship other gods.

Solomon, however, refused to listen to Yahweh.

Yahweh told Solomon, Because you did this and decided not to follow the covenant or obey the laws I gave you, I swear I will tear the kingdom out of your hands and give it to one of your subjects. For the sake of David, your father, though, I will not take it while you are still alive. Instead, I will tear it from your son's hand. I will not take away the entire kingdom, but I will let one other tribe stay with your son for my servant's sake.

I will do it for David's sake and for Jerusalem, the city I have chosen.

The taking away of the kingdom began when Yahweh stirred up Hadad, an Edomite, to be Solomon's satan (adversary).

23 - After that, God stirred up another satan, Rezon, son of Eliadah, who attracted a number of men to himself, becoming Israel's satan during the whole length of Solomon's rule. That was in addition to all the havoc done by Hadad, for Rezon, the king of Syria, hated Israel.

26 - Solomon's servant, Jeroboam, the son of Nebat, was a powerful man. Jeroboam was a brave man, also. When Solomon saw the young man was a good worker, he put him in charge of the whole house of Joseph.

One time, after Jeroboam left Jerusalem, a prophet known as Ahijah, the Shilonite, trudged toward him along the path. Jeroboam had put on a new garment. When no one else was in sight, Ahijah grabbed Jeroboam's robe and tore it into twelve pieces. Then he said, Take ten pieces for yourself. Yahweh, Israel's God, says, Believe what I tell you. In the very same way, I will remove the kingdom from Solomon's hand and give you ten tribes. I will allow Solomon to retain one tribe other than his own. I am doing this for the sake of David, my servant. I am also doing it for Jerusalem's sake. I am doing it for the sake of the city I love over all Israel's cities. I am doing it because Solomon has left me and no longer listens to me. He does not do right things before me. He does not follow my law or my judgments as his father, David. Still, I will not take the entire dominion out of his hand, but I will let him rule for the rest of his life. I am doing it for the sake of my servant, David. I am doing it because David did keep my pronouncements and statutes. I will tear the kingdom from Solomon's son's hand and give you ten tribes. I will let Solomon's son keep his tribe and one other so my servant, David, always has a light before me in Jerusalem, in the city where I promised I would put my name. Because I want you to rule over Israel, I am now making you Israel's king. If you do what I tell you and if you observe my ways, conducting yourself in the proper manner before me, obeying all my laws and pronouncements like my servant David did, I will be with you. I will build you a sure house, just like the house I built for David, and I will give Israel to you.

43 - Solomon slept with his ancestors.
He was buried in the city of his father, David.
His son, Rehoboam, ruled in his place.

12:1 - Rehoboam went to Shechem, to the place Israel was assembled to install him as their king.
Jeroboam, son of Nebat, was in Egypt. When he heard, he appeared with all the congregation of Israel. And he addressed Rehoboam, saying, Your father made our yoke intolerable. If you assure us you will ease our hard labor and remove the heavy yoke your father put on us, we will follow you. Rehoboam said, Give me three days before you return.
So the people all left.

12 - Jeroboam and his people returned to Rehoboam.
They came back on the third day like Rehoboam had told them.

The king talked to the people roughly. He ignored the advice of the older men completely. Instead, he said what the younger men urged him to say. Rehoboam told them, So you think my father made your yoke unbearable? I am going to increase your hardship. My father laid the whip to you, but I am going to flog you with barbs.

Rehoboam did not fear the people because it all came from Yahweh so he could bring about what he had promised through Ahijah, the Shilonite, to Jeroboam, the son of Nebat.

After Israel realized their king was not going to listen to them, they said, We have no part in David then and we want no inheritance from the son of Jesse. We will return home, oh Israel, and let David see to his own house. Israel returned to their tents, and Rehoboam only ruled over the children of Israel who lived in the cities of Judah.

18 - King Rehoboam dispatched Adoram, a person he had commissioned to collect taxes through all Israel.

As soon as he got there, they pelted him with stones until he was dead. King Rehoboam quickly mounted his chariot and rushed back to Jerusalem. And Israel has rebelled against David's house to this day.

It came to pass, when the people of Israel heard Jeroboam had returned, they sent word to him, wanting him to meet with them so they could make him king over all Israel.

26 - Jeroboam told himself, This new kingdom may return to the house of David if the people sacrifice in Yahweh's temple at Jerusalem.

Their hearts might return to their ruler, Rehoboam, king of Judah.

They might kill me and go back to him.

Then Jeroboam sought counsel on how to ensure it would not happen.

The king finally decided to craft two golden calves.

The king told his people, It is much too much for you to do the whole trip to Jerusalem. These, oh Israel, will be your gods. These will be the gods that brought you out of the land of Egypt.

The king set one god up in Bethel, the other in the land of Dan.

33 - Jeroboam did not turn from his wicked way, but he elected the very worst people he could find to be priests of the high places, choosing only those he wanted, and he put them over the shrines and images. This was considered a sin against Jeroboam's house. And before long, Jeroboam's entire family was rounded up and wiped off the face of the Earth.

14:21 - Rehoboam, Solomon's son, ruled in Jerusalem.

Judah also worked evil in Yahweh's sight and provoked him to jealousy by their wickedness. They sinned even more than their fathers by erecting high places, images, and groves on all the tall hills and beneath the green

trees. They also allowed Sodomites to practice in the land and they took part in the abominations of the people Yahweh had driven off before the children of Israel.

Jeroboam and Rehoboam showed no ability to rule God's people. As a matter of fact, they began to oppose one another and the state of spats that followed soon blossomed into armed and fatal combat.

The civil war dividing the Hebrew kingdom was fought around **975 BC** and wonder of wonders, the first phase of God's kingdom came to an end about the same time.

The first phase of God's kingdom, you might remember, related to an observable kingdom directed by God's prophets and kings. What showed up in its place for a time was a completely human adventure: that pair of kingdoms called Israel and Judah.

Israel, the northern ten-tribed sector, was run from Samaria.

That vestige of David's kingdom was a political power ruled through a series of nineteen kings until **721 BC**, when it was defeated by the army of Sargon, leader of Assyria, who blew Israel away and scattered people who survived throughout his Assyrian empire.

2 Kng 17:6 - During the ninth year, the Assyrian king destroyed Samaria. He transported the Israelites to the land of Assyria, and housed them in Halah and Habor by the river Gozan and in other Medean cities. It happened because the people of Israel provoked Yahweh, their God. It happened because they angered the one who freed them from Egypt. It happened because they did not stop bowing to alien gods. (**18:9**)

Judah, the southern two-tribed sector, was run from Jerusalem.

That vestige of David's kingdom was a political power ruled through a series of twenty kings until **588 BC**, when Nebuchadnezzar, the Bad Boy of Babylon, overturned it, then carried all who survived off to the cities of his Babylonian empire.

2 Kng 24:1 - When Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, appeared, Yahweh arranged to have gangs of Chaldeans, Syrians, Moabites and the seed of Ammon appear with him.

They quickly moved against Judah and they smashed it, just like Yahweh had foretold by his servants, the prophets. No one at all doubted it was Yahweh himself who did it to Judah to cast them from his sight.

During the fifth month, Nebuzaradan, a captain of the guard, one of the Babylonian regent's own henchmen, arrived in Jerusalem, and burned the house of Yahweh. He also burned the king's palace, as well as the homes of the people that lived in Jerusalem. And when this was over, Chaldean soldiers knocked down Jerusalem's walls. (**25:8**)

Is 43:15 - I am Yahweh, your holy one.
I am Yahweh, the creator of Israel, your king.
I was your first and I will be your last.
There is no God beside me.
There is no other source of authority.

Jer 44:30 - I handed Zedekiah, king of Judah, over to his enemy.
I gave him to Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, who sought his life.

Lam 5:15 - The joy of our hearts has ceased.
Our dancing has turned into mourning.
Our crown has fallen from our head.
Woe unto us, for we have sinned!

Ezk 21:25 - And you, you worldly and depraved king of Israel, your day is finally here. Your wickedness will finally end today.
Yahweh says: Remove the diadem! Take off the crown!
You will no longer support those who are low.
You will no longer dishonor those who should be elevated.
I will overturn, overturn, overturn it!
It will be no more, not until he comes whose right it is.
I will give him the kingdom when he appears.

Hos 3:4 - The people of Israel will spend many years without kings, without princes, and without a sacrifice, but afterward, in the last days, they will return to Yahweh, their God, and to David, their king.
And finally, they will rejoice in Yahweh and his goodness.

10:3 - We have no king now because we did not fear Yahweh.

13:9 - Oh Israel, you destroyed yourself, but I only wished to assist you.
Why would you not let me be your king and help you?
Where is your king now?
Was your king able to deliver you in any of your cities?
What of your judges, to whom you said, Give us kings and princes?
Who knows what happened to them?
I know.
I know, for I gave you kings against my better judgment.
I know, for I junked their butts when they ticked me off.

The kingdom and throne thrown down isn't hard to identify.
It's not some nebulous and bubbly realm up in the heavens.
It's not busy winning souls for anti-christianity in Asia and Africa.
It's positively not anti-christendom's frantic, but futile, attempts to feed foul fables to its fuzzy-minded followers.

The kingdom and throne that got thrown down was and is the kingdom and throne of Israel, Abraham, David, Yahweh, and Christ.

The kingdom and throne that got thrown down was and is the kingdom of the Hebrew God.

Ps 89:3 - I made a covenant with my chosen.

I told my servant, David, Your son will be established through all ages.

I told him, Your son will confirm your throne.

I told him, Your son will confirm your throne through all generations.

19 - You spoke in vision to your holy one.

You said, I chose David as my servant and I anointed him with holy oil.

My hand will install him and my arm will strengthen him.

I will have mercy on him for the ages.

My covenant will stand fast because of him. **(28)**

I will cause his seed (his son) to be established in all ages.

His throne will also be established as the days of heaven.

His seed will continue throughout the ages.

His throne will be established as the sun before me. **(36)**

2 Sam 7:12 - When your days are fulfilled and you are sleeping with your ancestors, I will establish your seed after you, a son from your own loins.

I will establish his kingdom, too.

Your house and kingdom will be established for all ages before you.

Your throne will be established for all time. **(16)**

1 Kng 1:15 - Bathsheba walked into the king's bedroom, and said, My Lord, you promised me through Yahweh, your God, saying, I swear that your son, Solomon, will reign after me. I swear he will sit on my throne.

Every eye in Israel is now on you, my Lord, my King, waiting for you to tell them who will occupy the throne after my Lord, the king. **(20)**

2:12 - Solomon occupied the throne of his father, David, and the kingdom was greatly established.

Yahweh has accomplished the words he spoke concerning me. Yahweh put me in my father's place and I occupy the throne of Israel now. **(8:20)**

25 - Therefore, oh Yahweh, Elohim of Israel, please continue the promise you made to your servant, David, my father, saying there will never fail to be a man before you sitting on the throne of Israel.

1 Chr 28:4 - Yahweh, the God of Israel, picked me from all the sons in my father's family to be Israel's king during these times. And now, out of all the sons Yahweh gave me, he has selected my son, Solomon, to occupy the throne of the Kingdom of God over Israel.

23 - Solomon ruled as king on the throne of Yahweh in place of his father, David, and he prospered, with all Israel following him.

2 Chr 9:8 - Blessed be Yahweh, your Elohim, who is pleased with you.
You have been put on Yahweh's throne to be a king for your Elohim.
Your Elohim loves Israel.
Your Elohim has promised to establish Israel for all time.
You were made king so you could rule Israel with justice.
You were made king so you could rule Israel with righteous judgment.

13:4 - Abijah stood before them. He said, Hear me, Jeroboam, and all of Israel. You must know by now that Yahweh, Israel's Elohim, has given the Kingdom of Israel to David for the ages.
Do you really feel you can stand against the Kingdom of God?
Do you feel you can defy God's kingdom in the hands of David's sons? (8)

2 Kng 10:30 - Yahweh said to king Jehu, Because you walked in the proper way, doing things which were worthwhile before me, your offspring to the fourth generation will occupy the throne of Israel.

Jer 13:13 - I will fill all the inhabitants of the land with drunkenness: the kings seated on the throne of David, the priests, the prophets, and all the others who live in Jerusalem.

22:1 - Go to the palace of Judah's king. Tell him this: Hear the decree of Yahweh, oh king of Judah, sitting on David's throne . . . do or die!

Long before the nation was destroyed, **Jeremiah** slipped hopeful hints in among his words of gloom and doom. He suggested it was possible that his generation's grandchildren would return to Jerusalem.

Jer 25:8 - Because you will not abide by my words, I will send my servant, Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, against this land and its inhabitants. I will send him against all nations round and about, also, and he will entirely consume them. He will make them an astonishment, a cause for hissing, a perpetual desolation. This whole land will become a desolation, along with all who live in it, and they will serve Babylon's king for seventy years. When these seventy years are finished, I, Yahweh, will chasten Babylon's king. I will also chasten his people for their wickedness. And the land of Chaldea will become a perpetual desolation.

29:8 - Do not let the prophets and diviners among you fool you.
Ignore the dreams that you yourselves are causing them to dream.
Ignore them when they claim to speak in my name, for they lie.
Ignore them because I did not send them, says Yahweh.

I will visit you when the seventy years have ended.
I will honor my good word to you.
I will bring you back to your own place.
I know what I think about you, says Yahweh.
I think thoughts of peace, not evil.

Daniel's hopes were fired by Yahweh's promise.

Dan 9:2 - I was able to perceive from what Yahweh had said in the scroll of Jeremiah, his prophet, that seventy years must pass before the sin of Jerusalem was paid for. (24)

When the seventy years were completed, many exiles returned to the land and joined forces with certain Jews who'd stayed behind.

Before long, Jerusalem and the temple were rebuilt.

Once again, the Hebrews were an independent nation and people in the promised land; but, from the fall of their kingdom in **588 BC**, David's sons were never able to establish a self-supporting and self-ruling government in the land Yahweh promised them . . . not until **1948 AD**.

That's another story, though, a thing of the future.

And the short burst of Jewish "independence" ushered in by that mob of goons known as the Maccabees? A macho gang to be sure, but in truth just another bunch of bandits, whose single object seems to have been to disturb the Romans and focus their attention on the eastern shore of the Mediterranean sea, the very place in which Abraham's promised son would appear not long after Maccabean "independence" ran its course.

Four hundred years after exiles returned to the land of their fathers, a prophet named John appeared, announcing that the time had come for a manifestation of Israel's Messiah, the Hebrew's king, the anointed one of God, the son promised to Abraham, David, and all the Earth.

The main point of John's gospel and baptism was to warn those waiting for fulfillment of Yahweh's promise to get ready.

Lk 2:25 - There was a man called Simeon, who lived in Jerusalem, one who was a just and pious man, waiting only for the consolation of Israel.

36 - She was a prophetess named Anna.

When Anna saw the child, Jesus, she praised Yahweh. Then she began to tell all the people searching for salvation in Israel about him.

Mk 15:43 - Joseph, from Arimathea, was an honorable counselor. Joseph also waited for God's kingdom to appear.

Christ will claim David's kingdom and throne at his return.

Is 9:6 - A child has been born to us. We have received our son. And the government will rest upon his shoulders. His sovereignty, and an increase in peace, will not stop on the throne of David and in his kingdom, to order and confirm it with judgment and justice from that day forward, through all time. And Yahweh's intense desire will bring it all to pass.

God spoke of a Christ five hundred years before he appeared.

Micah and **Daniel** gave the place and time of his coming and going.

Micah 5:2 - Bethlehem Ephratah, you are considered to be insignificant, nothing among Judah's thousands, yet Israel's king will come from you.

Dan 9:23 - You must understand this thing and you must trust the vision. A period of seventy weeks (of years) has been appointed for your people and the holy city until the sentence for insubordination has been served. You must know and understand, therefore, from the time a proclamation to rebuild and occupy Jerusalem goes forth until the Messiah and Prince has come will be a period of seven weeks and sixty two weeks. After the sixty two weeks have passed, Messiah will be cut off.

Evidence seen in the new testament proves the Jesus who came from Nazareth is entitled to receive David's kingdom and throne.

If it's based on the testimony that follows, the Jesus who came from Nazareth has a claim to the throne which is impossible to put aside.

Mt 2:1 - Jesus was born in Bethlehem, in Judea, during the reign of king Herod, when some wise men (magi) came to Jerusalem from the east. Where is the one born king of the Jews, they asked? We see his star in the dawning and we have come to acknowledge him.

Lk 1:26 - Gabriel, the angel, was sent from God to a city in Galilee called Nazareth, where he appeared to a virgin pledged to a man named Joseph, who was from David's house and line.

Do not fear, Mary, said the angel, for you have found favor in God's sight. I have come to reveal you will conceive in your womb and bear a son.

I have come to say you must name him Yeshua.

He will be grand, known as the son of the highest.

He will receive the throne of his father, David, from the Lord himself.

He will rule Jacob's house for all ages and his kingdom will never end.

Jesus preached the good news about God's kingdom the whole time he was on Earth. Indeed, the monarchy, the king, and the righteous reign of God's kingdom were the only things Jesus discussed.

The gospel taught by early disciples spoke of nothing but the kingdom. Disciples didn't know about the sacrifice and resurrection of Christ until Christ began uplifting their thinking during the third year of his ministry. Disciples didn't include Christ's sacrifice and resurrection in their gospel until well after Jesus was seated in power in the high place.

Philip spoke of nothing but the ancient kingdom of the Hebrew God.
Philip spoke of no king other than Jesus.
Philip spoke the gospel to the Samaritans.

Acts 8:5 - Philip arrived in the city of Samaria, and the first thing he did was preach Christ (the anointed one) to the people. When they believed Philip's teaching about the Kingdom of God, and about Jesus Christ as its King, they were all baptized, men and women alike, the both of them together. (12)

Jesus and the Kingdom of God

Mt 6:9 - Here is the way you should pray . . .
Our Father in heaven, may your name be held in reverence.
May your kingdom come so your will is done on Earth as it is in heaven.
Feed us this day.
Forgive our sins the same as we forgive those who sin against us.
Do not let us fall into testing; rather, deliver us from evil.
All the dominion, power, and glory is yours throughout the ages.
Amen.

31 - Do not be concerned over what you will eat or wear. Gentiles regard things like these. Your Father in heaven is quite aware you need all these things. Seek out the Kingdom of God and its righteousness first, then all the rest will be provided for you.

Mk 1:14 - When John was put in prison, Jesus went to Galilee. He taught them the gospel of the Kingdom of God. He said, The time of waiting is over and God's kingdom is at hand.

Lk 9:1 - Jesus met with the twelve disciples and granted them authority over daimonion (delusions) and other illnesses. After, he sent them out to preach God's kingdom and heal the sick.

6 - And they went, passing through every town, preaching the gospel and healing wherever they happened to be.

Luke declares the disciples were sent out to heal the sick and preach the good news, normally called the gospel.

Luke also says the gospel concerns the Kingdom of God.

It was two full years before the disciples knew Jesus had to die.

It was two full years before they knew he had to be resurrected and glorified, then rule from the heavens until his Father said it was time to bring his kingdom back to the Earth.

Gospels which don't contain good news regarding the kingdom covered above (the ancient kingdom of Israel, including its covenant, its promises, and its soon-to-come return) are anti-gospels and not worth hearing.

Jn 6:14 - The people all began to shout, and say, He must be the prophet who is to come into the world!

As soon as Jesus realized they were going to take him by force and make him their king, he departed again to a mountain to be alone.

Lk 17:20 - The Pharisees badgered him to tell them when the Kingdom of God was to appear. Jesus replied, God's kingdom is not going to appear in a visible manner this time. Nobody will say, Hey look, here it comes! And nobody will say, Wrong, it is over there! Why do you not see the Kingdom of God is right here in your midst (among you)?

19:11 - He told them a parable as they listened to these things.

He told it because they were nearing Jerusalem and the disciples had all convinced themselves the kingdom would appear when they got there.

He said, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive a kingdom and return at a later date. He called for his ten servants, and gave them each ten pounds, saying, Carry on until I return.

Mt 12:32 - Have no fear, little flock, since your Father is happy to offer you his kingdom.

20:20 - The mother of Zebedee's children showed up with her sons.

She had come to honor Jesus and to request a favor.

Jesus asked, What do you want?

She answered, Let my two sons sit on your right hand and your left after you come into your kingdom.

Jesus said, The seats on my right hand and left are not mine to give.

Jesus said, They will go to the ones for whom my Father prepared them.

Mk 11:7 - They brought a colt to Jesus, then they draped their garments over the animal, and Jesus mounted it. Many spread garments in the path and others cut branches from trees, then strewed them along the trail. People up front, as well as the ones behind, all shouted, Hosanna! Blessed is the one who has come in Yahweh's name! And blessed is the kingdom of our father, David, which has also come in Yahweh's name!

Lk 19:37 - They soon reached the base of the Mount of Olives.
The disciples all began to rejoice.
They praised God in loud voices for the mighty works they had seen.
They shouted, Blessed is the king who comes in Yahweh's name!

Jn 12:12 - Many at the feast heard Jesus was getting ready to ride into Jerusalem. Cutting branches from palm trees, they all went out to greet him, and shouted, Hosanna! Blessed be Israel's king! Blessed be our king who has come in Yahweh's name!

Do you think the Jewish and Roman authorities would feel threatened by a lunatic saying he was king of a realm someplace away in the heavens? Romans would have loved him, for most of their gods were sky-kings with sky-kingdoms. But say the guy was a religious fanatic who had thousands of other fanatics waiting to take up arms and march into battle with him? And say the radical was talking about an earthly kingdom (the kingdom of Israel's God, for example) it's likely the Jewish and Roman leaders would all feel the threat.

Lk 23:1 - The crowd took hold of him and dragged him off to Pilate.
They accused him, saying, We have heard him perverting our nation.
They said, He tells us not to pay taxes to Caesar.
They also said, He claims he is the Christ, our king.
Then Pilate asked him, Are you the Jewish king?
That is what they say, answered Jesus.

Jn 18:33 - Pilate entered the judgment hall.
Once again, he asked Jesus, Are you the Jewish king?
Jesus said, Is this something you figured out on your own or have others told you about me?
Pilate asked, What am I, a Jew? It was your own people, as well as their chief priests, who delivered you to me. What have you done?
My kingdom has nothing to do with the present kosmos, said Jesus. If it had to do with this kosmos, my subjects would fight. And they would not let me be turned over to the Jews. My kingdom is not here and now.
Pilate asked, So then, you are a king?
You are the ones who say I am a king and you are right, said Jesus. That is the purpose for which I was born. That is the sole reason I came into the kosmos. I came to be a witness to the truth. Everyone who is aware of the truth understands what I am saying.
Pilate went out to the Jews once again, and he said, I find nothing wrong with the man at all. It is a practice that I turn a prisoner over to you on passover. Will you agree to let me release the Jewish king to you?
Again, they shouted, Do not release the man! We want Barabbas.
Barabbas, by the way, was a robber and murderer.

19:1 - So Pilate delivered Jesus to be scourged.
The soldiers made a crown of thorns and put it on his head.
They threw a purple robe over him, shouting, Hail, oh King of the Jews!
Then they beat on him with their fists.

9 - Pilate asked Jesus, Now who are you?
Jesus said nothing.
Pilate asked him, Are you refusing to answer me? Do you not know I have power to crucify you or let you go?
Jesus spoke, saying, You would have no control over me at all if it was not given to you from above. The ones that turned me over to you committed a greater sin, though.
When he heard that, Pilate looked for another way to free Jesus, but the Jews shouted, If you free him you are no friend of Caesar! Anybody that says he is a king is opposed to Caesar!
Pilate had Jesus brought out when he heard their words.
Sitting on his judgment seat, he said to the Jews, Look at your king!
Away with him, they shouted. Crucify him!
Pilate asked them, Do you want me to crucify your king?
We have no king but Caesar, the chief priests answered.
So Pilate turned Jesus over to the Jews to be crucified.
And the Jews took custody of Jesus and led him away.

Mt 27:39 - Those who passed by insulted him and wagged their heads.
Jews shouted at him, saying, You stated if the temple was destroyed you could rebuild it in three days. You can start by saving yourself. Come on down off the cross if you want to prove you are God's son.

The chief priests, scribes, and elders mocked him the same way, too, and said, He saved others, but he cannot save himself. If he really is the son of God, and the king of Israel, let him get down from the cross right now. If he comes down now, we will believe him. He is the one who says he has faith in God. Let us see if God is going to save him. Let us see if God will even hear him. He is the one who claims to be God's son.

23:36 - The soldiers taunted him, bowing to him and offering him vinegar, saying, If you are king of the Jews, save yourself.

A superscription was inscribed over him in Greek, Latin, and Hebrew.
A sign hung above him, saying, Here is the king of the Jews.

Jn 19:21 - After the Jewish chief priests saw it, they appealed to Pilate to change it. They said, Do not write he is the king of the Jews. Make it say he claimed to be king of the Jews.
Pilate answered, What I have written I have written.

Acts 1:1 - The first letter I sent you, oh Theophilus, consisted of things Jesus did and said up to the day he rose, up to the time when he gave out commands to apostles he had recruited through *hagios pneuma*. And this he did during the forty days he taught them about *God's kingdom*.

6 - One time when they were gathered together, they said, Lord, will you restore the kingdom to Israel now? Will you, huh?
Jesus said, It is not for you to know the times or seasons the Father has put in his own power.

It should be noted Jesus didn't turn to his apostles and chew on them for their lack of spiritual awareness.

It should be noted Jesus didn't groan, "Like duh, how many times do I have to tell you guys? Did we not take all of last month to cover the fact that *God's kingdom* will never be seen on Earth again? And did we not understand that this is true, even though the Father has been going on and on about a kingdom on the Earth for two thousand years? No, sir!! *God's kingdom* done went and migrated. *God's kingdom* will now be found far up in the sky, someplace off in the heavens. Abel, Enoch, Methuselah, Seth, Job, Abraham, Lot, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph, Moses, Joshua, Samson, David, Daniel, Josiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Amos, Obadiah, and the others in that blessed bunch, all of them are up there right now waiting for me to wrap up this gig and haul my bones back home. Ahhh, say what? You think you were surprised? Imagine the surprise on those boys' faces when the Big Guy said, 'Listen to me, gang! Do you remember I promised you would all get places in my kingdom if you, uh, surrendered your lives, you would, ah basically, well, uh, get a place in a kingdom I said I was going to establish on Earth, the, ah, you know, kingdom I swore would rule Earth with truth and, oh . . . well I, ah, uh, ahemmmmm . . . ?'"

The reason Jesus didn't say anything like that is because the locality of *God's kingdom* hasn't switched. It's still going to take over Earth and control it until human days are done.

Actually, Jesus' answer demonstrates the whole point of the question. The disciples wished to know if Jesus had decided to return the kingdom to Israel at that very time.

Obviously, the flip side of the question would be: "Lord, are you going to restore the kingdom to Israel later?"

If you think Jesus' disciples wondered whether he was going to bring the Kingdom of God back to Israel at all, you may want to contact Jerry, Jenny, or Davy. Perhaps one of them will tape a show titled: "Brain-dead People Reveal Their Brain-dead Thoughts". You'll fit right in.

Wake up!

Jesus' answer indicates he did believe *God's kingdom* would return to Israel and Earth, but at a time of *God's* own choosing.

Jesus and his apostles held the same beliefs.

Jesus and his apostles said the same things.

Acts 3:19 - You must repent (change your thinking) and be converted (be convinced) so your sins can be blotted out in the time of regeneration, at the manifestation of our Lord, in that day when God recalls Jesus Christ, the same one who was preached to you before, and the same one who will remain in the heavens until that period of renewal when God brings about everything he promised by his holy prophets since this kosmos began.

Lk 13:25 - When the master of the house comes back, after he has shut and barred the door, and you are standing outside, pounding on the door, shouting, Lord, Lord, unlock this door for us, your Lord will reply, I know nothing about you. I know nothing of your origin.

When you say, We have eaten and drunk in your presence and you taught in our streets, he will say, I told you before, I know nothing of you or of your origin. Get away from me, you who do evil.

Believe me, there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth when you see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and all the prophets in the Kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out.

34 - Oh Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you killed your prophets and stoned those God sent you. How often would I have gathered your children like a hen shelters her brood beneath a wing, but you would not. So watch, now you will see your house become desolate.

I have told you the truth. You will not see me again, not until you say, He who comes in the name of the Lord is the one we welcome.

21:20 - You will see Jerusalem surrounded by armies.

Then you will know her destroyer is at hand.

These will be days of vengeance.

These will be days when the words that were written are fulfilled.

There will be great adversity throughout your land.

The vengeance of the Lord will come down on your people.

They will be slain by the sword.

They will be carried off captive into every country and Jerusalem will be trodden down by the gentiles until gentile times are over.

Lk 22:14 - When the hour had come, Jesus met with his twelve apostles. He said, With great pleasure I have waited to eat this passover with you before I suffer. I am telling you now, however, I will not partake of the passover again, not until it is all fulfilled in the Kingdom of God.

He held up the cup and he gave thanks, saying, Take this. Share it among yourselves. I am telling you the truth: I will not drink of the fruit of the vine again, not until the Kingdom of God has finally returned.

29 - You have all been with me since the start of my ordeal. And like my Father appointed me a kingdom, I will also appoint you places at my table and you will eat and drink. You will occupy thrones. And you will rule the twelve tribes of Israel.

Mt 19:27 - Peter said, You know we have given up all to be your disciples. What do we get for it?

Jesus said, I will tell you the truth: in the regeneration, when the son of man has occupied the throne of his glory, those who have followed him in faith will sit on thrones, the twelve thrones ruling Israel's twelve tribes. And those who have given up homes, brothers, sisters, fathers, mothers, children and even livelihoods for my name's sake will gain an hundredfold in this age, plus they will inherit life in the age to come.

25:31 - When the Son of man is seen in glory in the company of the holy angels, then he will receive his throne of glory.

When the son of man returns in glory, responsible ones from the nations will be assembled before him. He will divide them one from another like a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats.

He will place the sheep on his right hand, the goats on his left.

Come, he will say to those on his right hand. Come, you who were chosen by the Father, it is now time for you to inherit the kingdom, the one God prepared for you from the foundation of the kosmos.

Acts 2:29 - Men and brothers, I speak openly of our patriarch, David, of how he is both dead and buried, and how his grave remains with us today. David was a prophet and he knew God had sworn with an oath that of the fruit of his loins, in line with a natural way, he would raise up an anointed one to occupy his throne. David was shown it in advance, and he spoke of the resurrection of Christ.

Ps 110:1 - Yahweh said to my lord, Sit here at my right hand.

Yahweh said, Stay at my right hand until your foes are your footstool.

Heb 8:1 - Our high priest is just the same, and he now sits at the right hand of the throne of majesty in the heavens.

After he offered one sacrifice for sin for all ages, he sat down at God's right hand. And this man has been sitting there ever since, just waiting for the day his enemies become his footstool. **(10:12)**

Yahweh, Christ, Jerusalem, and God's kingdom shouldn't be looked at separately, for they're as inter-twined as Granny's braided breadsticks, and these sticks have been baking for thousands of years.

The Kingdom of God is presently in a waiting mode.

The waiting won't go on forever, though.

Mt 5:34 - I warn you not to swear oaths at all; not by heaven, because it is the throne of God; not by Earth, because it is God's footstool; and not by Jerusalem, because it is the city of the great king.

Ps 2:1 - Why do the nations rage?
Why do their people imagine vain things?
Why do the kings of Earth set themselves?
Why do leaders meet together against Yahweh and his anointed?
We will throw off their bonds, they say.
We will rid ourselves of all their cords, they say.
Yahweh will laugh at them from his seat in the heavens.
Yahweh will hold them in derision.
Yahweh will speak to them in wrath.
Yahweh will vex them in sore displeasure.
Yahweh will set his king on Zion, his holy hill.
Yahweh said, I will declare a decree.
Yahweh said, You are my son.
Yahweh said, I begot you today.
You have only to ask and I will give you the heathen for an inheritance.
You will receive the farthest parts of Earth for your possession.
You will strike them with a rod of iron.
You will dash them to pieces like a potter shatters useless jugs.

Be wise now, oh you kings.
Be instructed, oh you rulers of Earth.
Serve Yahweh with awe and rejoice with trembling.
Embrace the Son, lest he grows angry and you are driven off the path.
Embrace the Son, now that his fury has flared just a little.
Everyone who trusts in him will be blessed.

72:1 - Give the king wisdom and give goodness to the king's son.
He will judge your people righteously.
He will judge your humble ones with righteous judgment.
He will save your needy children by dashing their oppressors to pieces.
He will lead them for as long as the sun and moon endure.
He will lead them through all generations.

8 - He will have dominion from sea to sea.
He will reign from the river to the ends of the Earth.
All who dwell in the wilderness will bow before him.
All his enemies will lick the dust.
All kings will fall down before him.

17 - His name will endure for all ages, for as long as the sun.
Humanity will be blessed through him and all nations will call him exalted.

Blessed be Yahweh Elohim, the God of Israel.
Blessed be Yahweh, the only one who could work these wondrous deeds.

87:1 - Yahweh's devotion for the gates of Zion is much more than for any other dwelling-place in Jacob.
Glorious things are spoken about you, oh city of the Elohim.

5 - Of Zion, it will be said: This person or that person was born there.
God himself will entitle her.
God will take into account when he judges his people that this one or the other came from Jerusalem.

89:33 - I will never remove my loving kindness from the Christ.
I will never let my truth become lies.
I will never violate my covenant or nullify the words I have spoken.
I swore once in all my holiness that I would never lie to David.
I swore his seed (son) would endure for all time.
I swore his throne would endure as the sun before me.
I swore his seed would last through all ages.
I swore his seed would last like the moon, my witness in the heavens.

102:13 - Yahweh will rise and offer mercy to Zion.
Yahweh will rise when the time to establish her (the set time) has come.
Heathen will quake before Yahweh's name.
Every king on Earth will cringe at his brightness.
When Yahweh builds up Zion, he will appear in all his glory.
Yahweh has revealed this for a generation to come.

110:2 - Yahweh will send out the rod of his strength from Zion.
He will reign among his enemies.
His people will be willing in the day of his power.

132:10 - For the sake of your servant, for David's sake, do not turn away the face of your anointed.
Yahweh swore truthfully to David.
Yahweh will never discount it.
Yahweh will place one of my sons, the fruit of my own body, on my throne.
If my children follow the covenant and proclamations he gives them, then their children will also sit on my throne for the ages.

Is 2:1 - This is Isaiah's word concerning Judah and Jerusalem . . .
On that day, the mountain of Yahweh's house will stand tall.
On that day, it will be elevated over every other mountain.
On that day, Yahweh's house will rise above every other hill.
On that day, all nations will stream into Yahweh's house.

Come, let us climb Yahweh's mountain, they will say.
Come, let us go up to the house of the God of Jacob.
Yahweh will instruct us in his ways and we will walk his path.
Yahweh's law will go forth from Zion.
Yahweh's word will go forth from Jerusalem.
Yahweh will reign over the nations.
Yahweh will rebuke many.
Nations will beat their swords into plowshares.
Nations will beat their spears into pruning-hooks.
One nation will never raise a sword against another nation.
One nation will never go to war against another nation, either.

9:7 - Expansion of the government and peace will never cease on David's throne and in David's kingdom to order and to establish it with judgment and justice from that time forward throughout the ages.
With great desire, Yahweh of hosts will bring this to pass.

11:1 - A rod will shoot forth from the stem of Jesse.
A branch will grow out of Jesse's root.
Yahweh's spirit (ruach) will be upon him, the spirit of wisdom, realization, counsel, power, and knowledge and love toward Yahweh.
He will not judge according to the sight of his eyes.
He will not reprove according to the hearing of his ears.
With righteousness, he will judge the meek.
With fairness, he will judge Earth's humble ones.
When necessary, he will strike the Earth with the rod of his mouth.
When necessary, he will slay the wicked with the breath of his lips.

16:5 - His throne will be established with mercy.
He will occupy it in truth, judging and seeking judgment.
He will swiftly establish an increase of righteousness.

24:21 - Then Yahweh will punish those who are lifted up.
Then Yahweh will punish all the leaders of Earth.
The moon will be confused and the sun ashamed the day Yahweh of hosts reigns in glory on mount Zion and in Jerusalem before his ancient ones.

31:5 - As birds flying, Yahweh of hosts will defend Jerusalem.
In defending, he will also deliver.
In delivering, he will also save.

51:3 - Yahweh will comfort Zion.
Yahweh will revive all her waste places.
Yahweh will make her wilderness like Eden.
Yahweh will make her deserts like one of his own gardens.

Yahweh will fill her with joy, gladness, and thanksgiving.
Yahweh will fill her with the sound of music.

52:10 - Yahweh will reveal his holy arm before all nations.
Everyone on Earth will see the salvation of our God.

13 - Watch and see, for my servant will deal correctly.
My servant will be raised up and honored.
My servant will be very high.
My servant will sprinkle many nations.
Rulers of nations will shut their mouths before him when they hear what
they had never been told and behold what they had never seen.

59:18 - He will repay them according to their deeds.
He will shower rage on his enemies.
He will shower retaliation on his adversaries.
Beginning out in the west, and all the way into the rising of the sun, they
will shudder in the presence of Yahweh's name.
When the enemy flows in like a flood, Yahweh's ruach (spirit) will raise a
standard against him and the redeemer will come again to Zion, to every-
one who has turned from evil in Jacob.

60:14 - The sons of those who hassled you will come and bow before you.
They will come, every last one of them.
Those who beset you will bow themselves down at the soles of your feet.
They will call you Yahweh's city, the Zion of Israel's Holy One.

62:1 - For Zion's sake, I will not be still.
For Jerusalem's sake, I will not rest, not before its righteousness shines
forth as a light and its salvation as a lamp brightly burning.
Heathen will behold its righteousness.
Kings will behold its glory.
It will be called by a new name, a name awarded by Yahweh.
Give him no rest, not until it is confirmed.
Give him no rest, not until he makes Jerusalem the glory of Earth. (7)

65:17 - Watch, for I will institute a new heaven and Earth. The present
heaven and Earth will not be remembered, nor will it ever come into your
mind again. Therefore, be happy and rejoice in all ages over this thing I
will bring to pass.
Only wait, for I will make Jerusalem a cause to celebrate.
Only wait, for I will make her people a joy.
On that day, I will take pleasure in Jerusalem.
On that day, my people will bring me joy.
On that day, the sound of weeping will not be heard among my people.

66:22 - Like the new heaven and Earth I form will remain before me, says Yahweh, your seed and your name will also remain.
Yahweh says, It will come to pass from one new moon to another and from one sabbath to another that all people will assemble to worship before me. When they do, they will see the remains of those who opposed me. When they do, they will see those who are hated by all people.

Jer 3:17 - In that day, Jerusalem will be known as Yahweh's throne. All nations will be gathered to it, to Yahweh's name in Jerusalem. Never again will nations walk after the imagination of their evil hearts.

23:5 - Believe me, says Yahweh, the day is coming, the day on which I will raise up to David a righteous branch.
My king will reign and prosper.
My king will bring judgment and justice to Earth.

30:7 - It will be a day so great there will never be another day like it. It will be a day of trouble for Jacob, but he will be delivered out of it. It will also come to pass, says Yahweh of hosts, that I will tear their yoke off your necks. I will loosen your bonds and strangers will no longer serve themselves of you. Instead, you will worship Yahweh, your God, and David, your king, whom I will raise up for you.

18 - Trust me, for I will bring again the captivity of Jacob's tents. I will have mercy on Jacob's dwelling places. I will have mercy and the city will be rebuilt upon its own rubble.

22 - You will be my people and I will be your God.
In those days, you will see a whirlwind go forth with rage.
It will be a whirlwind from Yahweh.
It will be a continuous whirlwind, a whirlwind which will fall with pain upon the heads of those who do evil.
Yahweh's fierce antagonism will not diminish, not before its objective has been realized, and not before Yahweh has clarified the plan and intent of his heart. You will understand it all in the last days.

31:31 - A day is coming, says Yahweh, in which I will make a new covenant with the houses of Israel and Judah.
It will not be like the covenant I enacted with the fathers the day I took them by the hand and led them from the land of Egypt, for even though I was like an husband to them, they violated our agreement.
In a time to come, I will enter into a new covenant with Israel's house.
I will write my law inside them, says Yahweh of hosts.
I will write my law on their hearts.
I will be their God and they will be my people.

35 - This is what Yahweh says, the Yahweh that gave the sun to be a light in the day, with the laws ruling the moon and stars to give light during the night, the Yahweh that curbed the sea when its waves churned in chaos.

Yahweh of Hosts is his name.

It is the exact same Yahweh that says: If any of these decrees fail from before me, the seed of Israel will no longer be a nation before me for all time. If the heavens above can be measured and the foundation of Earth discovered below, then I will cast off Israel's seed for all they have done before me.

33:15 - In that day and time, I will cause the branch of righteousness to grow up unto David and he will bring justice and morality to the land. Because of him, Judah will be redeemed and Jerusalem will live safely.

Amos 9:11 - During that time, I will raise up the tabernacle of David. I will raise up the one that has fallen and repair all its breaches. I will raise up its ruins and rebuild it like it was in the old days.

Zech 12:2 - I will make Jerusalem a cup of fear to those who compass it. I will be against those who partake in the siege. I will oppose those arrayed against Judah and Jerusalem. I will make Jerusalem a troublesome stone to all people. All who pit themselves against Jerusalem will be broken to pieces. All will be broken, even if every person on Earth is there.

8 - On that day, Yahweh will defend those who live in Jerusalem. On that day, even crippled ones will be like David. On that day, the house of David will be like God. On that day, David's house will be like the angel of Yahweh. On that day, David's house will be like the one who went before Israel. On that day, I will destroy every nation allied against Jerusalem.

14:1 - The day of Yahweh is coming, the day in which he will assemble all people against Jerusalem to battle. The city will be captured, its houses will be rifled, its women raped, and half the city will go into bondage. Those who are left will remain in the city. Then Yahweh will go forth and fight against those nations. Then Yahweh will fight as he fought in previous days of battle.

9 - Then Yahweh will be king of the Earth. There will be one Yahweh, with one name.

Ps 149:5 - The chosen will rejoice in their glory. They will sing aloud on their beds. The high praises of God will sound from their mouths.

Their hands will clutch double-edged swords.
They will take revenge on the heathen.
They will punish those people.
They will bind their kings with chains.
They will bind their royalty with bands of iron.
They will execute upon them all that has been written.
This honor will be given to those who were chosen.
The chosen will bring Yahweh much respect.

Is 60:1 - Rise and shine!
Your light has come.
Yahweh's glory has fallen upon you.
Do you see? Darkness covers Earth, and deep darkness covers its people.
Yahweh will hover over you, though, and his glory will be seen above you.
All nations will come to your light.
All kings will come to the brilliance of your manifestation.

Rev 2:26 - I will give power over the nations to all who overcome, to those who obey my words until the end. You will rule over the nations with a rod of iron. You will break them to shivers like a potter breaks an undesirable jug. This is what I have been told by my Father.

3:21 - I swear you will sit with me on my throne.
I swear you will sit like I am now sitting with my Father on his throne.

Zeph 3:14 - Shout it out, oh daughter of Zion!
Shout it out, oh Israel!
Be joyful and rejoice with all your heart, oh daughter of Jerusalem.
Yahweh has taken away all your judgments.
Yahweh has cast off all your enemies.
Israel's king is with you and you will never be troubled again.
On that day, it will be said to Jerusalem, Have no fear.
Zion will be told, Do not let your hands be slack.
Yahweh, your Elohim, is a mighty one.
Yahweh will deliver you and rejoice over you with great elation.

19 - On that day, I will undo all who afflicted you.
I will deliver those who were weak.
I will gather those who were driven off and they will gain praise.
I will get them respect in all the lands where they were put to shame.

Mal 4:1 - The day is coming that will burn like a blast furnace.
Those who are proud and those who work wickedness will be like stubble.
The day is coming that will burn them up.
This is guaranteed by Yahweh of hosts.

Yahweh will leave them neither root or branch, but upon those who honor Yahweh's name, the sun of righteousness will rise.
He will have healing in his beams.
He will trample down all the wicked on the day I do this.
He will make them like ashes under your feet, says Yahweh of hosts.

Rev 11:15 - When the seventh angel sounded, I could hear loud voices all through the heaven. They were shouting, The kingdoms of this world are now the kingdoms of our Lord and his Christ!

People are free to believe what they want about the location of God's kingdom, but those who want to believe it never was, or never will be, set up in the true and literal city of Jerusalem had better find another book than the Bible to trust. They'd be better off trusting a tract from some group called "The Church of Our Heavenly Home".

People like these would be fools to look to the Bible for support.

"Why should these people find a book other than the Bible?"

The answer: because they're wasting their time waiting for tickets to their "Heaven" to fall from the Bible.

It's possible the Bible is wrong and its writers knew no truth.

It's possible the Kingdom of God is located off and away in "Heaven".

It's possible the Kingdom of God will be, or already has been, erected in America, Australia, or the Arctic.

Much is possible, but it's wholly impossible for people with smarts not to notice the fact that the Bible says the ancient Kingdom of God will be headquartered in the current city of Jerusalem, the city located a short distance east of the Mediterranean sea, hunkered down on the bridge of land connecting Africa, Asia, and Europe.

Joel 3:1 - Watch and see . . .

On that day and during that time, when I have again given good things to Judah and Jerusalem, I will assemble all nations.

I will bring them down to the valley of Jehoshaphat (Yahweh judges).

I will judge them there because of my people and my heritage.

I will judge them because they scattered Israel into all nations.

I will punish them because they divided up my land.

I will punish them because they cast dice for my people, swapping a boy for an whore, and a girl for wine they could guzzle down and get drunk.

Obad 15 - Yahweh's set time is drawing nigh for all the heathen.

As the heathen did, it will also be done to them.

Everything they did is going to come around again on their own heads.

17 - Deliverance will be manifest on Zion.

Mount Zion will be set apart.

Jacob's house will finally receive its inheritance on Zion.
Jacob's house will be a fire.
Joseph's house will be a flame.
Esau's house will be stubble, deserving only to be set afire and consumed.
No one from the house of Esau will survive.
Yahweh swears it.

21 - Saviors will rise up on mount Zion.
Saviors will judge the mount of Esau and Yahweh will have dominion.

Zeph 3:8 - Therefore, wait for me, says Yahweh.
I ask you to wait for the day I rise up and devour the prey.
I assure you, I will call for all nations.
I will assemble all nations and pour out my wrath on them.
I will pour out every last bit of my burning indignation on them.
I will consume their lands by the fire of my zeal.
I will cleanse the lips of all who remain.
I will cleanse their lips and they will call Yahweh's name upon them.
Shoulder to shoulder, they will follow Yahweh.
From beyond the rivers and from all the lands round and about, the ones who love me, all my scattered ones, will bring their offerings.
On that day, you will no longer be ashamed of the evil you did before me.
I will drive all those who took pleasure in their pride out of the city.
Never again will anyone act proudly on my holy hill, since I will leave only meek and humble ones there, those whose refuge is Yahweh's name.

Zech 14:12 - This is the plague Yahweh will send on all who come against Jerusalem: their flesh will rot while they stand on their feet, their eyes will waste away in their sockets, and the tongues in their mouths will decompose right in them.
On that day, a terrible panic from Yahweh will drop down on them.
On that day, although they only want to reach out their hand to a friend, they will not be able to stop attacking one another.
Judah will also do battle in Jerusalem, and wealth out of the surrounding nations will be collected, an enormous amount of gold, silver, and apparel.
Survivors from nations that fought against Jerusalem will be impelled to return once each year to worship the King, Yahweh of hosts.
Actually, they will be forced to commemorate the Feast of Tabernacles, for the lands of those who do not return to Jerusalem to honor the King will receive no rain.

2 Ptr 3:9 - The Lord is not slack regarding his promise, not as some feel about slackness; rather, he is showing much patience, not wishing anyone would die, and though he is providing time for any who want to repent, it will not stop the day of the Lord from coming like a thief in the night.

On that day, the heavens will pass away with a great roar.
On that day, the elements will be consumed by an extreme heat.
Earth, along with all its deeds, will be laid bare and made public.
Since these things will all be dissolved, what kind of person must you be?
You will do well if you live a separate and holy life as you look forward to
and expedite the coming of the day of God, the day when the heaven will
be destroyed by fire, with its very elements melting in the conflagration.
We believe this is true so we look for a new heaven and Earth.
We look for an heaven and Earth wherein righteousness dwells.

The Bible speaks of life and religion in the Kingdom Age: the passages below pertain to God's approaching kingdom, its intent and demeanor, the amount and scale of control it brings to bear, those who reign, those who are reigned over, and the mode, time, and place where God's kingdom will be established.

Ps 24:7 - Raise your heads, oh gates.
Oh ancient doors, rise up so the King of glory can enter.
Who is this glorious King?
Can it be Yahweh, who is strong and full of power?
Can it be Yahweh, who is mighty in battle?
Oh gates, raise your heads.
Oh ancient doors, rise up so the King of glory can enter.
And who is this glorious King?
Look, it is Yahweh of hosts. Yahweh is the King of glory.

Ezk 20:1 - Israel's leaders appeared before me.
Israel's leaders begged me to ask Yahweh some questions.
Israel's leaders sat down before me and refused to leave.
Yahweh's word came to me, saying, Son of man, speak to Israel's leaders.
Inform them Yahweh Elohim has a question for them. Ask them if there is something they should not say to me first.
Have they come to ask me questions, son of man? By the life that I live, says Yahweh Elohim, I will not be quizzed by the likes of them.
Answer them. You speak to them, son of man, reminding them about the evil of their ancestors. Tell them Yahweh Elohim ordered you to say, At the time I picked Israel, on the day I made the vow to Jacob's house, on the day I revealed myself to them in the nation of Egypt, that same day, I informed them I was Yahweh, their Elohim. I swore I would lead them out of the land of Egypt and guide them into a land which is flowing with milk and honey, a land more fair than any other.
I said, You must cast off all the disgusting things that so enchant you.
I said, You must not soil yourselves by offering to Egyptian idols.
It is no great surprise they rebelled against me and would not listen.
In fact, they clung to all the revolting things that had bewitched them.

They kept on sacrificing to their Egyptian idols, and because they did it, I decided to pour all my wrath out on them. I decided to consume all my wrath on them in the land of Egypt. Instead, I acted only for my name's sake, doing no more than was needed to make sure my name would not be disgraced before the people with whom they were living, those who first heard of me when I announced I was taking Israel out of Egypt.

And I did take them out of the land of Egypt, then led them far into the wilderness, where I introduced them to my wishes. I gave them my laws, just a few simple rules I designed to beget life in all who observed them. Also, I gave them my sabbath as a sign between myself and them, hoping it would help them recollect it was I, Yahweh, who made them so special, but they turned against me in the wilderness. They did not walk my walk or listen to my announcements. So I decided to work out my frustration on them there in the wilderness, but because that would have destroyed them, I acted only for my name's sake. I only did what was necessary to prevent my name from being soiled in the eyes of the people who saw me remove Israel from Egypt.

At the time, while Israel was stranded there in the desert, I spoke with them. I said I had decided not to let them enter the land I promised to give them, but I would still offer them compassion and not scatter their worthless carcasses all over the desert.

I begged the children not to follow the way of their parents.

I begged them not to imitate the example of their parents.

I guaranteed them that worshipping the idols of their parents was going to soil them, but they rebelled against me and chose not to obey my law. Once again, I wanted to pour my wrath out on them. I wanted to expend all my anger in the wilderness, but I held back my hand. I only acted for the sake of my name. All I did was take steps to make sure my name did not get polluted in the eyes of those who watched me free Israel.

It was there in the desert I warned Israel I was ready to scatter them into all nations. It was there in the desert I told them I had planned to hide them in all lands. It was there in the desert I let them know I was doing it because they decided not to follow my law. And in spite of that, they still rejected my laws and dishonored my sabbath. They still would not avert their eyes from their fathers' idols.

Because of this, it was also there in the desert that I gave them useless regulations, along with orders that were impossible to keep. Then I told them they were worthless because they did not obey my commandments. The only reason I did this was because they would not stop forcing their firstborn children to pass through fires lit to appease alien gods.

I only told them they were worthless in the hope they would see without me they really were on their own out in the wilderness. All I asked them to do was come back to me, to Yahweh, but oh no, not them.

So go now, son of man, and speak to the house of Israel.
Inform the house of Israel Yahweh Elohim says, In each of these things
your ancestors blasphemed me. Your fathers committed treason against
me, since when I finally did change my thinking and allow them to go into
the land I promised them, the first thing they noticed was an abundance
of high hills, all with enormous clumps of foliage on every green tree.
Believe me, they soon began offering sacrifices in the land.
They soon began provoking me in the land with their offerings.
They started mixing aromatic scents in the land.
They started pouring out drink-offerings in the land, too.

Go now, ask the elders of the house of Israel to answer these questions:
Will you continue soiling yourselves the same as your fathers?
Will you continue whoring after their disgusting images?
Do you not see that continuing to compel your firstborn children to pass
through fires has resulted in you being defiled by your idols to this day?
Now you want me to answer questions from you, oh house of Israel?
By my very life, says Yahweh Elohim, I will take no questions from you.
You say you want to be like other nations, like all the other people in the
world, like the idiots who bow to images of wood and stone.
Get real! The thing you want is not going to happen.
By my very life, says Yahweh Elohim, I have already told you this: by the
strength of my hand, with my arm stretched forth, and by an outpouring
of much wrath, I will reign over you.
I already told you I will be your king.
I already told you I am going to gather you out of all nations. And after
I have brought you out of all the lands into which you were scattered, I
will transport you all to a deserted location on Earth. Once there, I will
enter into judgment with you face to face, the exact way I entered into
judgment with your forefathers in the wilderness of Egypt. That is the
way I will enter into judgment with you.
Yahweh Elohim says, I will judge you when you pass beneath the rod.
I will bring those of you who survive into the bonds of the covenant.
I will seek out the rebels among you, the ones who love to shame me.
I will bring Israel's people out of every nation in which they live.
It is no guarantee, however, they will all get into the land of Israel.
Israel will know one thing, though: Israel will know I, Yahweh, did it.
Go, if you want, oh house of Israel, says Yahweh Elohim.
Go, all of you, and serve your idols.
Go, but it will not be long before you hear from me.
Go, but it will not be long before I demand that you stop besmirching my
holy name by sacrificing to your idols.
You wonder why? It is because on my holy mount, upon the most beloved
mount in Israel, vows Yahweh Elohim, my people, my Israel, the ones that
survive, will live in the land and worship me.

It is because I will accept you on my holy mount, oh Israel.
 I will accept your sacrifices, precious gifts, and holy offerings there.
 I will receive you as the sweet smell of incense.
 I will remove you from all nations.
 I will release you from all the nations into which you were scattered.
 All the heathen will know I am (God) when they see me among you.
 You will know when I bring you back into the land of Israel.
 You will know when I return you to the land I promised your fathers.
 You will waste away in pagan lands before then, and once there, you will
 be aware of your past acts and you will remember all the ways by which
 you soiled yourselves, and you will be completely ashamed of yourselves
 in your own eyes over the evil things you did.
 You will finally realize your judgment came from me, Yahweh.
 You will completely concur I treated you with respect to my holy name's
 sake and not according to your evil ways, oh house of Israel.
 Now, son of man, prophesy to the forests in the south, saying, Listen to
 Yahweh's word. This is what Yahweh Elohim says to you: Look out, for I
 am prepared to ignite a fire in you that will burn up all your green trees.
 It will burn up all your dry trees, as well. The flames from this fire will
 never be quenched, not until all the trees in you from north to south are
 incinerated by it. Everyone will know Yahweh torched it and nobody will
 even try to put it out.

Later, I, Ezekiel, asked, Oh Yahweh Elohim, Can you hear them?
 You must hear them talking about me.
 You must hear them saying, Oy vayyy . . . old 'Zeke is babbling again.

34:1 - Yahweh's word came to me, saying, Son of man, reproach Israel's
 shepherds. Prophesy. Speak to the shepherds. Tell them, Here is what
 Yahweh Elohim has to say: Woe to the shepherds of Israel. Woe to the
 ones who feed only themselves! Must a shepherd not tend to the flock?
 You devour all the fatty portions and garb yourselves with the wool, but
 you refuse to empower the weak, to heal the sick and bind up those who
 are broken, to return those who are scattered, or to look for those who
 are lost. Instead, with power and cruelty you control them all, and they
 live apart now because they have no shepherds.
 My people have become food for beasts of the field.
 My sheep are scattered now, with no one to seek them out.
 As a result, oh shepherds, hear the word of Yahweh: As surely as I live,
 and as surely as my sheep are now prey, and as surely as my people have
 become food for beasts of the field because their shepherds refuse to
 care for them, and as surely as the shepherds will not seek out the lost
 sheep, but gorge themselves, and refuse to feed the flock, as surely as
 that, oh you shepherds, you will now know the great pleasure of hearing
 some words from Yahweh of hosts.

Yahweh Elohim says, I am opposed to these shepherds.
Yahweh says, I will take my sheep back from them.
Yahweh says, They will be shepherds no more.
Yahweh says, They will consume my sheep no more.
Yahweh says, I will pluck my flock from their jaws.

14 - I will feed my flock in good pasture.
I will feed my flock on the high places of Israel.
I will make sure my flock is fed.
I will lead my flock to safety, says Yahweh Elohim.
As for you, my flock, remember what Yahweh Elohim said to you. Yahweh Elohim told you this: I will judge between one sheep and another. **(17)**
I will select one shepherd to lead them, even my servant, David.
David himself will feed them.
David will feed them and be their shepherd.
I, Yahweh, will be their God.
David, my servant, will be their Prince.
I, Yahweh, have spoken. **(23)**

25 - I will enact a covenant of peace with them.
They will live safely when I cast every harmful beast off their land.
They will no longer be victims of the nations.
The beasts of Earth will no longer devour them.
They will be secure, with no one causing them fear.
They will never again endure insults from the nations, since they will know that I, Yahweh, their Elohim, am with them. All the people living on Earth will be aware Israel's nation is mine, says Yahweh Elohim.
You, my sheep, the sheep of my pasture, you will be ambassadors between myself and humankind. And me? I will be your God. **(28)**

36:4 - So, oh mountains of Israel, hear the word of Yahweh Elohim.
Hear what Yahweh Elohim is saying to the mountains, the hills, the gullies, the valleys, the lonely wastes and forsaken cities. Hear Yahweh's word to those who are a prey and the butt of insults from nations round about.

6 - Yahweh Elohim says, Believe me, I speak in jealousy and anger. I hate the fact that you have had to tolerate insults from the nations. In truth, I, Yahweh, your God, promise you this: the nations around you will swallow down their own insults themselves.

You, oh mountains of Israel, will put forth branches.
You will bear fruit for my people, Israel, who will be here soon.
Believe me, I am on your side. I will be with you and you will be tilled and planted. I will increase my people on you, even the entire house of Israel.
Your cities will be inhabited and your waste places rebuilt.

16 - Yahweh's word came to me, and said, Son of man, when the people of Israel defiled their land, after they were living in it, they went their own way and did whatever they wanted. I regarded their acts to be the same as the discharge of a woman on her period. I poured out my fury on them for all the blood they spilled in their land, and for all the images by which they profaned it. I scattered them among the heathen. I cast them into every nation. Like they did, so too, it was done to them. In spite of it all, after they entered the heathen lands in which they would be exiled, they disgraced my holy name even more. They allowed the pagans to say about them: They are just some of Yahweh's people who chose to leave his land. I had pity for my holy name, however, the same name the house of Israel told jokes about as they entertained the heathen wherever they went. Say this to the house of Israel: Yahweh Elohim states, I will not do it for your sakes, oh house of Israel. I am doing it for my holy name's sake, for the sake of the name you scandalized before the heathen. And since you did it, not one of your pagan friends will realize I am Yahweh until I have been glorified in you before their very eyes. Pagans will not realize it before I remove you from their sight, long after I have brought you out from their midst. But by then, I will have planted you back in your own land, and there in your own land, I will sprinkle clean water on you and you will be purified. I will cleanse you from the filth of your images. I will give you new hearts and put a new spirit within you. I will remove your stony hearts and replace them with hearts of flesh. My spirit will rest upon you, helping you walk in my path and obey my laws. You will obey my laws as long as you live in the land, the land I promised I would give your fathers. You will be my people and I will be your God.

33 - Here is what Yahweh says: I will purify you from all your sins. After I do, you will live in cities. Waste places will be rebuilt and deserted land will be cultivated. Land previously barren in the sight of bystanders will be plowed. And people will say, Hey, wow, did you see? The land which was deserted looks like Eden! And all those run-down, destroyed, and abandoned cities are now fenced and populated. On that day, the heathen who survive will finally realize it was I, Yahweh, who rebuilt all the barren places. They will realize, too, it was I, Yahweh, who planted all the desolate ground. I, Yahweh, swear it. And I, Yahweh, will do it.

39:27 - When I have brought (Israel) out again from the nations, when I have removed them from the lands of their enemies, when I am justified through them before all nations, only then will they finally know I am the Lord, their God (Yahweh, their Elohim). Only then will they know I sent them into exile among the heathen. Only then will they know I brought them back to their own land.

Only then will they know I left none of them behind.
Only then will they know I will never hide my face from them again.
Only then will they know it came to pass because I poured out my pneuma
on the house of Israel.

A Vision of the Temple of the Great Age.

Ezk 40:1 - At the twenty-fifth year of our removal, in the first month of the year, on the tenth day of the month, fourteen years after we lost the holy city, during that very same time, Yahweh's hand snatched me away to Jerusalem. In a vision from the Elohim, Yahweh carried me to the land of Israel and set me down on an high mountain.

Something that looked like a city was built on top of the mountain.

I was brought closer and I saw a man with the appearance of brass.

He held a flaxen line in his hand.

He held a measuring stick, too.

He sat in the gate of the city.

He said, Son of man, watch with your eyes and listen with your ears. Give attention to all that I show you, since this is the only reason you are here. Bye and bye, you will tell everything you have seen and heard to the house of Israel.

One thing I saw was a wall surrounding the whole structure.

He (the man) measured the north gate.

He took me around to the south side.

He took me to the inner courtyard.

I saw doors opening onto chambers beside the inner entrance.

I saw that burnt offerings were prepared in the chambers.

I saw an open area by the gates which held two tables.

I saw that burnt offerings for sin and guilt were killed on the tables.

43 - Dual-pronged hooks, each the length of a man's hand, were hung upon the walls all around, and there were tables to hold the flesh of sacrifices. Outside the inner gate, but still in the courtyard, I saw two rooms.

45 - The man said the room facing south was for priests charged with the temple and the room facing north was for priests charged with affairs of the altar.

The priests responsible for affairs of the altar will be seed of Zadok.

They will be the only Levites allowed to approach the altar.

They will be the only ones allowed to minister to Yahweh.

42:13 - The man told me rooms facing north and south in the court of the temple are rooms where priests who approach Yahweh will eat the holiest offerings. The most holy offerings, incorporating the grain offerings, sin offerings, and guilt offerings will be stored in the rooms.

These rooms are holy. If a priest enters an holy area he must not return to the outer court until he has taken off the vestment he has on when he ministers to Yahweh. These garments are holy, too, so a priest is obliged to put on street-clothes before he returns to an area in which the people are allowed.

43:1 - The man brought me to the east gate.

I saw the glory of the Elohim of Israel approaching out of the sun.

It made the sound of rushing waters and the land radiated with its light.

I knew I was going to have another vision.

It was like one of the visions I had seen earlier.

It was like the vision I saw before Yahweh came to destroy the holy city.

It was also like the visions I saw by the Kebar river.

As always, I fell forward with my face to the ground.

The glory of Yahweh came rushing into the temple through the east gate.

Then some pneuma grabbed me and whisked me into the courtyard.

There, I saw that Yahweh's glory had filled the whole temple.

There, I also heard someone speaking to me from inside the temple.

The man of brass still stood beside me so it was not him.

The voice said, Son of man, this is where my throne will be inaugurated.

This is where I will dwell among the seed of Israel for all ages.

The people of Israel will soil my holy name no more.

They will never soil my name again, nor will their kings.

They will never partake in treason against me again.

They will never worship lifeless idols again.

They will never bow to idols like those set up by their kings in high places.

They soiled my holy name by their depraved acts.

That is why I devoured them in my wrath.

Though even now, if they turn from their whoredom, and the images given

them by their leaders, I will quickly come stay with them for the ages.

You, son of man, must tell them about this temple.

You must make them feel shamed by their behavior.

You must help them comprehend the scope of my plan.

44:1 - The man escorted me back to the gate outside the holy place.

I saw that the gate on the east side of the temple had been sealed.

Yahweh said, That gate will stay closed. It will not be opened. No one will go in or out through it. Yahweh, Israel's Elohim, entered through it, and it will always stay closed. Just the Prince will sit in it. And he will only sit in it when he eats the holy offering to Yahweh.

Son of man, speak to the house of Israel, and tell them Yahweh Elohim has said, I have had enough of your evil deeds, oh house of Israel, for not only did you act repulsively yourselves, you even allowed people not circumcised in heart and flesh to enter my holy place and soil my temple. And you went on sanctifying food offerings (fat and blood even!) which nullified the oath

between us. Also, you would not perform the ordinances that concern my sacred things. Instead, you put aliens in charge of the holy place. Yahweh Elohim has said, No pagan or anyone else who is uncircumcised of heart and flesh is ever going to enter my holy place again, not even aliens who live with the Israelites.

10 - The Levites who left me after Israel strayed, those who sacrificed to images, will bear the outcome of their works. Nevertheless, they will still assist in the sanctuary. They will be responsible for maintaining the temple gates. And they will also minister inside the temple, slaughtering the burnt offerings and sacrifices of the people. They will stand before the people and serve them. That will be their fate, for they stood in the presence of the people as they bowed to their images. When they did it, these Levites became stumbling-blocks. When they did it, they dishonored the whole house of Israel. I will give witness against them, says Yahweh Elohim. I will compel them to suffer this penalty for their sins: they will not approach me, they will not serve as my priests, and they will not approach any of my holy things, especially not my most holy things; rather, these traitors will wear their shame before the public.

15 - But the Levitical priests who are descendants of Zadok, the priests who kept on serving faithfully in my temple when Israel went astray, are ones who will approach me and be my ministers.

23 - They will teach my people what is holy and what is common. They will help my people see what is clean and what is defiled. They will act as judges if a disagreement arises. They will act as judges and settle the thing according to my laws. They will enforce the laws and decrees pertaining to appointed feasts. They will also enforce the laws that hallow my sabbaths.

Another Division of the Promised Land.

Ezk 45:1 - When you apportion the land by lot as an inheritance, you will put aside a portion for Yahweh, a separate portion of land 25,000 cubits long and 10,000 cubits wide. Every cubit of this place will be considered holy.

If a cubit measures 18 inches, the distance between an average adult human male's elbow and the tip of his rigid middle digit, it's obvious that part of neo-Israel will measure 7 miles long by 3 miles wide.

Ezk 45:2 - The center of this area will be set apart as a most holy place. It will be a parcel of ground measuring 500 square cubits.

It will be surrounded by an open area 50 cubits on a side.
It will be a special area to house the sanctuary.
As for the sanctuary, it will be the holiest place in the land.
Priests who serve in the sanctuary will be responsible for it.
And these priests alone will approach Yahweh to minister to him.

All the land bordering the most holy area, along with all the land donated to the city, will belong to the Prince, for it is his inheritance in Israel. Because of it, no one in my organization will take advantage of the people. Instead, they will assist the house of Israel, helping them to dwell in the land they were given according to their tribes.

16 - Everyone in the land will contribute to a special fund.
It will be given to the one who rules as Prince in Israel.
It will be the responsibility of the Prince to supply burnt offerings, grain offerings, and beverages at all the festivals, like feasts of the new moon, sabbaths, and any other event appointed to the house of Israel.

46:9 - When the people in the land assemble before Yahweh on appointed feasts, those who entered to worship by the north gate must exit by way of the south gate. Those who entered through the south gate must leave by way of the north gate. No one will leave through the gate by which he entered; rather, people will walk straight through the temple to exit.
When the people enter, the Prince will enter with them.
When the people leave, the Prince will leave with them.
When the Prince offers a free-will offering, whether a burnt offering or fellowship offering, the gate facing east will be opened for him.
Whenever the Prince sacrifices a burnt offering or a fellowship offering, he will sacrifice it the way he sacrifices a sabbath offering.
And after the Prince leaves, the gate facing east will be closed.

Zech 6:12 - Observe the man known as the Branch.
He will rise from his habitation and establish Yahweh's temple.
He will go forward in glory and sit on his throne as Priest and King.

8:2 - I was jealous over Zion with a great jealousy then.
I was jealous over her with much wrath.
Now I have come back to Zion.
Now I intend to remain in the midst of Jerusalem.
Now Jerusalem will be called a City of Truth.
Now the mountain of Yahweh of hosts will be called an Holy Mountain.

20 - In those days, people will come from all the inhabited cities.
In those days, people from one city will enter another city, saying, Let us go now to pray before Yahweh. Let us seek out Yahweh of hosts.

In those days, many people from great nations will arrive to seek Yahweh of hosts in Jerusalem.

In those days, many people will come to plead their cause before Yahweh. In those days, ten men from each tongue and nation will grip the garment of a Jew, saying, We will go with you, for we hear God is with you.

Mal 3:4 - The offerings of Judah and Jerusalem will please Yahweh. They will be pleasing as they were in the early years, as in the old days.

Ezk 47:1 - The man led me to the front of the temple. He showed me water flowing from under the threshold toward the east. He began to move in an easterly direction, a measuring line in his hands. He marked off 1,000 cubits as he led me through ankle-deep water. He marked off 1,000 cubits as he led me through knee-deep water. He marked off 1,000 cubits as he led me through thigh-deep water. He marked off a final 1,000 cubits and the water was wide as a river. Here, the water was so deep I would have to swim if I wanted to cross. Son of man, you have seen enough, the man told me. I was returned to the bank of the river. I noticed a great many trees had appeared on each shore.

The man told me, The river will flow toward the east. And it will continue flowing through the Jordan valley out on the desert and eventually empty into the sea. As the river runs into the Dead sea, its water will be healed and an abundance of living creatures will dwell wherever the water flows.

10 - Fishermen will fish along the banks. From En Gedi to En Eglaim, they will cast their nets. A great variety of fish will appear, as many as can be seen in the Mediterranean Sea. Swamp and marshland will not be healed. It will be left as it is to furnish salt. Fruit trees of every kind will grow on the banks of this river. Their leaves will not wither, nor will they ever fail to bear fruit. They will bear fruit every month, for they will be watered by the river that issues from the temple. Their fruit will be for food and their leaves for healing.

47:13 - Yahweh Elohim says, It is the place from which you will apportion the land as an inheritance to the twelve tribes of Israel. Land will also be given to the aliens living among you, those who have sons and daughters among you, ones who will be considered the same as native-born children of Israel. They, too, will be granted inheritance among you. Every alien will be given a plot of land from the land awarded to the tribe among which the alien is living. **(22)**

Is 56:1 - Yahweh says, Advocate justice and behave properly. Do it, for salvation is nigh and my righteousness will soon be revealed.

Blessed are all who do it, any children of men who take hold of it, any who refuse to profane my sabbaths, any who hate doing what is wrong.

Let no alien who has joined himself to Yahweh say, Yahweh is surely going to separate me from his people.

Let no eunuch say, Look at me, I am nothing but a withered tree.

Yahweh says, Eunuchs who observe my sabbath and do things which please me, those who cling tightly to my covenant, to them I will give, in my house and inside my walls, this memorial: I will give them names above the names of sons or daughters. Instead, I will give them names that will endure for all ages, names that will never be cut off.

Aliens who join themselves to Yahweh and serve him, aliens who honor the name of Yahweh, aliens who are his helpers, aliens who will not debase his holy days, aliens who remain close to his covenant - they are the ones who will be assembled on my holy mountain, swears Yahweh.

And they are the ones who will be joyful in my house of prayer.

All their burnt offerings and sacrifices will be received on my altar, since my house will be an house of prayer for all people.

Yahweh Elohim, who will return Israel's exiles, says, There are yet others I will bring with them, others as well as these first ones I gather.

Ezk 48:17 - The city will have open areas on all sides.

Crops will be grown to feed those who work in the city.

Workers who till the fields will be chosen from every tribe of Israel.

From that day on, the name of the city will be: Yahweh Is There. (30)

Let's deal for a moment with what was found above: mainly, that flood of verses saying the returned Christ will introduce a construction project which will make the erection of the pyramids look like a tribe of trekkers tossed up some tombs on the tundra.

Scholars, of course, aren't comfortable with the idea.

Listen to them jabber.

Look at them gyrate.

See how they jump, juke, jive, and jam.

In spite of it, they'll never slither free of the truth the scrolls affirm huge geophysical changes will occur in the place known as the Middle East at the onset of the 'Kingdom Age'. They'll never slither free of the truth the alterations will happen because the real Christ will ratchet up Earth's pace as he introduces the regeneration of planet and population which has been out-working ever since the Elohim placed that pair of patsies in that paradise in Eden.

"Oh . . . uh, no," Reverends blubber. "We agree huge changes will occur in the Holy Land, but only after Satan, the Devil, is loosed upon the Earth barely seconds after our Dear Savior comes swooping down and sweeps us off to our heavenly home."

Reverends sure do rave on, don't they?

Reverends rave on and on, and they fail to see all that will swoop down on them is their ignorance. And the only place their ignorance is going to sweep them is off to their graves.

Read the scrolls, folks! Don't presuppose a few highly symbolic verses prove anything. Don't advocate moronic doctrines like Reverends do. And don't base your beliefs on figments that are opposed to clear statements found hundreds of times from **Genesis** to **Revelation**.

If you just must swig the ungodly pap of Pastors or Popes, be ready to kiss Christ off as your source of hope, comfort, and security.

It'll do no good to say, "My Dear Lord Jesus help me . . ."

"Why not?"

The answer: because the genuine Jesus isn't the "Dear Lord" of anyone who doesn't know and love the truth.

The true Christ won't hear people who are ignorant.

The true Christ isn't a "Dear Lord" to persons who support some parts of the Bible, but ignore parts that don't make them feel good.

The Bible plainly admits the true Jesus Christ isn't the "Dear Lord" of anyone who doesn't understand, believe, and do the truth.

Ps 86:8 - Oh, Yahweh, there is no one like you among all the mighty.
And there is no plan or purpose like yours.
All the nations you appointed will come to worship before you.
All will glorify your name, for you are lofty.
You have done wondrous deeds, for you alone are God.

102:15 - All nations will venerate the name of Yahweh.
Every king on Earth will bow before Yahweh's glory when he sets up Zion,
when he appears in glory, when he answers the prayers of those who pray
to him in truth. Yahweh will not ignore their pleas.
It has been written for a future generation.
It is written so some who are not yet born will be able to praise Yahweh.

145:11 - They will speak of Yahweh's glorious kingdom.
They will speak of Yahweh's power.
They will reveal Yahweh's mighty acts to humanity's children.
They will reveal the majesty and wonder of Yahweh's kingdom.
They will reveal that Yahweh's kingdom is an age-lasting dominion.
They will reveal that Yahweh's reign will endure for all generations.

149 - Praise Yahweh.
Sing Yahweh a new song.
Sing Yahweh's praises wherever his chosen are assembled.

Let Israel rejoice in its maker.
Let the people of Zion rejoice in their King.
Let them praise Yahweh's name with dancing.
Let them sing praises to Yahweh with tambourines.
Let them sing praises to Yahweh with guitars.

Yahweh is pleased with his people.
Yahweh will save his elect.
Yahweh's chosen ones will delight in the privilege.
Yahweh's chosen ones will rejoice upon their beds.

Let the high praises of El be in their mouths.
Let a double-edged sword be in their hands.
Let them execute vengeance on nations and punishment on their people.
Let them bind their kings in chains and their nobles in shackles of iron.
Let them bring upon their kings the judgment that was written.
Let Yahweh's chosen ones be given this honor.
Let them give all the glory to Yahweh.

Rev 15:4 - Who will not fear you, oh Yahweh?
Who will not glorify your name?
You alone are holy.
All nations will come to worship before you.
All nations will come to the manifestation of your righteousness.

Is 26:9 - I ache for you all night. In the morning, the very essence in me starts searching for you. And I do it because when your judgments come down on Earth, all its inhabitants will be forced to learn righteousness.

25:1 - Oh Yahweh, you are my Elohim and I am your witness. I will praise your name, for just as you promised, you brought your prophecies to pass. You brought to pass things you predicted long ago. You turned cities into piles of rubble and fortified places into ruins. Alien cities exist no more and will never be rebuilt. Because of it, influential people will honor you. Because of it, you will be respected by the inhabitants of many nations.

7 - Upon this mountain (on Zion, Yahweh) will disperse the ignorance that presently covers all nations.
On Zion, Yahweh will destroy the veil presently covering all people.

"Wait! The Bible says people pass on to heaven, or hell, or some other place when they die! The Bible promises people they go on to a different world, doesn't it?"

The answer: no, it doesn't. Sorry.

HEAVEN & HELL

Since heaven and hell appear in the Bible, it's not difficult to find how they relate to human life and death.

All tribes among Earth's inhabitants have an opinion concerning heaven and hell. To most, heaven is nothing but a reflection of the culture's view of a perfect life, a life much like the one lived by Adam and Eve.

Accordingly, humans envision heaps of happy hunting grounds.

All are Paradise-like places humans hope they'll enter at death.

All these places have two things in common.

First: they provide humans an opportunity for deliverance from mental torment, physical suffering, and lack.

Second: they're fantasies.

Hell, if tribes will even admit it exists at all, is the absolute antithesis of their heavens. Their hells are the worst places they can imagine.

But what about the Bible?

Heaven

Those looking for verses saying the reward of the faithful is entrance into the "Heaven" of anti-christianity are out of luck. They might as well go golfing, for there aren't any verses like that in the Bible.

Is 66:1 - Yahweh says, Heaven is my throne and Earth is my footstool.

What house could you possibly build for me?

Where is a place I could live in ease, since I formed everything?

Mt 5:5 - Surely, you heard it was said in the old days: You will not swear by your own hand and you will perform all that you promised Yahweh.

I am saying you should swear no vows at all: not by heaven, since it is the throne of God; not by Earth, since it is God's footstool; and not by Jerusalem, since it is the city of the great king.

Deut 10:14 - Be aware of this one thing: heaven, even the highest of the heavens, is Yahweh's possession. Earth, with everything on it, belongs to Yahweh, too.

Ps 11:4 - Yahweh is in his holy temple.

Yahweh's throne is in heaven.

115:16 - The heavens, with all that is in them, belong to Yahweh.

It is the Earth Yahweh has given to the children of men.

People should remember this, when dealing with the notion of heaven: there's no reason to imagine every time the word "heaven" appears it has to do with the Heaven of heavens, God's temple and dwelling-place.

"Why should people remember it?"

The answer: because the Bible refers to other and different heavens.

Evidence proving the existence of the heaven in which the Elohim live was seen in the last few verses.

Evidence concerning another heaven is seen below.

Gen 1:20 - The Elohim said, May the waters bring forth an host of living and moving creatures, and birds, also, to fly above Earth up in heaven.

Deut 1:28 - Why should we go? Our brothers have disturbed our hearts by telling us those people are stronger and taller than us and their cities are enormous, with walls reaching up to heaven.

Jer 8:7 - The stork flying in heaven is aware of her appointed times. Doves, cranes, and swallows all follow the cycles of nature, but Yahweh's people have no knowledge of Yahweh's law.

As seen above, the Bible mentions the heaven of "atmosphere".

It mentions the heaven of "sky" . . . the wild blue yonder.

Whatever that heaven is taken to be, it has very little to do with the heaven known as "space". Verses relating to this heaven follow.

Gen 15:5 - Yahweh brought Abraham out into the night. Yahweh said, Raise your eyes up to heaven and count the stars if you can. Yahweh added, This will be the number of your seed.

Job 9:8 - (God) who spread out the heavens, who treads on the waves of the sea, who patterned Arcturus, Orion, and Pleiades, and also, the vault of the south.

Ps 8:3 - When I study the heavens, the work of your fingers, along with the moon and stars, as well as all the other things you established, what is this man that you would be mindful of him?

Jer 31:35 - Yahweh gave the sun to illuminate the day. Yahweh gave the moon and stars to light up the night. Yahweh pacifies the sea when its waves seethe. Yahweh Tsaba (the Lord of Hosts) is he. That is his name. Yahweh says, If these statutes ever depart from before me, so too, the people of Israel will also cease to be a nation before me. If the heavens above can be measured and the foundations of Earth can be discovered below, then I will utterly cast off the seed of Israel.

Heaven appears next in the figurative sense.
Scholars and Reverends don't have to run on and on about its meaning,
for the author of **Genesis** supplies the meaning with the story.

Gen 37:3 - Jacob loved Joseph more than any of his other children.
Jacob loved Joseph more because he was a son of his latter years.
Jacob made Joseph a coat of bold colors.
Joseph's brothers saw their father loved him more than any of them.
Joseph's brothers began to hate him.
Just then, Joseph dreamed a dream.
Joseph told his brothers the dream and they hated him all the more.

9 - Joseph dreamed still another dream, and he told his brothers, Listen to the new dream I had: I saw the sun, moon, and eleven stars bow to me. He told his father after telling his brothers, but his father rebuked him. Jacob said, Do you know the meaning of the dream you dreamed? Do you really think I and your mother and your brothers will bow to you?

The story probably appears in **Genesis** for good reason. Nobody must believe that some entity known as "God" has produced and preserved the Bible throughout all ages, but it would be nice if everybody agrees those who wrote the Bible thought this was so. Is that too much to ask? If it isn't, examination of Joseph's dream can continue.

Jacob didn't consider the dream above his understanding.
Jacob, in his clan, was patriarch and father. Jacob was the sun.
Jacob's wife, Rachel, radiated his glory. Rachel was the moon.
Stars that shined brightest in the heaven were their children.
Servants and other hangers-on represented the Earth.
Servants and the others also represented Earth's lands and waters.

Boy, that was tough to figure out, wasn't it?
Since reality hasn't changed, the figures (symbols) probably haven't changed, either.
Earths and heavens appear all over the place today (in **2002 AD**).
Each of the hundred or so nations on the globe today has its heaven.
Each nation has its Earth, lands, and waters.
Each has its sun, moon, and stars.

Since heaven was symbolically interpreted, it's easy to apply the same key (interpretation) in other Bible verses, isn't it? Actually, it's odd that readers would interpret a figurative heaven in any other way than by use of the key provided in **Genesis**.

Suns and moons turning black as night or red as blood aren't beyond a common person's comprehension.

Earthquakes, followed by the sun, moon, and stars falling from heaven and being swapped for a new heaven and Earth isn't beyond the ability of a common person to understand.

The Earth quakes when common people have had it.

The Earth quakes when leaders inspire disgust instead of hope.

The Earth quakes when people wake up, when they realize they are no more than slaves, when they see that the liars they elected to lead them are the only ones enjoying the good lives promised for all.

The Earth quakes when people hear how wretched they sound as they snivel away . . . "we can't do a thing about it because the big boys got all the blah, blah, blah, yawn, yawn, yawn . . ."

The Earth quakes every time the people choose to give all the big, fat stars dangling up in their big, fat political-spiritual-economical heavens a warning shake none of them can ignore.

Not to worry, for most citizens of Earth are just as brassy and sassy as the stars twinkling away over their large, vacant heads, and almost all Earth's citizens are just as fraudulent and appalling as the dreamers and schemers they allow to lead them. Why else would they admire and envy the very crooks and crocks that are ripping them off?

Besides, if the people pulled their heads out of the dark place, they'd miss out on the profound upwelling of satisfaction they experience when mouthing moronic sentiments such as: "If you don't vote you got no right to complain."

Wake up, oh sleepers!

Who else has a right to complain but people who didn't vote?

All you have is your fantasies.

A new heaven and Earth is a new way of doing things.

Materially, it's the latest gang of goons to grab control.

Materially, it's the latest way for workers to lose a big hunk of their pay before they get any.

On a lofty level, it's a new relationship between Creator and created.

It's a condition like the one promised in the Bible: a New Age, an age in which truth and integrity prevail.

Good things for good people.

Heaven on Earth: an age only the Big Guy can provide.

There are no verses saying any human but Christ was ever offered an opportunity to ascend into the heavens. So sorry, but there are none.

That's why people who believe humans pass on to "Heaven" must find proof in verses where the word isn't seen, and even outside the Bible.

Hell

Sheol is an Hebrew word translated "hell".

Sheol can be seen in sixty-five old testament verses.

Sheol is translated with three English words in King James' Bible.
Sheol appears as . . .

"grave" (31 times) "hell" (31) "pit" (3).

Scholars proclaim ancient Hebrews used **sheol** to mean the hidden or unseen world, a world populated by "souls" of deceased humans.
Simply said, **sheol** (hell) is the "place" the dead "go".

Hell in the Old Testament

Deut 32:21 - They enticed me to jealousy with things that are not divine.
It was their vanity that provoked me to anger.
I, therefore, will provoke them to jealousy with a nation not yet formed.
I will entice them to anger by way of a foolish nation.
I will light a fire in my fury that will burn to the lowest hell (sheol).

Job 11:7 - Can you discover God through study?
Can you perceive the Almighty at all?
Since he is higher than heaven, how could you know?
Since he is deeper than hell, how could you understand?

26:6 - Hell is naked in his sight and destruction has no covering.

Ps 9:16 - Yahweh is known by the judgments he executes.
Evil ones will be snared by the works of their own hands.
Evil ones will be cast into hell with the rest who do not know God.

16:8 - I always have Yahweh before me. I keep him at my right hand and I cannot be moved. That is why my heart is glad. It is why I glory. That is why I am full of joy. And my flesh will rest in hope, also, since Yahweh will not leave my soul in hell, nor will he let his holy one see corruption.

18:3 - I cried out to Yahweh, the only one deserving of praise.
Yahweh saved me from my foes.
Death's sorrows surrounded me and worthless men caused me fear.
Hell's pangs circled me and Death's snares were laid out before me.
In my distress, I cried out to Yahweh.
In my distress, I cried out to my God.

55:12 - It was not an enemy who brought shame upon me.
If it was an enemy I could have handled it.
It was not one who hated me who raised himself against me.
If it was one who hated me I would have removed myself from him.
It was you instead, my equal, my guide, my friend.

15 - Let death sneak up on them all.
Let every last one of them go down alive into hell.
All of them live in wickedness and allow wickedness to exist among them.
As for me, I will call on my God and Yahweh will save me.

86:12 - I will adore you with all my heart, oh Yahweh, my God.
I will be devoted to your name through all time, for you showed me great
mercy when you saved my nephesh from the lowest hell.

116:3 - The sorrows of death were all around me.
Hell's cords snaked out toward me and all I knew was trouble and woe.
I called on Yahweh's name, saying, Oh Yahweh, please deliver me.

139:7 - Where will I hide from your ruach?
Where will I flee from your presence?
Were I to ascend into heaven, you would be there.
Were I to make my bed in hell, you would be there, too.

Prov 5:3 - A strange woman's lips ooze the sweetness of an honeycomb.
Her mouth is slick as oil, but what she delivers is bitter as wormwood.
Her mouth is sharp as a two-edged sword.
Her direction in life is leading her straight to hell.
Her ways are indiscernible and she alters them if you try to find out.
Her house sits beside the path heading to hell.
Her house sits beside the path leading to the place of the dead. **(7:27)**

9:13 - A selfish woman only knows how to make noise.
A selfish woman is shallow and she wants no more.
She plops herself down on her stoop as if it was a chief place in the city.
She cries out to passers-by.
A good number go on, but the ignorant turn right in.
Stolen water is sweet, she croons to those with no understanding.
Bread eaten in secret places is oh so tasty, she sighs.
Ignorant ones do not know only the dead go there.
Ignorant ones do not know all her guests end up in the depths of hell.

15:10 - Those who have forsaken the way hate instruction.
However, those who hate instruction will die.
Hell and devastation are wide open to Yahweh.
How much more visible are the hearts of humans?
Yahweh is well aware scorners abhor correction.
Yahweh is well aware scorners never request advice from the wise.

24 - The path leading to life from above is revealed to the wise.
It is revealed so they may exit the path leading to hell below.

23:13 - Do not fail to correct your child. Even if you beat him with a rod, he will not die. And if you do correct him with the rod, you may just save his nephesh from hell.

27:20 - Hell and destruction are never full.
Human eyes are never satisfied.

Is 5:13 - Why have my people become captives?
It is because my people are lacking knowledge.
It is because all their honorable men are starving.
It is because all their multitude has dried up of thirst.
Hell has grown large because of it.
Hell has opened its mouth beyond measure.
And all their respect, all their brilliance, all their pomp, and all those who support them will go down into it (sheol, hell, the grave, destruction).

14:9 - Hell beneath is roused to meet you.
Your tomb will welcome you when you come.
All the dead have been raised to greet you, all the leaders of Earth.
Hell has raised kings of nations and put them back on their thrones.
Are you frail like us, they will ask? Have you also become like us?
Your glory has gone down to the grave, along with the pitch of your pipes.
You are crawling with maggots and they are all around you, too.
You have fallen from heaven, oh Lucifer, son of the morning!
You poor departed king of Babylon, you are now cast to the ground.
You thought you could destabilize the nations.
You planned in your heart to rise up into heaven.
You said to yourself, I will set my throne far above the stars of God.
You said, I will rise up higher than the clouds.
You said, I will be like the Most High.
So sorry, but you will be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.
Those who see you will peer at you closely.
They will study you, asking, Is that the man who made the Earth shake?
They will wonder aloud, Is that the man who rocked kingdoms?

28:14 - Listen to the words of Yahweh, you contemptuous ones who reign over the people of Jerusalem. You claim you made a covenant with death. You claim you reached an agreement with hell. You claim the spoilers will pass on by and not harm you, but you have made lies your refuge, and now you are buried under your lies.
Yahweh declares, Just watch, for I will set up a foundation stone in Zion, a tried and proven stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation.

18 - Your covenant with death will not be allowed and your pact with hell will not stand. When the scourge comes, it will mow you down.

57:9 - You slunk in to the king bearing ointment.
You slathered yourself with perfume.
You sent your courtiers away and you debased yourself to hell.

Ezk 31:15 - The day he went down to the grave, I caused mourning.
I covered the deep for him.
I held back floods and vast waters were stilled.
I caused Lebanon to weep for him.
I caused all the trees of the field to faint because of him.
I caused all nations to shake at the sound of his fall.
On that same day, I hurled him down into hell to lie with all the rest who went into the pit. Many who were slain by the sword went down into hell together with him, those who had been his arm, the ones who were living in his shadow while they sojourned among the heathen.

32:18 - Son of man, wail for the many yet in Egypt, then cast them down.
Drive her and all the daughters of prominent nations down to the nether parts of the Earth. Cast them down. Let them go down with all the rest awaiting their plunge into the pit.
Do you presume you are better than them? Then go and join up with the rest of the uncircumcised, but you will die. You will all fall by the sword.
I will bring her and all that bunch forth and feed them to the sword.

27 - They will not lie down with the strong among the uncircumcised, the ones who sleep with the fallen, those that were such terrors when in the land of the living, those that went down into hell clutching their weapons of war, those with swords under their heads and evil on all their bones.

Amos 8:1 - I saw Yahweh standing above the altar. He spoke, saying, Go hammer on the arch over the door and cause the doorposts to shake, for I will be rid of the rest of them by the sword. Those who try to run will not escape, and those who try to flee will not reach safety.
Even if they dig down to hell, my hand will snatch them back.
Even if they rise up into heaven, from there I will hurl them down.

Jonah 2:1 - Jonah prayed to Yahweh, his God, from the belly of a fish.
He said, I cried out to Yahweh over my affliction and he heard me.
I cried out from the belly of hell and Yahweh heard my voice.

Hab 2:4 - His soul is not right inside him and he is raised up in pride.
But all who are justified will live because of their faith.
He is a proud and evil man, he drinks too much, and he will not stay home.
His cravings have grown as large as hell.
Like death, he would not be satisfied if he gathered all nations.
He would not be satisfied even if he piled up all their people.

There's nothing in the verses above to prove the always-popular belief "Hell" is a place of eternal fire, in which "souls" writhe in pain and sorrow. Plus, no horned heads were found. No pointy tails. Not a single pitchfork was mentioned. The verses above all indicate "hell" is the grave.

Since each verse where **sheol** was translated "hell" was examined, why not examine the thirty-one places **sheol** actually appeared as "grave"?

Gen 37:31 - They killed a kid from the goat herd. They dipped Joseph's coat in its blood. They took the coat of bold colors to their father later, and said, We found this. Is it your son's coat or not?
Jacob recognized the coat. He called out, It is my son's coat. Some evil beast has devoured him. I just know Joseph was torn to pieces.
Jacob rent his clothing and wrapped his loins in sackcloth.
He spent many days mourning his son, while his other sons and daughters tried to cheer him up. He refused to be placated, however. All he would say was, I will go down to my grave (sheol) in grief because of my son.
And Joseph's father wept for him.

42:38 - He said, My son will not go with you. His brother is already dead and he is all I have left of his mother. If evil befalls him during the trip it will bring my gray head down to the grave in sorrow.

44:27 - Your servant, my father, said, You know my wife left me with two sons. My first was taken from me and I am now convinced he was torn to pieces, for I have not seen him since. If you take my remaining son from me and some evil comes on him my gray head will be brought to the grave in sorrow. If we go back to your servant, our father, without that boy, it will come to pass, since his life is so closely wrapped up in the life of this son, as soon as he finds the boy is not with us he will die, and we will have sent the gray head of your servant, our father, to his grave in sorrow.

1 Sam 2:6 - Yahweh kills and Yahweh brings back to life.
Yahweh sends people down to the grave.
Yahweh raises them back up again, too.

1 Kng 2:5 - You know all that Joab, the son of Zeruiah, did to me.
You know he killed both captains of the hosts of Israel.
You know he shed the blood of war in a time of peace.
You know the belt around his waist and the shoes on his feet were soaked in the blood of war. Do anything you think is right, provided that his gray head does not go down to the grave in peace.

9 - Do not assume he is innocent. You are a wise man who knows what has to be done. Joab's gray head must go to the grave through violence.

Job 7:9 - In the same way clouds are consumed and vanish away, so also,
those who go into the grave will never come back up again.
They will never return to their homes.
The places where they were raised will never see them again.

14:10 - Humans die and fade away.
Honestly, humans breathe their last breath and die.
And where are they then?

12 - Humans lie down and do not rise. None of them will awake, and none
will rise from their sleep . . . not until the end of the age.
Oh God, will you please hide me in the grave?
Oh God, will you please keep me covered until your wrath has passed?

17:11 - My days have expired.
My plans have ended, along with all the desires of my heart.
If I wait, the grave will be my home and my bed will be laid in darkness.
And what about my hope? As for my hope, will I ever see it?

21:7 - Why do the wicked live to grow old?
Why do the wicked gain such strength and power?
Why are their children established in their sight?
Why do their offspring flourish before them?
Why are their houses free from fear?
All their days are spent in comfort.
They are at ease, but they will go down to their graves in a flash.
The reason is because they tell God to leave them alone.
The reason is because they have no desire to learn God's ways. (13)

24:19 - Drought and heat devour snow.
In the same way, the grave will devour sinners.
Wombs in which they were formed will forget them.
Worms will feed sweetly on them and they will never be remembered.

Ps 6:5 - In death, there is no remembrance of you.
In the grave, who will give you thanks?

30:3 - I cried out to you and you healed me.
Oh Yahweh, you brought my nephesh up from the grave.
You caused me to live when you stopped my descent into the pit.

31:13 - I have been slandered by all of them.
They have caused me to experience fear on every side.
They took counsel against me.
They agreed together to end my life, but I trusted in you, Yahweh.

So I told them you are my Elohim and my life is in your hands.
Save me from my enemies and rescue me from those who persecute me.
Let your face shine on your servant and save me because of your mercy.
Do not let me feel shame, Yahweh, for I always call on you.
Let wicked ones feel shame and let them be silent in their graves.

49:14 - They are laid in their graves like sheep.
Death will feed on them.
And the righteous will have dominion over them in the morning.
All their vigor will fade away in the grave, but God will save my nephesh.
God will save my nephesh from the power of the grave and receive me.

88:3 - My nephesh is full of misfortune.
My life draws near to the grave.
I am numbered with those who descend into the pit.
I am without power. I am free among the dead. I am as the slaughtered
that lay in their graves. I am like the ones you will remember no more. I
am like those who are cut off from your hand.

89:47 - Bear in mind how few days I have left.
Did you make humanity without a purpose?
Who among the living will not see death?
Who will be able to save his nephesh from the hand of the grave?

141:7 - Our bones are scattered at the mouth of the grave like someone
cut and split wood on the ground. But my eyes look toward you, and I am
confident in you, Yahweh, so please do not leave my nephesh alone.

Pr 1:10 - My son, if sinners try to entice you, do not go with them.
If they whisper, Come with us, and let us lay in wait for blood and lurk in
secret for innocent ones with no good intent. We will swallow them down
living like the grave and whole like people who are going down into the pit.
My son, do not walk that path with them.

30:15 - There are three things that are never satisfied.
There are actually four things that will never say, I have had enough.
They are the grave, a barren womb, Earth lacking water, and fire.
These things will never say, Stop, I have had enough.

Eccl 9:10 - Whatever your hand finds to do, do it with all your might.
Do it, for there is no work, no device, no awareness, and no wisdom in the
grave. There is nothing in the place to which you are heading.

Song 8:6 - Love is more powerful than death.
Jealousy is more cruel than the grave.

Is 14:11 - All your splendor has been brought down to the grave.

38:9 - Out of a letter written by Hezekiah, ruler of Judah, after he had recovered from an illness: When I began to consider my days could be at an end, I said, I will pass through the gates of the grave and not live out my remaining days. I will not see Yahweh, not the Yahweh who is coming, and not while I am in the land of the living. I am convinced I will not see him. And no one else alive in this age is going to see him, either.

17 - Instead of peace, I experienced much bitterness, but because you prized my nephesh, you saved it from the pit of corruption.
You saved it and cast all my sins behind you.

The grave cannot praise you and death cannot glorify you.
Those who go into the pit cannot hope for your truth.
The living, those yet alive, are the only ones who can praise you.

Ez 31:15 - I caused mourning on the day Pharaoh went to his grave.

Hos 13:14 - I will ransom them from the power of the grave.
I will redeem them from death.
I will be your plagues, oh Death.
I will be your destruction, oh Grave.

Finally, the three places **sheol** appears as "pit" . . .

Job 17:15 - So where is my hope?
Who is worried about my hope?
Will it go down into the pit (sheol) with me?
Will all my parts go down together into the dust?

Num 16:23 - Yahweh spoke to Moses, saying, I have something you must say to the people. Tell them to get as far away from the tents of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram as they can.

Moses rose and walked to the tents of Dathan and Abiram, the elders of Israel following him. He told the people, Get far away from the tents of these evil ones. Touch none of their stuff so you are not swallowed with them when they pay for their sins.

And the people moved well away from the lodgings of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram. They scattered in all directions.

Dathan and Abiram stepped out and stood in the doors of their tents, in company with their wives and sons, as well as all their little children.

Moses said, This is how you will know Yahweh sent me. And it is how you can be assured none of it came from my own mind: if these people die of some natural cause like other humans, or if they die in a manner common

to all humankind, you can be sure Yahweh did not send me, but if Yahweh causes a new thing, and the Earth opens up her mouth and swallows them and all their belongings, and they go down alive into the pit, you will know for a fact they upset Yahweh.

As soon as Moses stopped speaking, the ground was torn apart. Earth opened her mouth and swallowed down Korah's supporters, as well as their tents and all their possessions. Every one of them, with all that belonged to them, went into the pit alive and the Earth shut above them. Yahweh removed them from our assembly in this very way.

Once again, there's nothing in these verses to lead anybody in a right frame of mind (which eliminates most anti-christians) to think **sheol** is a place where unending conscious affliction is in full swing.

Once again, everywhere **sheol** is seen it is easily recognized to be the grave, the "place" to which all humans "go" at death.

Reverends get indignant.

"No!" they shout. "Oh no you don't! You stop right this minute!"

What is it, Rev? What offends you?

"You, you unholy creature," the Reverends hiss, "You pull verses from the Hebrew Testament, the Old Testament, the Dead Book, and you use them to knock down the words of our Dear Savior, and his dear apostles, words found in the New Testament, which is the Book of Life. Everyone will tell you the Bible says Hell is a place of eternal flame and burning, a place ready and waiting for sinners like you! All the proof a body should need is right there in the New Testament."

Please, Padre, will you lighten up? All a body has to do is inspect old and new testaments, both of them, and see if they agree on hell. Okay? C'mon, flip open that Bible. Hello?! Now where the hell did he go?

Unfortunately for false-christians, both the old and new testaments do agree on the nature of hell. They agree hell is the grave.

Hell in the New Testament

Translators trounced the new testament as they did the old, but in this case, they used the English word "hell" to translate three utterly different Greek words in the King James Bible.

These words are **hades**, **tartaroo**, and **gehenna**.

Hades will be considered first.

Hades is found eleven times in the new testament scrolls.

Hades appears once as "grave" and ten times as "hell".

Scholars agree Greeks used **hades** to signify "unseen world".

It's the very same thing **sheol** signified to the Hebrews.

Hades appears as "grave" below.

1 Cor 15:50 - People possessing a nature of flesh and blood cannot enter God's kingdom. Human beings are subject to corruption and they are not able to naturally evolve into immortal beings. Hear me and I will tell you a secret: we will not all sleep, but we will all be changed. In one moment, in the blink of an eye, after the last trumpet has sounded, the righteous dead will be awarded their incorruptible bodies, and they will be altered in every form, for their corruptible bodies will have put on incorruption, and their mortal beings will have put on immortality.
Only in this way can these words that were written ever become reality:
Death is now swallowed up by victory.
Oh Death, where is your sting?
Oh Grave, where is your victory?

The ten verses in which **hades** was translated "hell" are next.

Mt 11:23 - You, Capernaum, were raised up into the heavens, though now, you will be cast down to hell. If the mighty acts seen in you were seen in Sodom, Sodomites would still be around today. I assure you it will be far more tolerable on judgment day for those from Sodom than for you.

16:16 - Simon Peter said, You are the Christ, son of the living God. You were offered a boon, Simon Barjona, replied Jesus. It was not given to you through your flesh and blood. It was given by the Father which is in heaven. I will also tell you this: you are Peter (petros, the stone). The truth that I am the Christ, son of the living God, is the rock on which my church will be built, and the gates of hell will never prevail against it.

Lk 10:15 - Capernaum, the city raised up into heaven, will now be brought down to hell.

16:19 - Jesus told them this parable . . .
There was a certain rich man who always outfitted himself in purple.
The man loved to wear the finest of linen and he ate well every day.
There was also a certain beggar known as Lazarus.
This Lazarus was covered in wounds and laid at the rich man's gate.

The beggar died and was carried to Abraham's bosom by angels.
The rich man died, too, and was buried in hell.

Acts 2:25 - David spoke concerning him (the Christ) when he said, I have no doubt Yahweh stands with me and will remain at my right hand.
It is why I will never be shaken.
It is why my heart is glad.

It is why my tongue rejoices.
It is why my flesh will rest in hope.
Yahweh has promised he will not leave my psuche in hell.
Yahweh has promised he will not allow his holy one to see corruption.

30 - Because David was a prophet, he understood that God had promised with an oath that from the fruit of his loins, in the natural way, he would raise up an anointed one to occupy his throne. David saw this way before it happened and he was speaking of the resurrection of Christ. He meant the psuche of Christ would not stay in hell. He meant the flesh of Christ would not experience corruption. He meant the same Jesus God raised up, and we all watched it.

Rev 1:17 - When I saw him, I fell at his feet like a dead man.
He reached down, touched me with his right hand, and said, Have no fear.
I am the first and the last.
I was alive, then I died, but believe me, I am now alive for evermore.
I now have the keys to hell and death, too.

6:8 - When I looked, I saw a pale horse, and it was bearing a rider called Death. Hell followed along after him. These were given authority over a fourth of the Earth, to destroy with the sword, with hunger, with deadly plagues, and with beasts of the Earth.

20:12 - I saw the dead, small and great alike, standing before God.
I watched as the books were opened.
I saw that the book of life was also opened.
I saw the dead judged by their deeds from writings in the books.
I saw the sea give up its dead and Death and Hell also gave up their dead.
I saw them all judged according to the deeds they had done.
I saw Death and Hell cast into the lake of fire after.
It was the second death.
And those whose names were not found in the book of life were also cast into the lake of fire with them.

False-christians ignore or are too stunned to grasp that hell went into the lake of fire in the verse above. Have they ever been heard to preach their "Hell" will be thrown into itself at a time in the future?

Scholars think the word "hell" originated from a very old English term: **hel**, a word signifying "to cover" or "covering". A common practice in jolly old early England was to **hel**, for example, the potato crop.

Yes sire, dear friends, whenever spuds went all nasty in the field they were plowed under. They were "helled", so to speak.

In a not-so-similar way grew the word "helmet".

It's worn as a cover (**hel**) to protect the head-bone.

Another Greek word translated with the English "hell" is **tartaroo**.
Scholars and Historians presume ancient ones used the word to stand for the lowest of the low, the very bottom of the barrel.

Tartaroo is found once in all the Bible, in **Peter's** second letter where it was associated with the "new thing" that befell Korah, Dathan, Abiram and all their little children.

Do you remember the fate of these messengers of God?
Do you remember they tried to snatch the position given to Moses?
Do you remember that Earth opened her mouth and swallowed them?
Down they went, with all their junque and their wee ones, too.

Peter mentions them below.

2 Ptr 2:1 - Since there were false prophets among the people of Israel, do not go into shock if you find false teachers among you. Remember, God showed no mercy for the angels (malak, messengers) who sinned in Moses' day; rather, God cast them down into hell (tartaroo) and confined them in chains of darkness, reserved to the day of judgment.

Who else would Peter mean? Wrong! If you believe Peter was talking about real honest-to-God angels of God, check that verse again, and keep checking over and over and over until you wake up. If Peter was speaking about good old Satan and the merry mischief-makers, there's no cause to miss any sleep over them, for they are bound by chains in a black old hole until the day of their well-deserved destruction.

Gehenna is the third Greek word found in King James' Bible as "hell".
Gehenna, as seen next, was translated "hell" nine of the twelve places it appeared in the new testament. Renderers alone know why the English "hell-fire" was used as a stand-in for **gehenna** three other times.
All twelve appearances follow.

Mt 5:21 - You have heard it was said by those of old: You will not murder. You have heard that anybody who murders another will have a problem at judgment, but I tell you now that anybody who is mad at his brother with no good cause will be in huge trouble at the reckoning.
And anybody who passes judgment on his brother, saying, Raca (you were made for no good purpose) will be in danger of hell-fire (gehenna).

27 - You have heard it was said in the old days, Do not be caught away by adultery, but I am telling you this now: anyone who eyeballs a lady, intent on indulging in daydreams about her, has already engaged her in adultery. He has already had her in his heart.

If your right eye causes you to hesitate, pull it out and dispose of it, for it is better to lose one part of your body than for your entire body to be hurled into hell (gehenna).

If your right hand causes you to stumble, cut it off and cast it away, for it is better to lose one part of your body than for your entire body to be hurled into hell.

10:28 - Do not fear those who might be able to kill your body, but cannot destroy your psuche. I am advising you to fear the one who can end both your life and body in hell.

18:9 - If one of your eyes makes you falter, dig it out, then get rid of it, for it is better to go into life in the age having one eye than to have both eyes and be hurled into hell-fire.

23:15 - Woe to you, oh scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites! You cross sea and land alike to recruit one follower, and after you have him hooked you turn him into twice the child of hell as yourselves.

29 - Woe to you, oh you scribes and Pharisees, you hypocrites, since you decorate the tombs of the prophets, and you beautify the sepulchers of the righteous, saying, If we were living in our fathers' time we would not have been on their side when they spilled the blood of the prophets. By declaring it, you show that you yourselves came from the ones who killed the prophets. Go ahead and live down to the level of your ancestors. Do it, you serpents. Take me out, too, you spawn of vipers. Why do persons like you think you will ever escape damnation in hell?

Mk 9:43 - If your hand causes you to stumble, lop it off, for it is better to enter life disabled than to have two hands and be hurled into hell.

If your foot causes you to stumble, chop it off, for it is better to enter life as a cripple than to have both your feet and be hurled into hell, into a fire which will never be quenched.

If your eye causes you to stumble, gouge it out, for it is better to enter God's kingdom having one eye than to have both your eyes, but be hurled into hell-fire.

Lk 12:4 - Do not be worried about people who may kill your body, yet can do no more. I will tell you in advance who to worry about: worry about he who, after he has killed you, is authorized to destroy both your body and life in hell. I have given you good advice by telling you this is the one you should worry about.

Finally, this highly symbolic passage from **James** . . .

Jms 3:1 - My dear brothers, do not all desire to become masters. Those who become masters will be judged on a loftier level, since in most issues they offend the majority. A man who does not irritate others by word is the perfect man, one who is able to bridle his whole body.
When we place bits in the mouths of horses, we know they will let us rule their bodies. They will do whatever we want them to do.
We know, also, that a large ship, even though it is enormous, and requires mighty winds to drive it, can be steered anywhere the captain wishes, yet the captain needs but a small rudder to guide it.
The tongue is only a little member, though it boasts of great things.
The amount of damage one small fire can cause is known to you all.
The tongue is also a fire and it contains a complete world of wickedness.
That is the tongue among our membership.
The tongue defiles our whole body.
The tongue sets the very course of nature on fire.
The tongue itself is set ablaze by hell.
There is no kind of beast, bird, or reptile that humans cannot tame.
This even includes creatures that swim in water.
The tongue, however, has never been tamed by anyone.
The tongue is an undisciplined evil, full of deadly poison.
The tongue is used to worship God, our Father.
The tongue is used to condemn our fellow humans, too.
The tongue blames others, those also made in the likeness of Elohim.
The same mouth produces both blessing and curse.
This should not be, my brothers.

"Oh yeah? What about the unquenchable and everlasting fires?"
What unquenchable and everlasting fires?
"The ones in **Matthew** and **Luke**!"
Oh *those* unquenchable and everlasting fires . . .

Mt 3:11 - John said, In truth, I baptize with water unto repentance, but one who will come after me is much more important than myself, and I am not even worthy to carry his sandals.
He will baptize you with *hagios pneuma* and fire.
His hand will hold a fan.
He will completely purge his threshing-floor.
He will gather the wheat into his barn.
He will burn the chaff with unquenchable fire.

25:41 - He will say to those at his left, Move away from me, you who have been doomed. Go forth into the age-lasting conflagration, the fires made ready for the diabolos and his angels (*angelos*, messengers).

Lk 3:17 - He will thoroughly purge his threshing-floor.
He will gather the wheat into his barn.
He will burn the chaff with unquenchable fire.

Unless it's supposed Jesus is coming back to take up wheat farming in some presently non-productive corner of Kansas, the verses above should all be considered symbolic in nature.

The only literal concept these verses can possibly communicate is that wicked ones (the chaff) will be wholly consumed.

If Jesus is planning to singe chaff so it'll be around forever, the poor guy won't be farming long, but don't worry: if Jesus falls on his face as a "real" farmer, he can correspond with US Government agents, then apply to be one of *their* chosen few, the "false" farmers, the select bunch who bag big bucks for not planting crops.

Jesus can also score extra scratch not burning chaff he didn't plant.

Jesus can amass multimillions more buying and selling commodities on the computer he picks up with dough the US Government awards him for not planting crops or burning chaff.

Talk about heaven on Earth . . !

The word rendered "unquenchable" in the verses above is **asbestos**, a word that shows up four times in the whole Bible.

Scholars swear **asbestos** is seen in two verses that may or may not be a part of the original writings. Whether these verses are genuine or not, **asbestos** is usually rendered into English as "not quenched".

Greeks used **asbestos** to signify fire which couldn't be doused.

No evidence is to be had by which to decide if the **asbestos** fire was extinguished when its objective was accomplished, but after its subject was sizzled, reasons to keep it burning would be few.

The literal substance asbestos is associated with fire, but in another way. Literal asbestos was used in the recent past to prevent structures from being quickly consumed by fires. Indeed, it saved many lives, since it offered residents that flick of time they needed to flee the flames.

Unfortunately, asbestos poisoning has been announced as the primary cause in the cancer-related deaths of millions.

Won Some. Lost More.

What a perfect way to sum up humanity.

Is it possible to expose the area where the **asbestos** (unquenchable) fire mentioned by Jesus burned?

Scholars, Bone-diggers and Preachers will confess **Gehenna** is where the flames raged. They'll admit Ghi-Hinnom, a valley owned by Hinnom's son, was where the fires mentioned by Jesus could be found.

They'll admit it if they believe the Bible.

Jer 32:35 - They erected high places.
They sacrificed to Baal in the valley of the son of Hinnom.
They made their sons and daughters pass through fires to Molech.
This is a thing I never commanded them to do.
This is a thing that never even entered my mind. (7:35 / 19:5)

Those belonging to anti-religions call themselves by Christ's name.
Though they wear his name, they don't know the true Christ.
They wouldn't know him if he came up and introduced himself.
Therefore, they have nothing to do with the true God of the Bible.

"How can it be?"

The answer: it can be because the anti-christians will grudgingly agree their "God" is going to punish a majority of humans in fire forever.

The true God of the Bible is no charlatan, however.

The true God of the Bible is no liar.

The true God of the Bible stated above in **Jeremiah** that he wanted no part in the Jew's practice of burning their young people in fire.

Yahweh, the true God of the Bible, said it never came into his mind.

And what about the anti-god of the anti-christians?

"Fry them all," the anti-god rages.

"Fry everyone who does not please me."

"Fry them forever!"

Yahweh, the true God of the Bible, says he'll have nothing to do with a person who mocks him or his children.

Yahweh says he'll have nothing to do with a person who senses no need to learn his plan and work his purpose.

Yahweh just lets them travel their natural course until they die.

End Of The Line.

Last Stop.

Adios.

Bye.

Some lived well, but others did poorly.

You can't expect a God to be much more merciful, can you?

Yahweh, the real God, is bound by righteous rules.

Yahweh is bound by the truth.

Yahweh doesn't say one thing, then do another.

The anti-god of the anti-christians?

The anti-god sends kids to hell-fire, and grannys and grampas, too.

The anti-god sentences them all to fidget in flames forever.

That is hypocrisy.

That is injustice.

That is anti-christianity.

More on **Gehenna** . . .

Josh 15:8 - Their border went up beside the valley of the son of Hinnom and over to the south side of the city of the Jebusite (Jerusalem).

2 Chr 28:3 - King Ahaz burned incense in the valley of the son of Hinnom. Ahaz also burned his children in the fire.

33:6 - King Manasseh made his children pass through flames. He made them pass through the fire in the valley of Hinnom's son.

2 Kng 23:10 - King Josiah leveled Tophet, which was located in the valley of the seed of Hinnom, and after he did, they could no longer force their sons and daughters to pass through the fires of Molech.

Is 30:30 - Yahweh will cause the glory of his voice to be heard.
Yahweh will show the lightning-down of his arm.
Yahweh will show the fury of his rage in the flame of a devouring fire.
Yahweh will show his wrath with scattering, storm, and hailstones.

Tophet was ordained in the past.
Tophet was prepared by the great king.
Tophet was made deep and huge.
Tophet was made an high pyre, an abundance of wood.
Tophet, like a river of brimstone, will be ignited by Yahweh's breath.

Jer 7:32 - Yahweh says, You will see in a day to come it will not be called Tophet, or even the valley of the son of Hinnom. In that time, it is going to be renowned as the Valley of Slaughter, since they will bury in Tophet until there is no place left to bury. **(19:6)**

Tophet, the valley of the children of Hinnom, Gar-Hinnom, **gehenna** or "hell" (as it is mis-called in English) holds a significant spot in the history and thinking of Israel. Just hearing the name caused an average Hebrew child to quail with fear, much as hearing "Disneyland" makes today's child quiver with ecstasy. Thus, **Gehenna** and Disneyland are good examples of "feeling-by-attachment". When Jesus wanted to attach fear and disgust to the thought of being found inadequate at judgment, he related it with having one's dear old bones chunked into **Gehenna** . . .

Gehenna, Jerusalem's land-fill, where fires roared day and night.

Gehenna, where all kinds of grubs, grinders and gargoyles grunged at its girth, gorging themselves on goodies left by the retreating flames.

Gehenna, into which the cadavers of criminals, homeless ones, and all the other assorted underdogs were unceremoniously deposited at death.

Gehenna, the place which has the ability to burn - two thousand years later - anyone who says it was something other than what it actually was: the Jerusalem City Dump.

Gehenna, whose fires have long since flickered out.

Another example of "unquenchable" fire is seen below.

Jer 17:27 - If you refuse to hear me, and if you refuse to reverence the sabbath, and if you do not stop traffic from moving through the gates of Jerusalem during the sabbath, I will set a fire in the gates of Jerusalem that will never be quenched.

Since Yahweh's people decided not to listen, literal fires began raging in earnest about six hundred years before Christ.

The fires were out of fuel by **588 BC**, for there were no gates left at Jerusalem to burn. Actually, there was no city of Jerusalem left to have gates to be burned. That epoch of Jewish theocracy in which Jews were ruled by their own kings ground to an halt.

It was end of **olam**, end of **kosmos**, and the end of the flames.

If this fire was literally unquenchable, it would still be burning.

If the fire is still blazing away, present-day Jews must be lauded for containing it so well, especially with the eyes of a very nosy world always aimed in their direction.

If the "unquenchable" fire is still burning, one can only hope the Jews continue to contain it, since if God's fire was to ever break free, it would find this world a very dry place for sure.

It's impossible to ask a victim of any flame if he feels the fire which crisped him was one of the non-quenchable everlasting fires, or if it was just a regular everyday ordinary scorcher.

That's the whole point. Get it?

Is 34:8 - This is the day of Yahweh's vengeance.

This is the day the dispute over Zion will finally be settled.

The rivers will be turned into pitch and the dust into brimstone.

The soil will become as burning pitch and not be quenched night or day.

The smoke will rise up for eons and Zion will be wasted year after year.

There will be no one passing through Zion for ages.

Jer 7:17 - Do you not see what they are doing in the cities of Judah?

Do you not know what is happening in the streets of Jerusalem?

Children gather wood, fathers light fires and women knead dough to bake cakes devoted to the queen of heaven. And they pour drink offerings out to other elohim (gods) as if they are trying to provoke me.

Do they incite me to wrath, asks Yahweh?
Do they not provoke themselves instead?
Do they not bring about the confusion of their own faces?
Yahweh says, Observe, and you will see my spite and wrath poured out on this place, on humans, on animals, on all trees of the field, and fruit from the ground. My wrath will burn and burn and never be quenched.

21:11 - Regarding the house of Judah's king, say this: Listen to the word of Yahweh, oh house of David. Execute judgment every morning and save those who have been spoiled from the hand of their oppressors. Do it so my rage does not go out as fire and burn so hot nothing can quench it. I will send this against you because of all your evil deeds.
Can you not see I am opposed to you?
Can you not see I am only bringing the results of your own acts upon you?
Yahweh declares, I will kindle a fire in her forests which will consume all that is round and about her.

Asbestos and **aionion** fires of the new testament should be viewed the same way. These fires aren't to sustain rejected ones in perpetual agony. These fires are to destroy rejected ones forever. Why should God use a figure of fire, which in our experience eradicates totally, if he wanted to divulge that evil ones will be eternally preserved and punished? Wouldn't dry-ice and industrial-strength embalming fluid be better figures?

It's only people who are responsible to God, those who were given the opportunity to shape their circumstances, but didn't, who'll be done in by eternal (age-lasting) unquenchable fire.

And what if uninformed people get too close to the flames?

Oh well . . . wrong time, wrong place. Boo hoo.

Age-lasting torment, punishment, and destruction follow.

Mt 25:46 - They'll go away into everlasting punishment.
This means the effects of their punishment will last forever, not them.

Mk 3:29 - Those who blaspheme the hagios pneuma will never be forgiven.
This means they're in danger of eternal damnation.
This means the sentence will remain in effect eternally, not them.

2 Ths 1:9 - They'll be punished with everlasting annihilation.
Their destruction will come from the presence of the Lord.
This means don't try to find them because they're not around.
This also means they won't be back.

Heb 6:2 - The doctrine of eternal judgment.
This does not mean court stays in session, passing judgment forever.

2 Ptr 2:17 - They're wells lacking water, clouds that are blown around by every tempest, reserved for the mist of darkness from now on and ever. Which is a long, long time.

Jude 13 - They're raging waves of the sea, churning out their own guilt. They're wandering stars. The haze of nothingness is reserved for them age after age after age. This is another very lengthy time.

Rev 14:11 - Smoke from their torment will rise up for ever and ever. "Hey, did the Big Guy get EPA approval to burn them!?" (**19:3 / 21:10**)

As there were no verses saying the chosen will waft away to heaven at death, there are no verses stating the "immortal spirits" or "real entities" of lost ones will be hurled into the fiery furnace of "Hell", in which they'll fidget forever in flames.

"Why not?"

The answer: because the anti-christian "Hell" is an illusion.

Reverends prove the belief that "Hell" is a place where "evil ones" will be everlastingly tormented the way they prove their belief that "Heaven" is a place where "the righteous" will be forever full of bliss.

Do you wonder how Reverends prove these two beliefs?

Easy: Reverends use verses where the words "heaven" and "hell" aren't even seen. They use "evidence" found outside the Bible, too.

What the Reverends prove is they don't know the first thing about the Bible. The Bible derives from God so it's not necessary to turn to sources outside its pages for corroboration.

Those without a knowledge of truth aren't responsible.

They don't pass on to burning or bliss.

There's no reason to mourn them.

There's no reason to shed tears at their departure.

"Why not?"

The answer: because there's nothing left of them after death.

Those who die without a knowledge of the truth are gone.

"But doesn't the Bible talk about a resurrection of the dead?"

The answer: yes, it says the responsible dead will come back to life.

Resurrection

The Bible says the responsible dead aren't presently living, but they'll be brought back some day and undergo personal judgment. Because of it, Bible writers often compared death to sleeping.

Does anyone believe sleeping is the same as being awake, relishing the after-life in some happy hunting-ground?

If so, dream on.

Does anyone believe sleeping is the same as squirming about in misery and grief while a blazing inferno is blasting away around you for the rest of your immortal life?

If so, wow, how neat! Go for it. Have a really groovy day.

And hey . . . be sure to enjoy yourself while you can.

Job 7:21 - I will sleep in the dust.

You will look for me at dawn, but I will not be.

Behold me and hear me, oh Yahweh, my Elohim.

Please enlighten my eyes, lest I go sleep the sleep of death. (**Ps 13:3**)

Jn 11:11 - Jesus told them, Our friend, Lazarus, is sleeping, but I intend to wake him from his sleep.

His disciples said, Lord, he will be fine if he can sleep.

Jesus was talking about death, but his disciples thought he had spoken of gaining strength in sleep.

So Jesus said plainly, You boneheads, Lazarus is dead.

Acts 7:59 - They stoned Stephen as he called out, Lord Jesus, receive my pneuma; and, when he had fallen to his knees, he shouted again with a loud voice, saying, Lord, do not hold this sin against them.

After he said that, he went to sleep.

1 Ths 4:13 - I do not want you to be ignorant, brothers, concerning those who have gone to sleep. I do not want you to mourn as those with no hope. If we really believe Jesus died and rose again, we should also believe that God will bring those sleeping in Jesus with Jesus when he returns.

5:10 - Whether we wake or sleep, we will all live together with him.

Dan 12:2 - Many of those asleep in the dust of the Earth will awake.

2 Sam 7:12 - After you fulfill your days, when you are sleeping with your fathers, I will set up your seed after you. He will come out of your loins. His kingdom is the one I will establish.

1 Kng 2:10 - David slept with his fathers and was buried.

Mt 9:23 - Jesus went into the leader's house.

He found the mourners and a bunch of others causing a commotion.

He said, Take it easy, the kid is not dead, just sleeping.

And they laughed him to scorn.

After the people were put out, he entered the girl's room.
She rose when he took her hand and news of it sped through the land.

Job 14:1 - Those born of a woman have only a few days.
Those born of a woman have lives full of trouble.
They spring forth like a flower, but they are quickly cut down.
They fade away like a shadow.

12 - Humans lie down, but they do not rise or wake.
No human will be raised from sleep . . . not until the end of the age.
Oh God, that you would hide me in the grave.
Oh God, that you would put me away until your wrath has passed.
Oh God, that you would appoint a set time, then remember me.
I ask this: when humans die, can they live again?
I will wait all the days of my appointed time.
I will wait until my change comes.
I will answer when you call.
I will answer and you will come for me, the labor of your hand.

As seen above, there's hope in the sleep of a person that dies with an awareness of Yahweh's plan and purpose because the person will wake up. It's plain why anti-christians shun the idea of a bodily resurrection, even though it's seen throughout the scrolls. They avoid it because it's so out of place beside their favorite delusion, the one they blabber about every day and night: the incorrect idea that both saints and sinners are judged and rewarded at death.

The Bible has nothing to say about this fantasy.

The Bible paints pictures completely at odds with scenarios scribbled by anti-christian Scholars.

The pictures Bible writers painted show responsible ones being raised when the real Jesus comes back.

The pictures Bible writers painted show responsible ones rewarded or damned by way of personal judgment at Christ's return, never before.

Mt 16:27 - The son of man will return again in his Father's glory, with all his angels. Then he will reward believers according to their works.

Jn 5:21 - The Father raises the dead and gives them new life.
The son will also give new life to the ones he favors.
The Father judges no one, but he has committed all judgment to the son.

26 - As the Father has life in himself, so too, he has given his son a right to possess life in himself. He has also given the son authority to conduct a judgment. Do not be amazed by this, for an hour is coming when all the responsible ones who sleep in their graves will hear my voice and rise.

Everyone who did well will experience a resurrection to life.
Everyone who did poorly will experience a resurrection to damnation.

Lk 14:12 - If you want to have a dinner or supper, do not just invite good friends, siblings, relatives or wealthy neighbors, for they will only return the favor and you will break even. When you ask guests to a feast, invite the hungry, maimed, lame, and blind. Since they cannot pay you back, you will have to be repaid . . . at the resurrection of the just.

It's not possible to see how so many people miss something seen in all kinds of scrolls from **Genesis** to **Revelation**.

There are those who'd ask, "What thing?"

This thing: there really will be a resurrection of the dead.

Rom 14:9 - The prime reason Christ died, rose, and received immortality was so he could become Lord of both the dead and living.

1 Cor 15:1 - I preach the gospel, the word that was already preached to you, the same gospel you already accepted, and the same gospel that will save you - if you continue standing firm and remember all that you heard so you do not end up having believed in vain.

I gave you the first teaching that was given to me.
It is that Christ died for our sins, as it was written in scripture.
He was buried and raised on the third day, again in line with scriptures.
Also, I teach he was seen by Peter first, and by the twelve, then by five hundred or more of our brethren on one occasion, with many of them yet living, though a few have fallen asleep.
After that, he was seen by James and the rest of the apostles.
And last, he was seen by me.

11 - No matter how you heard, this is what you believed.
In view of the fact you teach that Christ was raised from the dead, why is it some among you say there is no resurrection of the dead?
If there is no resurrection of the dead, Christ could not have risen.
If Christ did not rise, your teaching is vain.
If Christ did not rise, your faith is also vain, and we are confirmed to be false witnesses of God because we say God raised Christ, whom he could not have raised if the dead do not rise.
If the dead do not rise, Christ did not rise.
If Christ did not rise, your faith lacks purpose.
If Christ did not rise, you are still in your sins.
If Christ did not rise, those who are sleeping in Christ are truly dead.
Is it only while we are living that we have hope through Christ?
If so, are we not the most pathetic ones of all?

Christ, however, was raised from the dead, and through his resurrection, he became a first-fruit of all who are sleeping. Since death came by way of a man, it is only proper that resurrection of dead ones come by way of a man, too.

All those in Adam have died, but the ones who believed into Christ will be brought back to life. They will come back in a proper order, though, with Christ being raised as a first-fruit and those who belong to Christ raised at his return.

Above, **Paul** speaks of the death and resurrection of Christ.

He says it's at the heart of Bible salvation.

He says it's the point on which pivots the faith of living believers.

He says it's the assurance of new life for those asleep in Christ.

The death and resurrection of God's son wasn't a sham.

The death and resurrection of God's son were real events.

They were ultra-real to Jesus, the one from Nazareth.

They're also real to any who want to live according to the truth.

The faith Jesus had in his Father's promise saved him.

The absolute trust Jesus had in his God freed him from the grave.

Heb 5:7 - He offered prayers and petitions, with great crying and tears, to the only one who could save him from death, and he was heard because he feared.

Jesus foretold his own death and resurrection.

Jesus used old testament verses to back him up.

Mt 16:22 - From then on, Jesus began telling his disciples that he had to go to Jerusalem, where he would endure great affliction from the elders, chief priests, and scribes. He said they would kill him, but that he would be brought back to life on the third day.

17:9 - When they were coming down the mountain, Jesus cautioned them, saying, Do not talk about this vision. Tell nobody until the son of man has been raised from the dead.

22 - While they were staying in Galilee, Jesus told them, The son of man will be turned over to the authorities and they will kill him, but he will be raised up again in three days.

When he said it, the disciples were sad.

Jn 2:13 - Since the Jewish passover was close, Jesus went to Jerusalem. He entered the temple, where he saw them selling oxen, sheep and doves. He saw moneychangers sitting in there, too.

He made a whip from small cords and drove them all out of the temple.
He also drove out their sheep and oxen.
He overturned the moneychanger's tables and scattered their coins.
He told the ones who sold doves, Get those birds out of here.
He told them, Do not turn my Father's house into a place of business.

18 - The Jews asked, What sign can you show proving you have a right to act like this?

Jesus said, Destroy this temple and I will raise it up in three days.
Rebuffing him, the Jews said, It took more than forty-six years to build the temple, and you say you can raise it back up in three days?
Jesus, however, was speaking about the temple of his body.
After Jesus was raised from the dead, his disciples recalled he had said this to the Jews and they believed the scrolls, as well as Jesus' words.

Lk 18:31 - Jesus pulled the twelve aside to warn them. He said, Be wary, since we are going up to Jerusalem now so the words the prophets wrote about the son of man can be finished. He will be handed over to gentiles, who will insult him, treat him terribly, spit on him, whip him, and slay him. He will be raised three days later, however.
His apostles understood nothing he told them, for it was being hidden.
His apostles had no idea at all what he was talking about.

Mt 26:31 - Jesus said, You will all consider me an offense tonight, for it is written: If I slay the shepherd, the sheep in his flock will all run away. I tell you now, though, I will meet you in Galilee when I have risen.

Lk 24:1 - Just after dawn on the first day of the week, they reached his grave. They brought spices they had prepared before passover. Certain others also came with them. When they arrived there, they could all see the stone was rolled away from the opening.
They entered and discovered the Lord Jesus' body was not there.
They paused, perplexed at what might have happened.
Then two men with bright clothing were standing next to them.
They were all afraid and they bowed with their faces to the ground.
The men asked, Why do you look for one who is alive among the dead?
The Lord is not here, they said. He has risen. Can you not recall what he told you while you were all together in Galilee? Can you not recall he said that the son of man would be turned over to wicked men and be crucified, then he would rise up again on the third day?
The disciples remembered his words as soon as they heard.

13 - Two of them were going that same day to a village known as Emmaus. As they talked together about that which had happened, trying to locate any logic at all in it, Jesus himself drew near and joined them.

Because their eyes were being held, they did not recognize him.
Jesus said, What are you talking about? What makes you so sad?
One, named Cleopas, said, Have you just now come to Jerusalem?
The other asked, Do you know what went on there the last few days?
Jesus replied, So what went on?
One asked him, Have you not heard about Jesus, the Nazarean, a mighty prophet in word and action before God and the people? Do you not know the chief priests and leaders sentenced him to death and crucified him? And we all thought he was the one who would redeem Israel.
Jesus said, Why are you fools so slow of heart to believe everything the prophets wrote? Is it not right for the Christ to suffer all these things before entering into his glory?
He began with Moses and went on to the prophets, showing them all that was written in scripture about him. (25)

31 - After their eyes were opened, they recognized it was Jesus, but he quickly vanished from their sight.
And they asked each other, Did our hearts not burn inside us as he spoke with us on the path while he opened the scriptures?
Rising up that very moment, they started back to Jerusalem.
As soon as they reached the room where the eleven had gotten together, they began telling them what . . . and Jesus was suddenly there.
He asked, Why are you so troubled?
He asked, Why do you let such doubts fill your hearts?
Are these not the very matters I warned you about when I was yet with you? Things had to happen this way so all that was written regarding me in the law of Moses and the prophets could be fulfilled.
He opened their minds after that and they understood the scriptures.
He said, This is the way it was written and this is why it was appropriate for Christ to suffer, die, and be raised from the dead the third day.
And it is why repentance and forgiveness of sins can now be extended in his name to every nation starting at Jerusalem. You have been allocated positions as official witnesses of all these things. (44)

Jn 21:14 - It was the third time Jesus showed his disciples that he had been raised from the dead.

According to **Luke**, Jesus opened scripture to Cleopas and the others, allowing them to see things in words written concerning the Christ. They saw things in the writings of **Moses** and the **Prophets**, and also, they saw things in **Psalms** - which pretty much covered the old testament, the only "scriptures" available to them at the time, hey?

Armed with an understanding of these scriptures, and empowered by *hagios pneuma* of God, early believers went forth to illuminate the world for their God, their kingdom, and their Christ.

A first principle of this "new" religion was the assuredness of a bodily resurrection. Early believers were convinced this was true, for many had witnessed the resurrection of Christ.

It was the risen Christ who'd taught them.

Does the belief of someone alive hundreds of years after the death of the last eyewitness of Christ's resurrection carry much weight?

Why would it? He wasn't there. How could he know?

Far more important: does the belief of someone alive today (2002 AD) twenty centuries after Christ carry any weight at all?

Anti-christians seem to believe it does, but anti-christians are inclined to invite in anybody or anything that gives their deceived hearts a chance to feel good about themselves.

An indication of how essential it was for a leader in the early ekklesias (assemblies of called-out ones) to have witnessed Christ's resurrection is seen in the requirements for a successor to Judas, the traitor.

Acts 1:21 - From the men who have been with us the whole time the Lord Jesus was here, starting with John's baptism, to the day Jesus was taken up from us, we must appoint someone who witnessed his resurrection.

Apostles and other instructors taught from the old testament.

Followers of the established view didn't welcome the preaching of the uncouth fisher-folk from Galilee; and they felt bewildered that the early believers had ultra-human powers. Also, it was getting totally intolerable that more and more Jews flocked to hear. Capping it off, the louts doing the teaching were so cheeky and underdone that they claimed the scrolls God put in the hands of priests (according to those same priests) showed their vile doctrine was true.

Acts 3:15 - You denied the holy and just one.

You asked that a murderer be released to you instead.

You killed the Prince of life, but our God raised him from the dead.

You killed our Prince and we all saw it.

4:10 - Jesus Christ, from Nazareth . . . the one you crucified.

Jesus Christ, from Nazareth . . . the one God raised from the dead.

13:26 - Men and brothers, seed of Abraham's stock, with the ones among you who worship God, this word of salvation is now being delivered to you. Those who live in Jerusalem, along with their elders, because they had no awareness of Jesus, or of the words of the prophets read to them on the sabbath day, fulfilled the very same words by condemning him; and, after everything written about him was fulfilled, he was brought down from his

cross and laid in a tomb, but our God raised him from the dead. When all that was done, he was seen over several days by those who made the trip to Jerusalem with him, those who are now his witnesses to the people. We bring you good news and we bring it in hopes the promise made to our fathers will be manifest by God in us, our fathers' heirs. We bring it in hopes you will see God raised up Jesus, as it was written in the second Psalm: You are my son. I have begotten you today. Regarding that God raised him so he did not see corruption, we know it is written like this: I will give you the sure mercies of David. In another Psalm, he said, You will not permit your holy one to experience corruption. David, when he had served his own generation according to God's will, fell asleep, was laid with his fathers, then experienced corruption, but Jesus, who God raised up again, saw no corruption.

23:1 - Paul faced the council with a serious expression on his face. Men and brothers, he told them, I have lived in all good conscience in the presence of God to this very day. Ananias, the high priest, instructed the man standing next to Paul to slap him across the face. Paul said, May God slap you, you white-washed wall. You sit there stating you are judging me by the law, yet you ask this man to smack me. Paul also said, This in itself is not according to the law. Some of those who stood next to Paul whispered, Do you not know you are insulting the high priest of God? Paul said, Brothers, I did not realize he was the high priest, for scripture tells us: You should not disrespect the ruler of your people.

6 - When Paul saw part of the assembly was Sadducee, and the other was Pharisee, he shouted, Men and brothers, I am a Pharisee. I am the son of a Pharisee, too. And I am being questioned today because of my hope for a resurrection of the dead. When he said it, a dispute flared between the scribes who sided with the Pharisees and the scribes backing the Sadducees. Because of this, those in the throng were divided, being Sadducees say there is no resurrection, no angels, and no pneuma, but Pharisees accept it all. A loud roar went up, and the scribes who supported the Pharisees surged forward. They shouted, We see no evil in that man. If a pneuma or angel spoke to him, let us be sure we are not fighting God. Dissension became so heated, the chief officer, fearing Paul was going to be ripped into pieces by the mob, ordered the soldiers to extract Paul by force if necessary and bring him to the castle.

24:10 - When the governor told Paul to talk, he said, I am aware you have administered the nation for many years, and I am happy to defend myself.

I will commence by saying it has been twelve days since I first arrived at Jerusalem to worship. Nobody has seen me confronting any person in the temple, and I have not tried to agitate people in any of the synagogues or in any other areas of the city. As a result, they have no evidence proving any of the things of which they have accused me.

I will admit to you, though, that I do worship the God of our fathers in a way which they call heresy. I trust everything written in the law and the prophets. And I have an hope within me that there will be a resurrection of the dead, of both the just and unjust together.

Order them to disclose what wrong they find in me while we are standing here before your council. All they could have possibly have against me is that I walked among them, shouting, It is concerning the resurrection of the dead I have been called in question today.

26:8 - Why do you believe it is implausible God would raise the dead?

22 - I am appearing at this trial because I speak to both small and great, and also, I say only what the prophets and Moses said would occur, which is that Christ would suffer torments, he would be the first to come back from the dead, and he would enlighten our people, as well as the gentiles.

Rom 14:7 - No one among us lives for himself.

No one among us dies for himself.

While we live, we live for the Lord.

When we die, we die for the Lord.

Whether we live or die, we still belong to our Lord.

After Christ died and rose, he was given immortality, thereby becoming the Lord of dead and living believers alike.

Col 1:18 - Christ is the head of the body. He is head of the church, too.

He is the beginning, and also, the first one to be born from the dead.

In that way, he receives the maximum honor in all things, for the Father is pleased to have all his fullness manifest in his son.

2 Tim 2:8 - As far as my gospel, I hope you remember that Jesus Christ, who is David's seed, was raised from the dead.

15 - Study to show God has approved of you, a laborer with no need to be ashamed, one with the ability to correctly divide the word of truth.

Live apart from all vulgar and vain babblers, since they will engage in even further blasphemy and their lies will eat away as a cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are just like these because all they do concerning the truth is to spread error when they claim the resurrection has already happened. All they accomplish by that is to overturn the faith of others.

Rev 1:5 - Jesus Christ, the faithful witness.
Jesus Christ, the first to be born from the dead.
Jesus Christ, Lord of the kings of Earth.

Mt 27:53 - After calling out again with a loud voice, Jesus died.
The veil in the temple ripped from top to bottom.
An earthquake broke rocks to pieces.
Graves were torn open, and many bodies of saints sleeping in them began to experience resurrection. After Jesus had been raised, they came out of their graves, entered the holy city, and appeared to many.

People in old testament times knew about resurrection.

1 Sam 2:6 - Yahweh kills and Yahweh makes alive.
Yahweh hurls people down to the grave.
Yahweh raises people back up again, too.

1 Kng 17:17 - The son of the woman, the mistress of the house, grew ill with a sickness so severe it drove his neshamah (breath) from him.
The woman asked Elijah, What have I done to you, you man of God? Are you here to bring my sin to remembrance. Did you come to kill my son?
Elijah said, Bring your son to me.
Elijah removed him from her bosom, then hoisted him up into the loft in which he slept. Once there, he laid him on his own bed and called out to Yahweh: Oh Yahweh, my God, he prayed, bring no evil on this widow with whom I am staying. Please do not let her son die.

After he stretched himself out above the boy three times, he called out to Yahweh once more, and said, Oh Yahweh, my God, will you please allow the boy's nephesh to return to him again?
Yahweh paid heed to Elijah's petition and the nephesh of that young man came back into him and caused him to revive.

Elijah lowered the child from the loft down into the house.
He returned the boy to his mother, saying, Look, your son is alive.
She told him, Because of that, now I really believe you are one of God's holy men. And I also believe Yahweh's words in your mouth are true.

2 Kng 4:27 - She finally caught up with Elisha near the top of the hill.
She grabbed Elisha by the ankle and held on.
Gehazi moved over, intending to pull her off, but the man of God said to him, Let her be, since her nephesh aches inside her. Yahweh has hidden the matter and decided not to reveal it to me.
The woman asked Elisha, Did I appeal to you for a son? You must surely recall I begged you to tell me the truth instead.

Elisha told Gehazi, Bind up your loins. Grab my staff in your hand and get going. Do not stop to greet anyone you might meet. If anyone greets you, do not even reply to him. As soon as you get to that woman's house, place my staff on the child's face.

For as long as Yahweh lives and for as long as your nephesh is also alive, I am staying right here beside you, the boy's mother told Elisha. So Elisha rose and went with her.

Gehazi continued on before them. He placed the staff on the face of the child, but the child did not speak, nor did he even appear to hear. Gehazi went out to meet Elisha, and said, The child did not wake. Elisha went into the house. He saw the child was dead and lay on his bed. He entered the room, closed the door on the other two, and he prayed to Yahweh. Elisha rose after this and he went over and laid down on the boy. He placed his mouth on the child's mouth, his eyes on the child's eyes and his hands on the child's hands. And after he stretched himself out above the boy, the boy's flesh began to warm. Elisha stood, then he walked back and forth all through the house. He returned to the child and stretched himself out over him again. When he did it, the boy sneezed seven times and opened his eyes.

Elisha called Gehazi, saying, Get the Shunammite.

Gehazi went for the woman.

When she entered the room, Elisha said, Here is your son.

The woman fell at his feet, bowing herself to the ground.

Then she gathered her son into her arms and left.

2 Kng 13:20 - When Elisha died, he was buried. At the start of a certain new year, bands of Moabites began to invade the land. Once, as a cluster of men was burying a dead man, they spotted a bunch of raiders and they dropped the dead body into the nearest grave, which just happened to be Elisha's grave; and, when the man plummeted down onto Elisha's bones, he came back to life. After a while, he got to his feet.

Ps 16:8 - I always keep Yahweh before me.

I will never be shaken because Yahweh is always at my right hand.

It is why my heart is glad.

It is why I am rapt and rejoice.

My flesh will also rest in hope, for you will not leave my nephesh in hell.

You will not let your holy one see corruption.

You will lead me in the way of life.

Your presence will be filled with joy.

Your right hand will be filled with perpetual pleasure.

A new testament commentary on the last passage follows.

Acts 2:29 - Men and brothers, let me talk to you clearly about David, and about how our patriarch is both dead and buried. Allow me to remind you his sepulcher is with us this day. Since David was a prophet, he knew God had promised him that from the fruit of his loins, according to the way of flesh, he would raise up a Christ (an anointed one) to sit on his throne. David knew this beforehand and he was foretelling Christ's resurrection. David meant his (Christ's) psuche (soul, life) would not be left in hell. David meant his (Christ's) flesh (body) would not suffer corruption. David spoke of Jesus, the one God raised up, and we are all his witnesses.

Ex 3:2 - Yahweh's angel appeared to Moses in the flames of a fire. Yahweh's angel appeared to Moses in the midst of a burning bush. Moses looked and he saw a bush ablaze with fire. He also saw the bush was burning, but not being consumed. He thought, I will turn aside and get a closer look at this strange sight. He thought, I must find out why the bush has not burned up. Yahweh saw Moses had turned from the path to look. Yahweh spoke to him from within the bush, saying, Hey, Moses. Moses said, Here I am.

Yahweh told Moses, Come no closer until you have removed your shoes. Yahweh also said, You are now standing on hallowed ground. I am the God of your ancestors. I am the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Moses hid his face because he was afraid to look at God.

Jesus used the passage above from the book of **Exodus** to display the ignorance of Jewish Scholars concerning resurrection.

Lk 20:27 - Some Sadducees from a sect that denies resurrection walked up, and said, Master, Moses wrote, If a man's brother dies, and he leaves a wife but no children, his brother has to take the wife and raise seed to his brother. Say, for instance, there were seven brothers, and the first brother died, leaving behind a wife, but no children, then the second had her as his wife, but he died with no children, also, and the third took her, and in the same way, all the remaining seven had her after. They all died without fathering a child between them and the woman herself died last. Now, in this resurrection which you taught us about, what brother is the woman's husband, being all seven of them had her for a wife? Jesus said, The children of this age marry and are given in marriage. The ones judged worthy enough to enter that age by the resurrection of the dead will not marry. Those who enter that age will not be given away in marriage, either. They will die no more because they will be equal to the angels. They will be God's children because they were born through resurrection.

How did Moses show the dead are raised up when he was at the bush?
He said Yahweh was the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.
He said Yahweh is not a God of the dead, but a God of the living.
He said it because all those in Yahweh will be brought back to life.
Oh master, you have answered well, the scribes told Jesus.
After that, though, they did not ask him any more questions.

Heb 11:13 - These all died in faith.
They did not receive the promises, but they saw them afar off.
They were convinced by them and embraced them.
They professed to be nothing but strangers and pilgrims on Earth.
Their women were given dead ones raised back to life.
They were tortured, but they refused to accept deliverance.
They refused because they sought a better salvation. (35)
They did not receive what was promised them.
They were given good records for their faith instead, since God promised this better thing to us, assuring that none of them will become perfect if the rest of us are not there with them. (39)

Jesus raised the dead.

Lk 7:12 - When he reached the gate of the city, he saw a dead man being carried out, a man who had been the only son of a widow.
Many people from the city were with the woman.
Do not cry, the Lord said as he saw her, for he felt pity toward her.
When he reached out and touched the bier, those carrying the dead man came to a stop, and Jesus said, Young man, I tell you to rise.
The dead man sat up, started to talk, and Jesus gave him to his mother.
The people were all amazed and they glorified God.
They shouted, A great prophet has appeared among us.
They shouted, God has visited his people.

Mt 11:2 - While in prison, John was told of the miracles of Christ and he sent two of his disciples to ask Jesus, Are you the one who was coming or should we seek another?
Jesus said, Go tell John what you have heard and witnessed: tell him that the blind see, the lame walk, lepers are purified, the deaf hear, the dead are raised and the meek have good news preached to them. Remind John that only those who are not ashamed of me will be blessed.

Mk 5:21 - The boat carried Jesus over to the other bank, where a great crowd was assembled on shore waiting for him.
Jesus noticed Jairus, the leader of the synagogue, among them.
As soon as Jairus saw Jesus, he threw himself at Jesus' feet, calling out to him, My little daughter is near death. I beg you, please come. All you

have to do is lay your hands on her and she will recover.
Right then, a number of those who lived in the home of the leader of the synagogue showed up, and said, Your daughter is dead so you now have no more reason to bother the Master.
When Jesus heard the words, he said to the leader of the synagogue, Do not be afraid, just believe. (35)

Jesus allowed no one to follow him other than Peter, James and John, his brother. When they came to the house of the leader of the synagogue, a scene of great confusion presented itself, with much weeping and wailing. When he walked into the house, Jesus asked those inside, Why the fuss? Why are you crying? She is not dead. She is just sleeping.
And they all laughed him to scorn.
But when the crowd was put out, he took the girl's father and mother, as well as the others who had come with him, into the room in which the girl was laid.
Jesus reached out for the girl's hand, saying, Talitha, cumi, which means, Young lady, I tell you to rise.
And the girl, who was around twelve years old, quickly rose from the bed and started to walk about the room.
And all who saw it were amazed beyond belief.

Jn 11:20 - Martha heard Jesus was coming and she immediately went out to greet him. She said, Lord, if you were here my brother would not have died, but I know even now whatever you ask from God will be done.
Your brother will rise again, Jesus told her.
Martha replied, I know he will rise in the resurrection on the last day.
I am the resurrection and the life, said Jesus. All those who believe into me, even if they die, will eventually receive life; and all those who believe into me and are alive on the last day will never die. Do you believe what I am telling you?
She said, Yes, Lord, I believe you are Christ, the son of God, the one who scripture predicted would appear in the kosmos.

32 - Mary, Martha's sister, came after. When she saw Jesus, she fell at his feet and said, Lord, if you were here my brother would not have died. When Jesus saw Mary crying, as well as the Jews who had come with her also crying, he groaned in his pneuma and became troubled.
He asked, Where did you bury him?
When they answered, Lord, come and see, Jesus wept.
Some of the Jews said, See how much he loved Lazarus.
Others wondered out loud, How is it the man who opened the eyes of the blind could not have kept Lazarus from dying?
As he came to the grave, Jesus groaned again inside himself when he saw Lazarus was laid in a cave with a stone covering the opening.

Roll the stone away, Jesus told them.

Martha, Lazarus' sister, said, Lord, he stinks by now because he has been dead more than four days.

Martha, said Jesus, did I not promise you would see God's glory?

He also said, All you have to do is believe.

When they had moved the rock away from the mouth of the cave in which Lazarus was placed, Jesus raised his eyes, then cried, My Father, I thank you for hearing me. I know you always hear me. I said this for those who are with me, in order that they might believe you sent me.

In a loud voice, Jesus called, Lazarus, get out here!

And Lazarus, who had been dead, came out, swathed from his head to his foot in a winding-sheet, his face covered by a cloth.

Unwrap him and turn him loose, said Jesus.

Many Jews who had come to mourn along with Mary, those who saw what Jesus had done, believed into him after that.

Anyone questioning why Jesus, who likely knew he could bring Lazarus back to life, was saddened by the ordeal, has only to picture what effect raising Lazarus would have on the people, let alone their leaders. Raising Lazarus, who'd been dead for four days, and upon whose body corruption was gnawing, took Jesus far past the line of no return. Jesus was aware what raising Lazarus would mean: it would mean the end of his life. That is the more probable reason Jesus groaned, rather than grief in Lazarus' demise and how the people who loved him were dealing with it.

What Jesus anticipated came about in Bethany after he showed up at a "Welcome Back Lazarus!" party, the co-guest of honor beside him.

Jn 12:1 - Six days before the passover, Jesus arrived in Bethany, which was the hometown of Lazarus, the one who was dead, but who was raised from death by Jesus. A banquet was being given for Jesus, with Martha serving, and Lazarus sitting right there at the table next to Jesus. Many Jews heard he was there and they had not only come hoping to see Jesus, but to see Lazarus, too, who Jesus had raised from the dead. Due to that, the chief priests all agreed to kill Lazarus along with Jesus, for he was why many Jews had left them and believed into Jesus. (9)

Talk about crossing the line of no return!

The apostles raised the dead, too.

Acts 9:36 - A certain disciple named Tabitha was also known as Dorcas. She lived in Joppa and was a woman full of good works and kind acts. Over a certain period of time, she became sick and died. After they attended to her, they laid her in an upper chamber. Because Lydda was close to Joppa, and because the disciples heard Peter was there, they sent two men to beg him to return with them right away.

So Peter rose to go back with them.
He was led to an upper chamber when he got there, and the widows stood beside him, crying. They showed him some coats and other garments that Dorcas had made while she was still alive.

Peter ran them all out of the room and kneeled down.
He turned himself to the body, and said, Tabitha, arise.
When Tabitha opened her eyes, she saw Peter and sat up.
Peter stuck out his hand and pulled her off the bed.
When all the saints and widows came, Peter presented her to them alive.
And news of it went through all Joppa, causing many to accept the Lord.

20:7 - Paul instructed the disciples on the first day of the week. He did it when they met together to break bread. Because he planned to depart early the next morning, he kept talking long after midnight.
Even though there was much light in the upper chamber where they were meeting, a certain young man called Eutychus began to nod off.
Paul continued rambling on and Eutychus slumped over fast asleep.
Before long, he fell out a window on the third floor.

By the time they reached him, he was dead.
Paul clambered down and flopped on the boy.
He hugged him, and said, Not to worry, his life is still in him.
When they had all climbed up again, they broke bread and ate.
After that, Paul talked right up to dawn, then he left.
And because Eutychus was still alive, the disciples were all comforted.

The Bible also speaks of a future resurrection.
Those who rise then will rise for a different reason.

Job 14:14 - When humans die, do they live again?
Each day of my appointed time I will wait for my change to come.
You will call, and I will answer.
You will have a desire for me, the work of your hands.

19:25 - I know my redeemer lives.
I know he will stand on the Earth in the last days.
I know I will see him in the flesh, though my skin and body decay.
I know I will look upon him for myself.
I know I will see him with my own eyes, not the eyes of another.

Ps 17:15 - As for me, I will look upon your face in righteousness.
As for me, I will be satisfied when I wake with your likeness.

49:15 - God will deliver my soul from the power of the grave.

71:20 - You sent great and sore troubles upon me.
I know you will grant me new life, though.
I know you will raise me up from the depths of the Earth.
I know you will increase me greatly and comfort me in every way.

Is 25:7 - On this mountain, Yahweh will remove the veil over all people.
On this mountain, Yahweh will dispel the haze covering all nations.
On this mountain, Yahweh will devour death in victory.

Hos 13:14 - I will ransom them from the hand of the grave.
I will redeem them from the dead.
I will be your plagues, oh Death.
I will be your destruction, oh Grave.

Zech 9:11 - Through the blood of the covenant, I will bring prisoners out of the pit.

Paul (below) in one of his **Corinthian** letters, written in easy-to-understand Greek, employed **Hosea's** prophecy (above) as his authority.

1 Cor 15:54 - After our corruptible body has put on incorruption, and our mortal being has put on immortality, then the saying that was written will be brought to pass and death will be swallowed up in victory.
Where is your sting, oh Death?
Where is your victory, oh Grave?

John did the same by representing what might be the final fulfillment of all such prophecies in the figures of the **Revelation**.

Rev 20:12 - I saw the dead, small and great alike, stand before God.
The books were unsealed.
The book of life was also unsealed.
The dead were about to be judged by their works recorded in the books.
The sea released its dead.
Those held by death and the grave were given up.
They were all judged according to what they had done.
Then death and the grave were cast into the lake of fire.
This is the second death.
Those not found in the book of life were also cast into the lake of fire.

Daniel speaks of a time some sleepers will wake and rise.

Dan 12:1 - In that day, many who are asleep in the dust of the Earth will wake up. Some will receive everlasting life. The others will be given only shame and everlasting contempt.

Not all sleepers will wake. Most will snooze on.

Job 20:4 - Has it not been clear from days of old, since humans were put upon Earth, that the triumph of the wicked is short, and that the delight of the hypocrite lasts but a moment? Though his power reaches into the heavens, and his head reaches into the clouds, he will still perish forever. Wicked ones will rot away like their own shit.

All who knew them will say, Wow, where did they go?

All who knew them will say, Did you see? They faded like a dream.

Ps 88:5 - I am free among the dead, like those who lie in their graves.

I am like those you will never remember.

I am like those who are cut off from your hand.

Is 26:14 - Oh Yahweh, our Elohim, lords other than you have had control of us, but we will only call on your name.

Dead they are, never again to see life.

Defunct they are, and they will not rise.

You visited them and tore them to pieces.

You caused all memory of them to perish.

43:14 - Yahweh, the redeemer of Israel, and Israel's holy one, spoke.

I visited Babylon for you, said Yahweh.

I destroyed all their nobles for you.

I wasted the Chaldeans who had such pride in their ships.

I am Yahweh, your holy one, the creator of Israel, your King.

I am Yahweh, the one who permits armies to have power.

I swear to you, the Babylonians will lie down together, all of them.

I swear to you, they will never rise.

I swear to you, they will become extinct, snuffed out like candles.

Jer 51:37 - Babylon will become like refuse, a dwelling-place for dragons (tannim, jackals) an astonishment and hissing, entirely uninhabited.

They roared together as lions, but I will make them whine like little cubs.

I will cater their feasts, the parties they love so much.

I will make them drunk and they will party on, but after, they will sleep a perpetual sleep, a sleep from which they will never wake.

57 - I will make her princes drunk.

I will make her wise men, officials, rulers, and all her mighty men drunk.

I will make them sleep a perpetual sleep.

I will make them sleep a sleep from which they will never wake.

Obad 15 - The day of Yahweh is near for all unbelievers.

As they did, so will it also be done to them.

All their works will come back around again upon their own heads.
As they drank on my holy mountain, all nations will continue to drink.
All nations will drink, swallow down, and be as if they had never been.

Ps 49:6 - Those who place their trust in riches, those who brag regarding the amount of their wealth, can in no way redeem their brothers.
There is no way they can ever pay God a ransom for them.
The amount necessary to ransom a soul is too much.
The amount is too much, for a soul ceases forever.
The soul does not live on.
The soul suffers corruption.
Is it not clear that wise men die like fools?
Is it not clear that wise men die like men who are brutes?
Is it not clear they cease forever and leave their wealth to others?
They think their estates will continue through the ages.
The truth is this: even those who are considered special do not live on.
They are just like the animals in death.
Their beliefs are foolish, but their descendants still follow them.

14 - They are laid in the grave like lambs.
Death will feed on them, for the righteous will destroy them at dawn.
All their honor will fade away and the grave will be their new home.
But God will deliver my soul from the power of the grave.
And God will receive me.

Do not be overly impressed if somebody becomes wealthy or the position of his house is magnified, for he will take none of it away with him.
None of his glory will descend after him.
Even if he praises his own nephesh, and even if his fellow humans applaud him for doing well, he will still follow his fathers.
None of them will ever see the light.
Even if they were hot stuff in life, none of those who lack knowledge will be any more than animals in death.

RESPONSIBILITY

Those who wrote the Bible took great pains to explain why most of the people presently rotting in the dust of the Earth will continue to rot.

Those who scribed the scrolls stated ignorance of the truth alienates human beings from a chance for new life through resurrection.

Lk 13:23 - One of them asked, Lord, are only a few being saved?
Jesus answered, Worry about yourself. Try to enter through the narrow gate. Hear me now: many will try to get in, but they will not be able.

Mt 7:13 - Do all you must to enter through the narrow gate, for the gate leading to ruin is wide and many will try to go in by the broad way.

Eph 2:11 - Think about this: in the past, you were gentiles.
You had no awareness of Christ.
You were aliens, completely cut off from the commonwealth of Israel.
You were totally ignorant of the covenants of promise.
You had no hope.
You lacked God (you were atheists) in the world.

Ps 37:1 - Do not bother about those who do evil.
People who do evil are not worthy of envy.
Before long, they will be cut down like the grass.
Before long, they will wither like the green herb.
Before long, wicked ones will be lopped off.
Before long, those who wait on Yahweh will inherit the Earth.
Before long, those who do evil will not be.
Look everywhere for them, but you will not find them.
It is the meek who will inherit the Earth.
It is the meek who will delight themselves in peace and plenty. (9)

Prov 21:16 - People who go through life ignorant of the truth will remain in the assembly of the dead.

2 Cor 4:3 - If our gospel is hid, it is hid from those who are lost.

Knowledge of the truth brings responsibility.

Knowledge of the truth also brings opportunity for new life by way of resurrection.

Jn 3:19 - The basis of the condemnation is this: that light has been seen in the kosmos (present order of things) but humans, because their works are evil, prefer darkness over light.

9:41 - Jesus said, If you were blind you would not be held guilty for your sins, but you say you see. Therefore, you are filled with sin.

12:48 - Those who refuse me and choose not to accept what I say will be judged by my words on the last day.

15:19 - If you were part of the kosmos, the kosmos would love you as its own. Since you are not part of the kosmos, however, and since I removed you from the kosmos, the kosmos hates you.
Do you not recall I told you a servant cannot be greater than his master?
Do you not know they will persecute you like they persecute me?

Those who respect my words, though, will respect your words, too.
The wicked will hate you because they do not know the one who sent me.
They could not be held guilty for sin if I had not come and told them.
They have no excuse for their sins now, however.

24 - If I had not done miracles before them like nobody ever did, there is no way they could be held responsible for their sins.

6:40 - It is the will of the one who sent me that those who know the son and believe into him should have everlasting life.
It is the will of the one who sent me that I raise them on the last day.

Jn 17:9 - I do not pray for the kosmos (people in the world).
I pray for the ones you have given me, since they are yours, Father.
I do not pray for them alone, but for everybody who believes into me by way of their words. I pray they will all be one. **(20)**

Mk 16:16 - Those who believe into me and are baptized will be saved.
Those who refuse to believe, whether baptized or not, will be damned.

Acts 10:43 - The prophets all declared it was an understanding of Jesus' name that would bring remission of sins to people who believe into him.

Rom 2:11 - Those who sin without law perish without law.
Knowledge of sin comes through law. **(3:20)**
Where there is no knowledge of law, there is no transgression. **(4:15)**
Where there is no knowledge of law, there is no need for judgment.
Where there is no knowledge of law, there is no need for resurrection.
Sins do not count where there is no knowledge of law. **(5:13)**
I could never have been a sinner if I did not know the law. **(7:7)**

Prov 8:10 - Receive my instruction over silver.
Receive my knowledge over the finest gold.
Wisdom is better than rubies.
Whatever you can want is not worthy to be compared with wisdom.
Listen to me, therefore, oh my children: all those who continue in my way will be blessed.
Accept my instruction and be wise.
Do not refuse, for if you hear me you will be blessed.
If you watch all day at my gate, waiting at my doorpost, you will find life.
If you find me, you will receive good things from Yahweh. **(32)**

Both just and unjust ones will be raised and judged together whether they lived the truth or not. Those who didn't contact the truth won't be there. What would they be doing at judgment?

Acts 24:15 - There will be a resurrection of the dead, of just and unjust.

Dan 12:1 - Michael will stand up on that day, the great prince who fights for your people's children, and it will be a day of trouble, trouble such as has not been seen even from the beginning of nations to that time.

My people will be delivered then, everyone who is written in the book.

Many of those sleeping in the dust of the Earth will awake.

Some will receive everlasting life.

All the others will receive shame and everlasting contempt.

Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the sky.

Those who lead many to righteousness will shine like the stars.

And they will continue to shine age after age through all time.

Mt 24:42 - You must always expect him, for you are not aware when your Lord will come. But you do know this: if the man of the house knew when the thief was coming he would have been watching. He would never allow his house to be broken into. And you must always be ready the same way. Do not let the son of man find you acting like he is not going to return. Who are true and wise servants the lord will make rulers over his house? Which servants will be rewarded in due time?

Ones the Lord finds ready and waiting when he returns are the servants he will bless. I tell you in all truth, these are the ones your Lord will set over all his goods.

An evil servant says in his heart, My lord has put off his return.

He lashes out at his fellow servants. He eats and drinks accompanied by his pagan friends. Our Lord will find the servants like him unprepared at his return on a day when they are not aware. He will slice them into bits and appoint them to be with the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Jesus constantly warned his disciples to be ready for his return.

He also warned them to be ready for judgment.

Matthew repeated three parables Jesus used to uncover information about his return and judgment.

First, he introduces ten virgins (parthenos, set apart ones). They are members of a Jewish wedding party, supposed to go ahead and greet the groom, then escort him and his family to the bride's father's house.

Jesus started his parable like he started most parables, with a **simile**, a common figure of speech that likened entry into the kingdom to . . .

Mt 25:1 - . . . ten virgins who took up their lamps and went forth.

They went forth to meet the groom.

There were five wise ones and five foolish.

The foolish had their lamps, but they brought no oil.

The wise brought oil in containers, along with their lamps.

Because the bridegroom delayed, they all slumbered and slept.
About midnight, a voice rang out: Wake up, for the bridegroom is here!
Rise up, the voice commanded, and go out to meet him.
All the virgins rose and set their lamps in order.
Give us some of your oil, said the foolish, for our lamps have gone out.
We cannot, said the wise, since there is not enough oil for all of us.
Go to those who sell instead and buy some oil for yourselves.
While they went off to buy, the bridegroom came and the ones who were ready went in with him to the marriage feast and the door was locked.
After, the other virgins came, saying, Lord, Lord, open the door to us.
I am telling you I do not know you, the Lord answered.
Again, this is why you must pay attention.
Again, you do not know what day or hour the son of man will return.

The second parable introduces readers to . . .

Mt 25:14 - . . . a man preparing to go into a far country.
The man called his servants and put them in charge of all his goods.
The man gave one servant five talents (talanton, value, weight).
The man gave a second servant two talents.
The man gave a third servant one talent.
The servants received talents according to their own abilities.
Then the man left.

The servant who got five talents went off to barter with them.
This servant made five more talents.
The servant who got two talents made two more.
The servant who got only one talent dug an hole in the ground.
This servant hid his lord's money in the hole.

The years passed by, then the lord of the servants suddenly returned.
The lord called for his servants to settle their accounts.

The servant who received five talents brought out five more talents, and said, Lord, you gave me five talents, but see, I made another five talents as well.
His lord said, Well done, good and trustworthy friend. You were faithful to me in a few things. Now I will set you over many things.
His lord also said, Therefore, enter into the joy of your lord.

The servant who received two talents came, too, and said, Lord, you gave me two talents, but see, I made two more talents from the first ones.
His lord said, Well done, good and trustworthy friend. You were faithful to me in a few things. Now I will set you over many things.
His lord also said, Therefore, enter into the joy of your lord.

The servant who received one talent appeared, and said, Lord, I knew you were an inflexible man, reaping in fields you never sowed and gathering in places you never strawed.

Also, he said, I was afraid and I buried your talent in the ground, but you can see I brought back exactly what you gave me.

His lord said, You thoughtless and slothful servant. You claim you knew I reaped fields I did not sow, and I gathered places I never strawed. Why did you not deposit my money in a bank? If you had, my talent would have been given back to me with interest at my return. Take that talent away from the evil servant and give it to the servant with ten talents.

All who increase will receive more still, but those who refuse to grow will lose even the little they have.

Cast all the worthless servants into the outer darkness.

Cast them out where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

The third parable is familiar to many.

The parable talks about two different farm animals.

Mt 25:31 - When the son of man appears in glory, along with all the holy angels, he will be seated on the throne of his glory.

People from every nation will be assembled before him.

He will separate them one from the other.

He will separate them as a shepherd separates his sheep from the goats.

He will set the sheep on his right hand, the goats on his left.

He will say to those on his right hand, Come, you who were blessed by my Father, the time has arrived for you to inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the kosmos.

When I was hungry, you gave me food.

When I was thirsty, you gave me drink.

When I had no home, you took me in.

When I was naked, you put clothes on my back.

When I was sick or in prison, you came to visit me.

When did we see you hungry, Lord, the righteous will ask him? When did we feed you? When did we . . . ?

I tell you truly, the King will reply, when you did it for the least of these, my brothers and sisters, you did it for me.

He will say to the ones on his left hand, Depart, you who are cursed.

Depart into the conflagration of the aion (age) into the fires made ready for the diabolos (false accuser, traitor) and his servants.

When I was hungry, you gave me no food.

When I was thirsty, you gave me nothing to drink.

When I was homeless, you did not take me in.

When I was naked, you did not clothe me.

When I was sick or in prison, you did not come to visit me.

The goats will retort, When did we see you hungry, thirsty, or homeless?
When did we see you naked, sick, or in prison and refuse to help you?
He will say, I am telling you truly, since you did not do it for the least of
my brothers and sisters, you did not do it for me.
And these are the servants which will be forced out into the punishment
of that aion (age) but the righteous will enter into life.

Jesus claims he's in charge of resurrection and judgment.

Jn 5:21 - The same way the Father raises the dead and gives them a new
life, so also, the son will give new life to the ones he desires. The Father
will judge no one, since he has committed all judgment to the son.

26 - Like the Father has life in himself, so also, he has given the son life
within him as well. He gave the son authority to carry out judgment, too,
since he is the son of man. Do not be amazed by it, for the day is coming
when all responsible ones who sleep in their graves will hear my voice and
come out. Those who did well will undergo resurrection to life, but those
who did poorly will experience resurrection to damnation.

Rom 2:1 - Therefore, those of you who judge others have no excuse, for
when you judge others you condemn yourself, since you know you are also
doing the same things they do. We are persuaded God's judgment will be
against those who commit such offenses.

Do you believe, oh man, you should judge people who do these things?
Do you believe, oh man, while you do the same things yourself, you can be
a judge of others and still avoid God's judgment on you?
Are you not, rather, despising the abundance of God's goodness?
Are you not scorning his forbearance and longsuffering?
Have you not forgotten it was God's goodness that allowed you to repent
in the first place?

In light of the indecency of your unrepentant hearts, though, you add up
anger to yourself against the day of anger, the day when God's righteous
judgment will come, the day when God will reward believers in a way that
shows how they lived their lives.

Also, to all who, through a patient endurance in well doing, seek out glory,
honor, and immortality, God will give new life in the age.

But to all who were contrary, those who did not obey the truth, the ones
who lived dishonorably, God will award indignation and wrath.

16 - . . . on the day God judges human secrets through Jesus.

2 Cor 5:10 - We must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ.
We must all appear so we can be rewarded in a body.
We must be rewarded for what we have done, whether good or bad.

People stuck with false-christian interpretations and commentaries of **Paul's** letter believe he wrote that all people must appear.

They say **Paul** was talking about everybody, about each human being.

Anti-christian "logic" runs as follows: "Paul wrote, 'we' have to appear. Paul was human, wasn't he? That means Paul was talking about himself, in addition to all other humans who ever lived. Also, it means your dumb old theory that only people with knowledge will be raised is untrue!"

Actually, though, the verse shows the idea is not a dumb theory at all. It's an indisputable fact, unless we think God intends to judge those with no clue what's going on using the same yardstick he judges ones who knew better, but didn't obey.

Is that what anti-christians want?

Don't they squeal like little impaled piglets anytime they're accused of breaking rules of which they weren't told?

Do they think God is less righteous than they? Hopefully not.

Anybody who presumes the phrase "we must all appear" is detrimental to the idea that only the persons God holds responsible will be raised and judged demonstrates how desperate ignorant people can be; and too, how ignorant desperate people can be; or both.

Are you wondering how it displays desperation and/or ignorance?

Have a look at this . . .

2 Cor 1:1 - From Paul, the apostle of Jesus Christ by God's mandate, and from our brother, Timothy, to the church (ekklesia) of called out ones at Corinth, including all the saints (hagios, set apart) who live in Achaia, may grace and peace come to you from God, our Father.

What appears above is the first paragraph of a letter **Paul** wrote to a particular group of people. Those who want to believe a statement inside this letter holds true for everybody who's ever lived on Earth, especially if doing it goes against thousands of verses found in the Bible, is free to go ahead and believe it. And that's all that needs to be said about that.

Tim 3:14 - You must continue to uphold the things you learned.

You must trust them, always remembering from whom you received them.

You were taught the holy scriptures from childhood, Timothy.

You know they made you wise.

You also know they will save you if you have faith in Christ.

4:1 - I charge you before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, also, who will judge the living and dead when he returns to set up his kingdom.

I urge you to continue spreading the word. Be there for the brethren in good times and bad. Advise, censure, and entreat them with all patience, using sound doctrine, for a day will come when they will hate the truth.

1 Cor 4:5 - Judge nothing before it is time.

Determine nothing before our Lord has come back, not until he brings all the dark and secret things to light, not until he uncovers the thoughts in hearts. This is when worthy ones will receive honor from God.

2 Ptr 3:3 - Brethren, I am writing a second letter as I wrote one before, hoping to stir up your sincere minds, and remind you of words which were spoken earlier by our holy prophets, along with all the commands given to us by the apostles of our Lord and Savior.

Right up front, I want you to know scoffers will be seen in the last times. All they will care about is fulfilling their own immoral cravings.

They will brazenly ask, So where is the promise of his appearance?

They will spew out, Since the time our fathers went to sleep, up to today, all things go on as they have from the beginning of time.

People like them ignore evidence the word of God shaped the old heavens.

People like them ignore evidence the word of God made dry land come out of the water and remain standing firm while circled by water.

People like them ignore evidence the word of God was what caused a past kosmos to be submerged under water and perish.

People like them ignore evidence the word of God is what sustains heaven and Earth in the present.

People like them ignore evidence the word of God alone holds the present heaven and Earth in place, ready to suffer a day of fire and judgment.

Be sure not to forget that is when people like them will be slain.

Beloved, do not disregard this significant fact: a day to the Lord is like a thousand years and a thousand years is like a day.

Yahweh is not being slack about his promise, not as some view slackness.

Yahweh, the Lord, is being very patient with us.

Yahweh wants no one to perish; rather, he wants everyone to repent.

Repent or perish?

Saved or lost?

Preservation or destruction?

Called out ones and ones without God?

People in the world and people in Christ?

People judged worthy and people who are perishing?

What's going on here?

Salvation

Micah 6:6 - What will I bring to Yahweh?

How will I bow myself down before the most high God?

Should I bring him a burnt offering or young calf?

Will Yahweh delight in a thousand lambs?

Will Yahweh be pleased by ten thousand rivers of oil?
Will I offer my first-born to cover my rebellious acts?
Will I offer the fruit of my body to atone for the sins of my soul?
Yahweh has told you, oh man, what he considers honorable.
What more do you think Yahweh wants from you other than to do what is right, to value charity, and to walk in humility before your God?

Jude 5 - After saving his people from Egypt, he (God) killed the ones who would not believe. (**Ex 14:13**)

If that's the salvation advanced by the God of the Bible, it's nothing a guy would care to write the folks back home about, not if saved ones just end up being destroyed a few years later.

The folks back home wouldn't bat an eye, though.

"For the land's sake," they'd snuff, "them was just dumb old Jews. A Jew never calls on Jesus to be his personal saver - not like we do. We're saved, but Jews are gonna get destroyed fast as can be."

More anti-christian fables, folks?

In fact, one thing Jews should thank God for (above all things) is that they've never called on Jesus to be their personal "saver" like those anti-christians do.

"Why should Jews thank God for that?"

The answer: because Bible salvation is completely opposed to the anti-salvation offered by Babylon and her wannabe daughters.

The Bible presents three tenses and types of salvation.

Salvation in the past tense.

Titus 3:5 - According to his mercy, he has saved us with the cleansing of regeneration and a renewing of the hagios pneuma.

2 Tim 1:9 - God saved us.

God called us through an holy calling, one not based on our works.

Verses like these deal with people being taken "out of" the world and put "into" Christ, but there's nothing indicating that type of deliverance, being delivered in the past tense, is necessarily going to stick.

The Bible says this kind of salvation will only adhere if believers show a willingness to follow conditions already laid out by the Big Guy.

There's nothing unfair about that, is there?

The past tense is often employed to announce the certainty of future events, but no verses will be found anywhere in the Bible confirming that once people are saved "into" Christ they have it made.

If a dear Reverend encourages you to start rejoicing because of your "assured salvation", it would be best to get out there and turn over some rocks in search of a new Reverend.

Rom 4:17 - God often speaks about things that have not yet happened in a way that indicates they already have.

Jn 3:35 - The Father loves the son and has given him all things.

Heb 2:8 - At present, we do not yet see all things put under him.

Jn 17:14 - I finished the work you assigned me.
I gave them the glory you gave me. (22)

It's obvious Jesus didn't think he'd already finished all that his Father wanted him to do, not since he still had to suffer, die, be resurrected, go, return, raise and judge the dead, establish the kingdom, etc.

Jesus used the past tense regarding things he still had to do.

Jesus spoke as if they were already done.

Jesus did it to show how sure he was he'd do them.

Bible writers used the same approach with salvation.

Ultimate salvation, as taught in the Bible, is a thing of the future.

Ultimate salvation is a thing even those "in Christ" must hope for.

2 Tim 2:10 - Therefore, I put up with all things for the sake of the elect. I do it so they might also obtain salvation through Christ.

Col 1:27 - Christ in you, the hope of glory.

The Greek language, like others, has a tense of speech which signifies an on-going process. It's the continuous tense, and it has to do with what happens each day. In this way, the Bible introduces . . .

Salvation in the present tense.

Act 2:47 - Every day, the Lord brought people who were being saved into the church.

1 Cor 1:18 - It is useless preaching the cross to those who are perishing, but it is power from God to those who are being saved.

15:2 - The very salvation that is saving you if you remember what I said.

2 Cor 2:15 - Unto God, I am a sweet savor of Christ because of the ones who are being saved.

Scriptural salvation is presented as a continuing procedure.
Scriptural salvation is an adventure leading to an incomparable climax.

The salvation anti-christians rattle on over, the salvation they believe they already have, the salvation they offer to anybody who sinks into the same morass of ignorance into which they've sunk themselves, isn't in the least way related to the true Salvation of the Bible.

Salvation in the future tense.

Mt 7:21 - Not all who confess I am their Lord will enter the kingdom.
Only those who do what my Father wants will get in.

10:22 - Those who endure to the end will be saved. (**Rev 2:26**)

16:27 - The son of man will come in his Father's glory, with his angels.
He will reward the responsible according to their works then.

25:33 - He will set the sheep on his right hand, the goats on his left.

1 Cor 3:15 - He will be saved himself, but only by fire.
(**9:27 / Acts 15:11 / 1 Jn 3:2**)

1 Tim 4:16 - If you do it, you will save yourself.
If you do it, you will save the ones who hear you.

Mk 16:16 - People who believe and are baptized will be saved.
People who do not believe will be damned.

Jn 6:39 - It is the will of the Father who sent me that I not lose anyone
he has given me, for my Father will let me resurrect those who are mine.
I will raise them up on the last day and give them life in the age.
I will raise them all on the last day.

No one can come to me unless he is drawn by my Father.
I will raise up the ones my Father has called on the last day. (**44**)

Rom 2:7 - To all those who patiently continue to do right, the people who
seek glory, honor, and immortality, God will give life in the age.
But to those who are contentious, those who will not obey the truth, God
is only going to give anger and wrath.

2 Cor 5:10 - All those who understand must appear before the judgment
seat of Christ. They must appear so they may be given in a body the out-
working of what they have done, whether good or bad.

Phil 3:12 - It is not like I have already attained salvation.
It is not like I was already made perfect.
I think I would know if I was perfect.

Biblical salvation is conditional . . .

Act 2:37 - They asked, What must we do to be saved?
Peter said, You must repent, believe, and be baptised.

Scriptural examples of "repentance" follow . . .

Gen 27:42 - Esau nacham (comforts) himself to kill you.
37:35 - Jacob refused to nacham (be comforted).

Ex 13:17 - So they do not nacham (repent) when they see war.

Hos 13:14 - Nacham (repentance) will be hidden from my eyes.

Is 6:10 - So they do not turn and shub (be converted).

Ezk 14:6 - Repent (reconsider the thing) and shub (turn) yourselves.
(**18:30** / **1 Kng 8:7**)

Mt 21:29 - Afterward, he metamelomai (repented).

27:3 - When Judas heard Jesus was sentenced to death, he metamelomai (repented himself) and he tried to give the thirty pieces of silver back to the chief priests and elders.
Judas said, I have sinned. I have betrayed an innocent man.
What is that to us, they asked? It is your own affair.
When he heard their reply, Judas cast the pieces of silver into the house of God, then he ran out and hanged himself.

2 Cor 7:8 - I do not metamelomai (repent).

Heb 7:21 - Yahweh will not metamelomai.

Mt 3:8 - Bring forth fruits that are worthy of metanoia (repent, conduct yourselves in a way that shows your life has changed).

11:20 - He upbraided them because they did not metanoia.

Lk 11:32 - They metanoia at the preaching of Jonah.

17:3 - If a brother metanoia (repents) forgive him.

Act 17:30 - God now commands all people to metanoia.

20:21 - Have metanoia (repentance) toward God. (**26:20**)

Rom 2:4 - The goodness of God leads to metanoia.

2 Cor 7:10 - Godly sorrow brings metanoia.

Heb 6:1 - A First Principle Of Truth: a real disciple will always manifest metanoia from the useless things of the past.

6 - It is impossible to restore some to metanoia after they fall away.

12:17 - Esau found no way to metanoia (he wasn't able to adjust his thinking, he couldn't change his mind).

Rev 2:5 - Metanoia (repent) and return to your first works.

3:3 - Hold fast and metanoia.

16:9 - They did not metanoia and give God the glory. (11)

It's clear the Bible defines "repentance" as the total alteration of the mind and heart. This is the same as saying disciples of Christ must cease living the way they lived before they learned the truth. A disciple has to alter his life, for change is the yardstick Yahweh uses to decide value.

Moaning, "I'm so sad 'cause I'm so bad", isn't what God is after.

Anyone can sob, snort, snuff, and sniffle.

Anyone can experience moments of regret and cry out for change, but only those with a knowledge and love of the truth will ever achieve actual and lasting change.

They're the only ones who can do Yahweh's will.

The Bible speaks of the importance of knowledge and understanding in the life of a disciple of Christ.

Think about it . . .

Ps 49:20 - People who do not understand, although they were hot stuff in life, are no more than animals in death.

Prov 1:7 - Reverence toward Yahweh is the beginning of knowledge.

If you accept my words . . .

If you incline your ear to wisdom . . .

If you apply your heart to understanding . . .

If you cry out for knowledge . . .

If you lift up your voice for discernment . . .

If you seek understanding like it was silver . . .

If you seek understanding like it was hidden treasure . . .

I swear you will learn reverence for Yahweh.

I swear you will also know God. (2:1)

9 - In that day, you will understand righteousness, judgment and equality.
In that day, you will understand every proper way.

3:5 - Trust Yahweh with all your heart. Do not rely on your own thinking.
Yahweh will lead you in all your ways if you acknowledge him.
Do not be wise in your own eyes; rather, have reverence for Yahweh.

13 - Happy are those who find wisdom and understanding.

4:5 - No matter what else you get, get wisdom and understanding.
Do not forget or forsake wisdom, for it will preserve and protect you.
Wisdom is the chief thing . . . therefore, get wisdom.

8:8 - All my words are clear.
They are not brassy or tainted.
They are plain to those with sense.
They are accurate to those with insight.
Trust in my instruction, rather than silver.
Trust in my knowledge, rather than finest gold.
There is much more value in wisdom than in rubies.
There is nothing you can want more prized than wisdom.

16:25 - There is a way that is right to humans, but it just leads to death.

18:15 - Hearts of the clever seek knowledge.
Ears of the wise seek understanding.

19:1 - It is better to be poor and walk in integrity than to have lying lips
and be a fool.
It is also not good to be without knowledge.

Eccl 9:10 - There is no knowledge or wisdom in the grave.

Hos 4:1 - Hear Yahweh's word, children of Israel.
Yahweh has words for the people living in his land.
Yahweh says they do not want truth and mercy.
Yahweh says they do not want to know about the Elohim.

6 - My people are wasted because they lack knowledge.
Because you reject wisdom, I will also reject you.
You will never serve as my priests.
You have forgotten your God, therefore I, your God, will forget you.

14 - I will not punish your daughters when they become whores.
I will not punish your spouses when they become adulterers.

You have disassociated yourselves from me, thus I will not punish them.
You have become whores and you sacrifice with harlots.
You have forgotten that people without knowledge will fall.

9 - People who are wise will understand.
People who are intelligent will gain even more knowledge.
Proper is Yahweh's path.
People who do not walk it will be destroyed.

Jn 9:41 - Jesus said, If you had no understanding, you could not be guilty of sin. Because you say you understand, though, you are full of sin.

15:22 - They have no more excuse for their evil.

Eph 2:12 - In those days, you were without Christ.
You did not know about the covenants of promise.
You did not know about the commonwealth of Israel.
You had no hope and you were without God (atheists) in the world.

4:18 - They do not see.
They are alienated.
They are without God in the world.

Is 11:9 - Earth will be filled with the knowledge of Yahweh.

The Big Guy couldn't command faith and repentance without a specific agenda to be believed, one that makes sense and carries much weight.

Not only must there be good and true things, there should be bad and false things, too.

Those who want to please God aren't stuck with their own thinking.

They aren't stuck, for the Bible is crammed full of information on the connection between truth and error.

Rom 1:25 - They changed God's truth into a lie.

3:4 - Let God be true, even if all humans must be called liars.

9:1 - I am speaking the truth. I am not lying.

1 Cor 13:6 - Do not rejoice in evil; rather, rejoice in truth.

1 Tim 2:7 - I am speaking the truth in Christ. I am not lying.

2 Tim 4:4 - Closing their ears to the truth, they embraced lies.

Titus 1:14 - Do not listen to Jewish fables.

Above all, do not listen to the opinions of those who have left the truth.

Jms 3:14 - Do not take pride in your lies.

5:19 - Those who stray from the truth . . .
Jn 1:6 - Those who walk in darkness, not according to the truth . . .
2:4 - They are liars and there is no truth in them.
8 - Darkness is past and the true light is now shining.
2:21 - Their lies have nothing to do with the truth.
3:18 - Do not love in word only, but in truth.
1 Jn 4:6 - This is how we know the difference between truth and error.
Jn 3:21 - Those who live the truth increase in knowledge.

4:23 - The time is coming (really, it is already here) when the Father will be worshipped in pneuma and truth.
 Our Father is seeking such to worship him.
 Our Father is pneuma.
 People who worship the Father properly must worship in pneuma.
 People who worship the Father properly must worship in truth.

14:17 - The kosmos (the way people presently behave) is in no way linked to the pneuma of truth.
 People in the kosmos cannot even imagine the pneuma, let alone know it.
 You know it now because it lives among you.
 You are going to know it later because it will live in you.

15:26 - The pneuma of truth that comes from the Father.
16:13 - When the pneuma of truth arrives, it will lead you into all truth.

1 Tim 2:4 - Come to a knowledge of the truth.
2 Tim 2:15 - Rightly divide the word of truth.

2:25 - Acknowledge the truth. (**Titus 1:1**)
3:7 - A knowledge of the truth. (**Heb 10:26**)
2 Jn 4 - Your children walking in truth. (**3 Jn 3**)

2 Ths 2:10 - Most received no love for the truth.
13 - A few were chosen because they believed the truth.

Rom 1:16 - I am not embarrassed by the gospel of Christ, for it is power from God for salvation to everyone who believes.

Hab 2:4 - Those who are justified will survive because of their faith.
Gen 15:6 - Abraham believed and Yahweh counted it as righteousness.
Num 12:7 - Moses was faithful, as well as all his family.

Jonah 3:5 - Nineveh believed.
Ex 4:1 - Israel will not believe.
2 Kng 17:14 - Israel did not believe.

Hab 1:5 - You would not believe if someone proved it to you.

It's utterly impossible for those who don't believe the truth, the ones without faith, to please the God of the Bible.

What's belief?

What's faith?

Are they the same?

If not, how do they differ?

Here it comes again: people who want to please God don't have to rely on human thinking or awareness.

"Why not?"

The answer: as mentioned earlier, the Bible overflows with insight as far as faith and practice. Words used by Jews and Greeks to illuminate faith, truth, and certainty follow.

Deut 7:9 - The aman (faithful) God.

Ps 19:7 - Yahweh's words are flawless, able to convert the nephesh. Yahweh's testimonies are aman (sure) able to make the ignorant wise.

101:6 - My eyes are on the aman.

111:7 - All his commandments are aman.

1 Chr 17:23 - It is for this cause, Yahweh, that I pray you will permit the things you promised concerning me and my house to be aman (established) to the age. Please do what you promised. May it be aman (established) so your name will be magnified for the ages, and so it will be said, Yahweh of hosts is God of Israel. You are Israel's true God, Yahweh, so please allow the house of your servant, David, to be aman in your sight.

2 Chr 1:9 - The promise to David was aman.

20:20 - Believe Yahweh, your God, and you will be aman. Believe Yahweh's prophets and you will prosper.

Neh 9:38 - An amanah (certain) covenant.

Is 55:3 - The aman (sure) mercies of David.

Emun, emeth and **aman** are closely related words, as closely related as sisters are to brothers. The only proper way to translate these words is with English words from the Truth and Faith family.

Is 25:1 - The old ways are the basis of emun (faithfulness).

2 Kng 12:15 - The builders accepted whatsoever compensation was given them because they built emun (faithfully).

22:7 - The builders did not even count the money they were given. They did not count it because they dealt emun (faithfully).

Ps 145:18 - Yahweh is close to those who call him in emeth (truth).

Prov 11:18 - Those who do what is right will get an emeth (sure) reward.
12:22 - Those who conduct themselves emun (truly) make Yahweh happy.

23:23 - Buy emeth (the truth) and do not sell it.
28:20 - The emun (faithful) will overflow with blessings.

Jer 5:1 - Tell me if there are any who seek emun (the truth).
7:28 - Emun (the truth) has perished.

9:3 - They are not valiant for emun (the truth).
Deut 32:20 - They are perverse children, having no emun (faith).
Neh 9:33 - You did what was emeth (right). We acted wickedly.

Jer 14:13 - I will give emeth (assured) peace in this place.
23:28 - Let the prophet speaking my word speak it emeth (faithfully).
32:41 - I will emeth (assuredly) plant them in this land.

2 Chr 15:3 - For a long time, Israel was without the emeth (true) God.
Jer 10:10 - Yahweh is the emeth (true) God.

Dan 8:12 - The fourth beast cast emeth (the truth) to the ground.

10:21 - The scripture of emeth (truth).

Truth is the thing a disciple must believe.

The measure (degree) of a disciple's belief is his faith.

The three levels of faith are: (1) no belief - thus, no faith; (2) a touch of belief, but not enough to help a disciple transform or experience much repentance; and (3) more than enough belief to help a disciple change.

Isn't it apparent a belief strong enough to let disciples act as if they truly trust Yahweh is real faith?

Isn't it also apparent anything less has nothing to do with faith?

Actual faith brings trust, far more than enough to enable disciples to forego things with the power to nudge them off the path.

Even if they're things that feel really, really good.

Even if they're things the really, really cool people are into.

At the end, none of that will matter.
Anything less than full trust will be judged unworthy of salvation.

The English word "salvation" is misleading.
The word itself has little to do with what the Bible reveals.
Therefore, anti-christians worship the word "salvation".
The word makes them vibrate with visions of glory and glee.
They roll to and fro, rocking one another about, filled with gladness.
They are elated and they are jazzed.
The very mention of "salvation" sends them into shivers of delight.
The word causes shudders of glory to wash over their assemblies.
They sit while wave after wave of bliss flows down from heaven.
The sight is a wonder to see.
The catch is that none of these people have any knowledge about the salvation revealed by Bible writers in the scrolls.

A word picked by new testament writers to communicate the concept of salvation is **soteria**. **Soteria** is translated as "preserve" and "deliver". If words that had to do with preservation and deliverance were the only ones used to translate **soteria**, there'd be a lot less confusion about how humans are saved.

On the downside: there'd be far less shivers, shudders, and shakes.
"Why?"
The answer: because deliverance and preservation is all God offers.
That's the only salvation offered by the God of the Bible.

The verses below are clear if viewed in the right frame of mind.

Act 27:34 - Eat something . . . it is for your own soteria (health).

Heb 11:7 - Noah prepared an ark for the soteria (saving) of his family.

Acts 7:25 - Moses believed his kinsmen would understand God wanted to soteria (deliver, save) them by his hand.

Lk 1:69 - Jesus was an horn of soteria (salvation) raised for Israel.

71 - Israel will be soteria (saved).

77 - John, the Baptizer, came with a knowledge of soteria.

2:30 - My eyes have seen your soterion.

3:6 - All flesh will see the soterion of God.

Jn 4:22 - Jesus said, Soteria comes through the Jews.

Acts 4:12 - No other name than Christ can bring soteria.

13:26 - Men and brethren, you seed of Abraham's line, and all the others among you who fear God, this word of soteria is for you.

13:47 - Paul was a light to the gentiles for soteria.

16:17 - The apostles were sent to show the way of soteria.

28:28 - God has sent soterion to the gentiles.

Rom 1:16 - The good news as it applies to Christ is that he is the soteria of God to all who believe.

11:11 - Soteria came to the gentiles through the fall of the Jews.

2 Cor 6:2 - Today is the day of soteria.

7:10 - Godly sorrow leads to repentance. It directs believers to soteria with no holding back. Worldly sorrow leads only to death.

Eph 1:13 - The word of truth is the gospel of your soteria.

Phil 2:12 - Work out your soteria with fear and trembling.

1 Thes 5:8 - We who are part of the day should be enthusiastic about it.
We should protect ourselves with faith and love.
We should put on our hope for soteria as an helmet.
We should recall God did not appoint us to wrath, but to soteria.

2 Thes 2:13 - We were elected in the beginning to receive soteria.
We received it through sanctification and believing the truth.

2 Tim 3:15 - The scrolls are able to make you wise.
The scrolls will lead you to soteria.

Titus 2:11 - Jesus, a gift of grace from God, brought soterios.

1 Ptr 1:10 - The soteria the prophets strove to understand.

14 - Angels are ministers to the heirs of soteria.

2:33 - How will we ever escape if we neglect so great a soteria?

10 - He is the source of our soteria.
He was made perfect by the things he suffered.

5:9 - He became the source of soteria to all who obey.

6:9 - Believers must show things worthy of soteria.

9:28 - Jesus will appear a second time in perfection.

Jesus will award soteria then.

1 Ptr 1:5 - God shields believers through faith until the last day.

Soteria will be openly manifested then.

9 - The end result of your faith is your soteria.

Jude 3 - The soteria we share.

Anti-christendom's "saver" (Jesus, the "god", the center entity in the unholy scam known as the trinity) displays no similarity to the true Soter, Deliverer, Preserver, and Christ of the Bible.

Mt 27:40 - Sozo (save) yourself if you are the son of God.

27:42 - He sozo others, but he cannot sozo himself.

49 - See if Elijah will come and sozo him.

1 Tim 1:1 - Paul, an apostle of Jesus, the Christ, by order of God, who is our soter (savior) and by the anointed Lord Jesus, who is our hope.

4:10 - The living God, soter of all.

Lk 1:47 - Mary said, God is my soter.

2:11 - God has sent a soter, one who is Christ and Lord.

Jn 4:42 - He is the Christ, a soter for all who believe.

Act 5:31 - Jesus was raised up to be a prince and soter.

Eph 5:23 - Christ is the head of the church, the soter of our body.

Phil 3:20 - We look for our soter to appear from the heavens.

2 Tim 1:10 - The appearing of our soter, the Lord Jesus.

Titus 1:3 - The commandment of God, our soter.

1:4 - The Lord Jesus Christ, our soter.

2:10 - The doctrine of God, our soter.

3:4 - The kindness and love of God, our soter, has appeared.

6 - Jesus, the Christ, our soter.

2 Ptr 1:1 - The righteousness of God, our soter.

11 - An entrance into the kingdom of our Lord and soter.

2:20 - (We) escaped the kosmos through the knowledge of our soter.

3:2 - The apostles of the Lord and soter.

18 - Grow in the grace and knowledge of our soter.

1 Jn 4:14 - The Father sent the son to be a soter for the world.

Jude 25 - To the only God, our soter.

Mk 3:4 - Is it unlawful to diasozo (save) a life on the sabbath day?

Lk 7:3 - He begged Jesus to come and diasozo (heal) his servant.

Mt 14:36 - Those who touched his clothes became diasozo (fully healed).

Act 23:24 - Bring Paul diasozo (safely) to Felix.

27:43 - The soldier wanted to diasozo (save) Paul.

44 - They all made it diasozo (safely) to land.

28:1 - When they had diasozo (escaped).

4 - He diasozo the sea.

1 Ptr 3:20 - Eight souls were diasozo by water.

4:18 - If just a few upright ones are to be sozo, what hope at all is there for those without God or for sinners?

Mt 8:25 - Lord, sozo us before we perish!

14:30 - As Peter began to sink, he cried out, Lord, sozo me!

9:21 - If I can just touch his garment, I will be sozo (made whole).

Jesus said, Your faith has sozo you.

Instantly, she was sozo.

Mk 5:23 - If you come, my daughter will be sozo (healed).

6:56 - As many as touched his garments were sozo.

10:52 - The blind man's faith sozo him (made him whole, saved him).

Lk 8:36 - The one with daimonia was sozo.

17:19 - Only one leper of the ten was sozo.

Jn 11:12 - Lazarus will sozo (do well) if he is able to sleep.

Act 2:40 - Sozo yourself from this age.

4:9 - The beggar at the temple was sozo.

14:9 - Paul knew the crippled guy had enough faith to be sozo.

Jms 5:15 - The prayer of faith can sozo the sick.

2 Tim 1:9 - God sozo (saved) us and called us.

4:18 - The Lord will sozo (save) me.

Titus 3:5 - According to his mercy, he sozo us.

Jude 5 - After God sozo (delivered) his people from Egypt, he destroyed all those who did not believe.

Heb 5:7 - Jesus cried out to the one who was able to sozo him.

7:25 - Jesus is now able to sozo those who come to him.

Mt 1:21 - Christ will sozo his people from all their sins.

10:22 - Those who endure until the end will be sozo.

19:25 - If that is so, who can be sozo?

24:22 - Unless the days are cut short, no one will be sozo alive.

Mk 8:35 - Those who try to sozo their lives will lose them.

Those who yield their lives for my sake will sozo them.

16:16 - Those who believe and are baptized will be sozo.

Lk 13:23 - Are there only a few who will be sozo?

Jn 3:17 - The whole world could be sozo through him.

5:34 - I have told you these things so you might be sozo.

10:9 - Anyone who enters through this door will be sozo.

Act 2:21 - Those who name the Lord's name on themselves will be sozo.

4:12 - There is no other name under heaven which can sozo us.

11:14 - I will speak words whereby you and your family may be sozo.

15:1 - Jews say if you are not circumcised according to the law received through Moses you cannot be sozo.

16:30 - What must I do to be sozo?

You must believe into the Lord, you and your whole house.

1 Tim 1:15 - Christ Jesus came into the kosmos to sozo sinners.

2:4 - God would be happy if everyone was sozo.

14 - Faith that cannot be seen cannot sozo you.

4:12 - Only one is able to sozo and destroy.

2 Thes 2:10 - They had no love for the truth to sozo them.

Rom 5:9 - We will be sozo from wrath through him.

10 - We are reconciled by his death and sozo by his life.

8:24 - We are sozo by hope, but hope that cannot be seen is no hope.

10:9 - If you confess with your mouth, and also believe in your heart, you will be sozo.

13 - Those who call the name of the Lord upon themselves will be sozo.

Rom 15:2 - The gospel will sozo you.

Eph 2:5 - You are sozo through grace.

8 - You are sozo through grace because of your faith.

Jms 1:21 - God's word is able to sozo you into a new life.

The salvation above is the only salvation offered in the Bible.

The "salvation" offered by anti-christians has little to do with it.

The Bible has nothing of "dear souls" winging their way to "Heaven".

There's no hint of it.

There's nothing of "dear spirits" being told they're already saved.

The delusion of anyone being saved before the return of Christ is one more anti-christian hallucination, just one more pleasing, though polluted, pudding, pumped by pompous Pastors and Popes to their plummpp, purrry pupils, who greedily gobble it down.

Bible salvation is the saving and preservation of mortal humans.

Bible salvation is the saving of those who know and love the truth, the ones who've really changed, the ones who truly reject the ignorant deeds, vain thinking, and pointlessness of lives lived before the truth.

True Christians hate anti-christian lies.

True Christians have taken on the name of the true God and Christ.

True Christians know the Bible offers nothing good to anyone else.

Yahweh isn't a cruel God or a fire-flinging freak.

Yahweh is a merciful God.

Yahweh even allows those who scorn him to have hope.

Yahweh lets scorners hope their ruin is sure and swift.

Yahweh assures them it's nothing they can't handle.

2 Thes 1:6 - Our God is righteous and he will bring turmoil on those who bother you. To those of you who are beset, to those who need a release, Yahweh has said I can verify this to you: release will come, but not until Jesus drops down from the heavens in a flame of fire with the angels of power to avenge himself on people who will not seek God, people who will not adhere to the gospel of our anointed Lord and Savior, those who will

be punished by perpetual banishment from Yahweh's presence, when he is glorified in the chosen ones, after he has received honor from people who believed us, his witnesses.

Jn 5:29 - Those responsible to God will rise from their graves.
The ones who did well will rise to a new life.
The ones who fell short will rise to be destroyed.

Act 24:15 - There will be a resurrection of the dead.
It will be a resurrection of those who are covered and those who are not.

Dan 12:2 - Some will rise to life. Others will rise to shame.
Rom 2:6 - God will hand out good and evil on that day. (16)

Mt 16:27 - The son of man will be seen in his Father's glory.
The son of man will be seen with all his angels.
Then he will reward believers according to how they lived their lives.

Jn 6:39 - The God who sent me does not want any of those he gave me to be lost; rather, he wants me to resurrect them on the last day.
My God also wants me to reward them with life in the age.

44 - People cannot come to me unless they are drawn by my Father.
People like these are the ones I will raise up on the last day.

2 Ptr 3:9 - God would prefer that nobody had to die.

So God offers three options . . .

An opportunity to inherit everlasting life.
An opportunity to rise to an unpleasant second death.
An opportunity to play dead in the grave forever.

Believers are free to work at either of the first two.
People who don't know the truth are stuck with the third.

Permitting disciples to determine whether or not they'll gain immortal natures in the Kingdom Age is the only way Yahweh can receive glory.

Some might say, "Run that one by me again, will yer? How be that the only way Yahweh can get him some glory?"

Think about this: if Yahweh built robots, then programmed the robots to plod predetermined paths, would he warrant gobs of glory because the dumb things did what he programmed them to do? It isn't likely.

Programming is what makes specific things do specific things.
Any nerd can handle that.

And how should those who want to be faithful and approved followers of Christ conduct themselves until Christ comes back for judgment?

The Disciple

People who want to please God have always been urged to come out of the world and live apart.

Rom 5:20 - God gave the Hebrews the law through Moses so there would be more sin.

And why did God do that?

Hey, if there was more sin God could provide more mercy. Sin just leads to death, but mercy given through God's righteousness will bring new life in the age, a life bought by (the sacrifice of) Jesus Christ, our Lord.

6:1 - What did we say then? Should we continue sinning so God can show even more mercy? God forbid! How can those of us who are meant to be dead to sin go on living in sin?

Have you forgotten that those who are baptized into Christ are baptized into his death? We are baptized into Christ's death symbolically with an hope that as Christ was raised up into new life by the Father's power, we will also rise up to a new level of living.

11 - In the same way Christ died and rose, you, also, should live as if you are dead to sin, but living to God through our Lord Jesus, the Christ. Do not allow sin to reign in your mortal bodies. Do not obey sin's cravings.

16 - Do you not understand you become slaves to that which you dedicate yourselves, whether it is sin to death or righteousness to God?

19 - As you once gave yourselves up to be servants of rubbish and sin, so also, you must now yield yourselves to be servants of righteousness. You must remain apart from (people who are in) the world.

When you were servants of sin you had no association with righteousness. What fruit did you gain then in the things of which you are now ashamed? You know full well those things lead only to death. You have now been released from sin. You have become God's servants and you must act like it. You must act like it if you want to gain life in the age. You know the wage paid by sin is death. You also know God is offering a new life in the age through Jesus Christ.

Those who wish to be disciples of Christ must permit the pneuma (the spirit or thinking) of truth to take priority in their lives.

Prov 11:18 - Wicked ones work deceitful works.
People who walk the path of righteousness will receive a sure reward.

Jn 6:63 - The pneuma brings life.
The flesh (thinking natural to humanity) is of no value.
The words I speak are pneuma and life.

Rom 8:5 - Those who obey the flesh (their own thinking) relate to things of the flesh. Those who are involved with things of the pneuma relate to things of the pneuma.

An involvement with fleshly things brings death.
An involvement with things of the pneuma brings life and peace.

13 - If you live by the flesh you will die.
If you live by the pneuma you will starve your physical desires and live.

Gal 5:16 - Walk in the pneuma and do not fulfill your fleshly desires.

6:8 - Those who sow to the flesh will reap corruption.
Those who sow to the pneuma will reap life in the age from the pneuma.

Eph 4:23 - Concerning the way you lived in the past, you must now put off the old man (old way of thinking) since it is corrupted by its lying desires. You must now be refreshed in the pneuma of your minds.
You must put on the new man (new way of thinking) that is engendered by God through the righteousness of a life lived apart in the truth.

Those who want to become disciples of Christ must believe they have already received power to deal with the cravings of human nature.

Mt 11:28 - Come to me, you who are working so hard, and I will ease your burden. Take on my yoke and you will learn from me, for I am kind, and I have an humble heart. You will feel relieved because my yoke is easy and my load is light.

Lk 21:34 - Pay attention to yourselves and do not allow your hearts to be dragged down by partying, intoxication, and the cares of life.
Do not let that day sneak up on you.

Rom 13:11 - We know the time has come.
We know we must wake up.
We know our salvation is closer now than when we first believed.
Night is almost over.
Day is almost here.

In view of this, we should lay aside the works of darkness. Let us put on the armor of light. Let us live decently like we truly believe it is day, not by partying and getting drunk, not in league with sluts and scumbags, and for sure not in arguing and jealousy. Let us put on the Lord Jesus Christ instead. Let us not get carried away through all the various means there are to satisfy fleshly desires.

Eph 5:6 - Do not let anyone fool you through lying speech: it is dirtiness, disobedience to the truth, and ignorant living that makes God so angry at children who disobey.

Do not be friendly with worthless workers of darkness, but expose them because the things they do in private are disgusting.

Everything exposed to light is plainly revealed.

Everything is revealed, for light manifests the true nature of all things.

Isaiah says, Arise from the dead, oh sleeper, and Christ will shine on you.

You must be aware of what you are doing.

You cannot act like fools.

You must act as if you have some degree of intelligence.

Make your time count, for the days are evil.

Do not be ignorant of God's will.

Do not be drunk with wine, which can cause you to go too far.

Be filled with the spirit (of truth) instead.

1 Ptr 4:7 - The end of all things is near.

As a result, remain in your right minds and watch what you pray for.

Mt 26:41 - Pray you do not fall into testing.

Prov 17:14 - You all know what it is like when you start to piss, true? It is the same thing when you begin to flirt with fleshly thinking: once it is flowing, it is awfully hard to stop.

Disciples of Christ must distance themselves from worldly things.

In his parable of the "sower", Jesus said that disciples who refuse to distance themselves from worldly things will soon experience a lessening of growth and eventually even a loss of the awareness of truth.

Mt 13:18 - This is the meaning of the parable of the sower . . .

Seed sown on the path represents those who hear the truth, but cannot understand. It is as if some evil thing inside them rose up and snatched away the words sown in their hearts.

Seed sown in a rocky place represents those who hear and perceive, and immediately accept the truth, but the truth has no depth of root within them.

After trials and tribulations show up, they are quickly displeased by the demands of the truth.

Seed sown among thorns represents those who accept the truth, but all the worries in their lives and the deceitfulness of wealth begin to choke them, making the fruit they bear worthless.

Finally, seed sown on good ground represents all the disciples that learn and accept the truth, then produce great quantities of good fruit.

Did you notice Jesus doesn't even mention people who had no contact with the truth?

Jn 12:25 - If you value your life you will lose it.

If you hate life in this order of things you will keep your life to the age. If the world owned you, the world would love you, but because I elected you from among those who are in the world, and you are no longer a part of the world, those in the world now hate you. **(15:19)**

Rom 12:2 - I beseech you, brethren, in God's mercy, that you offer your bodies as a living sacrifice by staying to yourselves.

If you do this, God will accept you. And remember, it is nothing but your proper duty. Do not be conformed to this age, but transform yourselves instead. Renew your minds in order that you may ascertain what is right, acceptable, and exemplary in God's sight.

Titus 2:12 - The grace of God, who brought salvation to all humanity, has arrived. He has implored us to deny ungodliness and worldly desires, and to live soberly, righteously, and fittingly in this present age.

James 1:27 - Authentic and complete religion in the eyes of our God and Father is composed of this: to ease the affliction of orphans and widows and to keep one's own self unspotted by the world.

Friendship with the world is evil to God. **(4:4)**

1 Jn 2:16 - Everything that is in the world (the desires of the flesh, the desires of the eyes, and the pride of life) is not from the Father. All of it is from the world.

Act 15:14 - God is visiting the gentiles to take out a people for his name.

2 Cor 6:17 - Come out from among them and be separate.

Come out of her, my people.

If you participate in her sins, you will join in her plagues. **(Rev 18:4)**

Disciples of Christ must live apart, not only from people of the world, but also from those who know the truth and don't live it.

Psalm 1 - You will be given blessings if you do not accept advice from the oblivious, if you do not walk the path walked by sinners, and if you do not hang out with those who are an insult to the truth.

Prov 4:4 - Do not live like the wicked are living.
Do not walk the way wicked ones do.
Avoid it all.

2 Cor 6:14 - Do not be unequally yoked with those who do not believe.
They have a form of godliness, but it gives them no power. (**2 Tim 3:5**)

Is 8:20 - Anyone who does not teach according to the law and testimony has no light in him.

1 Ptr 2:12 - Conduct yourselves in an orderly way among the gentiles.
Do not walk like other gentiles walk. (**Eph 4:17**)

Mt 18:15 - If a brother offends you, go see him.
Explain the problem to him alone, keeping it between the two of you.
If he admits his error, your brother will have been given back to you.
If he will not hear, take one or two witnesses and return.
If you do it like this, all things will be accomplished in line with scripture.
If he still refuses to hear, tell the assembly.
If he will not listen to the assembled brethren, consider him the same as a pagan . . . or even worse, a tax collector.

2 Ths 3:6 - Withdraw from those who walk in a disorderly way.

Rom 16:17 - Mark those who cause division and avoid them.

Acts 2:40 - Save yourselves from this wicked generation.

Mk 13:13 - Those who fight to the end will be saved.

What about disciples who don't fight to the end?

Mt 25:13 - You must keep watching at all times because you have no idea at all when your Lord will return.

30 - Cast the fruitless servant into the outer darkness, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
As for those who would not permit me to reign over them, bring them out here and destroy them before me. (**Lk 19:27**)

7:13 - Broad is the way leading to destruction.

Jn 5:29 - Some will experience a resurrection to damnation.

Dan 12:2 - Some will wake to shame and contempt.

Mal 4:1 - A day is coming that will burn like a blast furnace.

Rev 2:26 - To those who overcome, those who obey my commandments to the end, I will give power over the nations.

They will rule them with a rod of iron.

They will smash them into shivers like pottery made by potters.

They will smash them with the same power I received from my Father.

Ps 37:20 - The wicked (responsible rebels) will perish.

Rom 2:8 - Indignation and wrath (will be) upon them.

2 Ths 1:9 - They will receive a perpetual destruction from the presence of the Lord.

Rev 20:14 - They will be cast into the lake of fire.

21:8 - This is the second death.

Job 20:7 - The wicked will perish forever, just like their own shit.

Looks like it's up to you . . .

You can wend your way along the high road, hoping to play a role in the covenants and promises, or you can slog your way through the gutter, and end up as nothing but a pile of poop.

THE END